THE NHOW (R.)

English Rogue

INTHE

LIFE

OF

MERITON LATROON;

A Witty Lattavagant;

COMPRESIONDING

Most Eminent CHEATS

BOTH SEXES

tead, but don't practife: for the Authour finds, they which live Honest have most quiet minds.

London, Printed for Francis Kirkman next door to the Princes Arms in St. Pauls-Church-yard. 1672.

12614.0 21:

M

Rea

Lon

CHENHOD (R.)

English Rogue

INTHE

LIFE

OF

MERITON LATROON;
A Witty Extravagant;

COMPRESENDING

Most Eminent CHEATS

BOTH SEXES

Read, but don't practife: for the Authour finds, They which live Honest have most quiet minds.

London, Printed for Francis Kirkman next door to the Princes Arms in St. Pauls-Church-yard. 1672.





to closes the Studye; for the boundless mind in a less limit cannot be confind.

Gezing! I here admire: the very Lookes Show that set read as well in men, as bookes. He that Shall Succethe face, may judge by its live hast an Head peter that is through with mit.

9 JA 56

ga wa no receipt to line de rea

per par had chie

The Preface to the Reader.

THen this peice was first published it was ushered into the World with the usual ceremony of a Preface, and that a large one, whereby the Authour intended and endeavoured to possess the Reader with a belief, that what was written was the Life of a Witty Extravaeant, the Authours Friend and Acquaintance. This was the intent of the VVriter, but the Readers could not be drawn to this belief, but in general concurred in this opinion, that it was the Life of the Authour, and notwithstanding all that hath been said to the contrary many still continue in this opinion. Indeed the whole flory is so genuine and naturally described without any forcing or Romancing that all contained in it feems to be naturally true, and so ile afure you it is, but not acted by any one fingle perfor, much less by the Authour, who is well known to be of an inclination much different frem the foul debaucheries of the Relations, & if the Readers had read the Spanish Rogue, Gusman; the French Regue, Francion; and several other by Forraign Wits, and have upon examination found that the Authors were persons of great eminency and honeur, and that no part of their own writings were their own lives, they had happily changed their opinion of the Authour of this; but they holding this opinion caused him to lefift from profecuting his ftory in a Second Part.

The Preface to the Reader.

and he having laid down the Cudgels I took them up, and my defign in fo doing was out of three confiderations, the first and chiefest was to gain ready money, the fecond I had an itch to gain fome Repuration by being in Print, and thereby revenge my ielf on some who had abuted me, and whose actions Irecited, and the third was to advantage the Reader and make him a gainer by acquainting him with my This were the reasons for my engaexperiences. ging in the Second Part, and the very same reason induced me to joyn with the Authour in competing and writing a third and fourth Part, in which we hive club'd fo equally, and intermixt our flories fo joyntly, that it is some difficulty for any a full fight to diftinguith what we particularly Write and now having concluded the Preface, which should never have been begun but that I had a blank page, and was unwilling to be foill a husband for you, but that you should have all possible conten for your money, and withall to tell you that would not have you as yet to expect any more part of the book, for although a fifth and last part is de fign's, yet ile asure you there is never a stirch a m'is, nor one line Written of it, and if you desir thar, you must give me encouragement by you ipeedy purchasing of what is already Written; an thereby you will ingage

Your Friend

Francis Kirkman.

hem con-eady Remy ader my nga-aion sing y at Vrita vhich olani for nten hat part do h a

lefit you an

er or Hiway Rob

9 JA 56

Na Cri labe Fac upo led cluic

THE

ENGLISH ROGUE, Describ'd in the Life of a Witty Extravagant.

CHAP. I

What his Parents were. The place of his own Nativity. His miraculous Fscape from the hands of Irish Rebels. His brother being at that were time murdered by the merciless hands of those bloody Batchers.

rer my bathers Pedegree, I could not fird any of his Ancestors bearing a Coat: forely length of time had worn it cut. But it the Gestle Crafe will any wayes ennoble his Family. I believe I could deduce feveral of his Name Professors of that lasting Art, even from Cripin. My Fathers father had by his continual labour in Hinsbandry, prived to the height of a Farmer, then the Head of his Kieducka standing upon one of his own Mole-Hilles Ambition to firstled him, that he swore by his plow share, that his cluest Son (my Father) should be a Sebelliard; and should

fhould learn to long, till he could read any printed or written hand; may, and it occasion should fette, write a Bill or Bond.

f

ti

N

h

R

de

to

tu

W

ha

of

Bo

M

tir

ho

dil

wh

Wi

211

W3

Te

Re

fall

ew.

Wit

ligh

CYC

Gra

nin

rec

distinguish of electrificom another, neither could they speak above the reach of thir Horses understandings. Talk to them in any other Dialect but that of a Bag-paday g of a Peck, or a piece of Beef, (in which their teeth might step wher shed) and a man were as good to have discoursed with them in Arabich. But let me not abuse them, for some understood something else that is to say, The Art of Whisting, Driving their Team and to shoothem. selly upon a Staff and through the holes of their

Has tell what it is a Clock by the Sun:

The fymmetricall proportion, sweetness of features, and acutenels of my Fathers wit, were fuch (though extracted out of this lump of red and white marle) that he was belov'd of all. As the lovelines of his person gain'd always an interest in Female hearts; fo the quickness of apprehension and in vention, and the acquired quaintnels of his expres hons; procured him the friend thip of fuch as converfed with him. & Gent eman at length taking no tice of more then ordinary natural Parts in him, his proper charge fent him to School contrary to the defire of his father, who was able enough to maintain him at School, and to say the truch the Gentleman offered not my Father his paeronage upon any charitable account, but that he migh hearafter glory in the being the chief inftrument bringing up feeb a fair promiting Mit, which he quellioned not with good cultivation would bris forth fuch levely fruit as would answer coft, an fully

ted

VC,

nld

u d

et.

but

(in

nan

n in

-חנו

of-

-ms

odi

neir

fea.

fuch

bite

nes

nale

in

ref

con

no

y to

1 0

nage

igh

BLO

bek

fully

Which

fully fatisfie his expectation. Being admitted into the Grammar Scool, by the strength of his memory, to his Mafters great amazement, in a very thore time he had Lillies Rules by heart, out-ftripping many that for years had been entred before him: his Mafter perceiving what a stupendious proficiency he had made, was very glad that this fair oportus nity offered it felf, that he might be idle, and in order thereunto would frequently appoint my Father to be his Ufher or Deputy, when he intended to turn B cchanglian, to drink, hunt, or whore, to which vices he was over-much addicted. My Father having now conquered in a manner of difficulties of that Schoos learning began now to lay affectis Book, and follow the tteps of his vicious learned Mafter, the examples of a Superior proving oftentimes guides to inferior actions

R gis ad exemplam-

Belides his fpringing Age (wherein the blood is hot and fervent) (pur d him on, and the natural disposition of his mind, give him wings to flye whither his unbounded, licentious, felf pleafing will would direct. His Youth introduced him into all forts of vanity, and his Conflicution of body. was the Mother of all his unlawful pleasures, His Temperament gave sense preheminence above Reason, Thus you see (which experience can more fully demondrate) how the hear of Youth gives fewel to the Fire of Voluptuous Erjoyments; but withour a fupply of what may purchase those delights, invention must be Tenter hooled, which ever proves dangerous, mon comonly facal. My Grand-father too indulgent to his fon fupply'd him corinnall with mony, which be did the more freely, fince he was exempted from fuch charges

which necessity required for my Fathers maintenance, he having now more than a bare competency, he not only confears to the commission of evil, but rempts others to perpetrate the ike. And now following his own natural proneness to irregular liberty, diurnaly suggetts matter of innovation, not onely to his own, but others reasons Les Etum won citius relanquers quam in Deum delen queni, non oitins fa gens qu'mirfu gem. No fooner relinquishing his bed, but delinquishing his Greator, No tooner rifing than rifing against his God In thort, I know not whether he prevailed more on others, or others on him, for be was facie; the best Nature is most quickly depraved, as the pureft teh corupts foonest, and most notion when corupted. Yet notwithstanding these blooming debaucheries, he neg ected not his Study fo much but that he capacitated himself for the University, and by approbation was fent thither by his Patron. He applyed himfelf close to his Book for a while, till he had adapted himfelf's companion for the most absolute critick could be selected out of any of the Colledges: in the affar ed confidence of bis.own parts, he ventured among them, and left fuch remarks of his cutting wit in all companies he came into that the Gallants and most notable Wis of Oxford, covered fo much his company, that he had not time to apply himself to his Study, but giving way to their follicitations, being prompted thereanto by his own powerful inclinations, plunged himself over head and ears in all manner of sensoaliey. For his lewd carriage, inimitably wicked radifes, and detestable behavior, he was at last expelled the Colledge.

h

0

U

t

1

C

k

t

2

2

fi

O

b

1

Now was he fore'd to teturn to his Father, who

12

190

of

nd

re-

V4

Le.

PLE.

in-

NO

rt,

rs,

la-

Ah

pt-

ıu-

but

ind

He

tik

of

che

WE

re.

nuc.

of

had

ing

re-

ged

fu-

ked

CI.

who

with

with much joy received him, but would not tell him the true cause of his coming down : But to palliate his villanies, informed his father that he had learned as much as he could be instructed in; and now and then would Sprinkle his descourse with a Greek or Laune Sertence; when talking with the poor ignorant old Man, who took wonderful delight is the meer found thereof. When my father spake at any time, they were all a- filent as midnight, and then would my Grandfather with much admiration becken to the flanders by to give their greatest attention, to what the Speaker as little understood as his Andriors, not carried what non-fense he utter'd, it wrapt up in untelligable hard words, purpolely to abuse those brutish Plough-jobbers. In oftentation he was carried to the Parlon of the Pas rish to discourse with him; who by good fortuce understood no other Tongue but what his mother taught him; My father perceiving that, made Shoulderamution and Ra-ai humpton ferve for very good Greek, which the Parlon confirm'd : telling my Grandfather further, that his Son was an excel ent Scholar; protelling that he was fo deeply learned, that he tpake things he understood not; this I have heard him fay, made him as good foort, as ever he receiv'd in the most ingenious Society.

He had not been long in the Country, before a Gentlewoman taking notice of his external and internal Qualifications, fell deedly in love with him; and preferring her own pleasure before the displeasure of her wealthy Relations. The incontentally was married to him. I shall wave how it was brought about in every particular, but only instance what is therein remarkable. Doubtless the gestures he used in his preaching (when she was present) might

B 3

force

n

f

10

a

H

18

4

fo

hi

H

ty

f

n

Ce

C

th

n

4

C

m

m

th

F

re

le in

di

fomething avail in the conquest of her affections; beginning with adearly beloved p. Monately extended, looking tull in her face all the while, and be ing in the time of the Kingdomes alteration and confusion, a temporizing Minister, he had learned a'l those tricks by which those of his sect and coat used to bewirch a semale ear. Fur that which chiefly effected his defires, was the affarance of an od Matron, that lived near my mother, who for profit lerup ed not to officiate a Bawd, this good o'd Gentlewoman contrived waies to bring them together, unfulpeded by any, by which meanst hey obtain'd the oppertunity to perform Hymens rices, Sans Ceremonies of the Church, My mother finding impregnation acquainted my Father therewith, who I glad to hear how fast he had tied her to him) urged her to the speedy Consumma ion of a Legal marriage; which the more longed for than he did himself, but knew not how to string it to pals, by reason of those many Obstacle- which they law Obvious, and thwarting their intentiors. As first the vast disproportion bei ween their E. states; Next, the Antipathy her Parents bore to his Function Joyning these to many other Obs fructions, with Fancy and Know edge prefenced to them, they conclude to feal a Wedding and accordingly did put it in execution much troub'ed her Parents were at first, to hear ho a their daughter had thip wrackt ben fortune (as they judged it) in the unfortunate looking her maiden-head but time, with the intercuffion of Friends, procure Reconcilation between them, and all parties well pleased. The o'd people took great delight in their fortune, hopeful choughts and expectation of their Son in law, but he more in the reception

fions

of a large Sum of Money they paid him, and my mother most of all (as the th ught) in the contimal conversation and enjoyment of my Father, which the equally ranked with what might be est

fleemed the best of things

15;

d-

e

rd ed

ar

11-0

10. od

tuey

es,

er

IC-

ner lo

128

to

ich

FA. E.

03 255

:24

and

cd

ch-

Red

but

in

ION

ion

His eminent Parts natural, (and what he attain's unto by his country fludies, being afti im'd to have loft fo much time) introduc d nim as a Chiplain to a Noble man, with whom he travel'd into Ire'and, He took thisping at Mineard, and from thencelayled to Knock for our, where he lived both credicable and comfortably. Experience had then fo res formed his Life to fo ftrict a religious course, that his Observers grind more by his examp e chambis. Heavers by precepts. Thus by his piery in the purity of its practice, he foon regain'd his full credit,

By this time my mother grew near her time, having conceiv'd mean England, but not conceivi g the thus should drop me in an Irish Bog. There is no fear that England and Ireland will after my decease, contend about my Nativity, as several Countreys did about Homer, either friving to have the honour of field giving him breath. Neither shall I much thank my Native Country, for bee stowing on me such principles as I and most of my Countrysmen drew from that very wir, the place It ink made me appear a Baftard in disposition to my Father leis ftrange the Clymate should have more prevalency over the Nature of the Native, than the disposition of the Parent. For thought Father and Mother could neither flatter, deceive, revenge, equivocate, etc. yet the Son (as the ou lequence hash finel made it appear) can (according to the common cultom of his Countrysmen) diffemble and footh up his adversary with expres-37.349

fions extracted i om Celefial Manna, taking his advantage thereby to ruine him : For to local the truth, I could never yet love any but for some byrespect, nei her could I ever be perswaded into a pacification with that man who had any way ins jured me, never refling fatisfied till I had accoms pitht a plenary revenge, which I commonly effect ed under the pretence of great love and kindness, Chear all I dealt withat, though the matter were ever fo inconfiderable. Lye to naturally, that a Miracle may be a foon wrought, as a Truth proceed from my mouth. And then for Equivocation, or Mental Refervations they were ever in me in pate Properties. It was alwayes my Refolution, rather to dye by the hand of a common Execution ser, then want my revenge, though ever fo flight ly grounded. But I shall defist here to charaderize my felf further, referving that for another place.

h

P

Four years after my Birth, the Rebellion began fo unexpectedly, that we were forced to fee in the night the light of our flaming Houses, Ricks of Hay, and Stacks of Corn guided us out of the Town, and our Fears foon conveyed us to the Mountains. The Rebelles, wandering too and fro, intending either to meet with their friends, (who flockt from all parts to get into a Body) or elfe any English, which they deligned as Sacrifices to their implacable malice, or inbred antipathy to that Nas tion, met with my Mother, attended by two Scule logner, her menial fervants, the one carrying me, the other my brother. The faces had decreed my brothers untimely death, and therefore unavoids ble, the faithful lifted being butchered with him The furviving fervant who carried me, declared chat

Wetty Extravogant.

that he was a Roman Catholick, and imploring their mercy with his howling Chram a Crees, for St. Patrick agra, procured my Mothers, his own,

and my lafety.

his

he

y-

0 1

Ds

m

a

efe.

ere

.

-01

on.

IN

08,

10

her her

zan

the of the the ro, who any

me.

my

ids

io.

rce hat Thus was I preferv'd, but I hope not referv'd as a subject for Divine Vengeance to work on. Had I then died, no other guilt could have rendred me culpable from Gods Tribunal, but what was derivative before Adam. But fince, the concatenation of sins various links hath encompassed the whole series of my life. Now to the intent I may deter others from perpetrating the like, and receive to my self Absolution (according as it is promised) upon unseigned Repentance, and ingenious Confession of my nesarious facts, I shall give the Readers a Summary Relation of my Life; from my Non-age to the Meridian of my dayes, hoping that my Extravagancies and youthful Existences, have in that state of life, their declination and period.

The work of the said to enth

Latte Smoth or the West of

has formed as

or medical color of the color o

CHAP,

CHAP. II.

Askort Account of the general lasurrections of the Irish, Anno 1641.

Burthough the mercy of these inhumane Vibrains extended to the saving of our lives, yet they had so little consideration and commisseration, so expose our bodies (by stripping us) stark narked to the extremity of a cold winter night, nor so much as sparing my tender age. Thus without Shooes or Stockings, or the least Rag to cover our takedness, with the help of our Guide, we transcelled all night through Woods as obscue as that black darkness that then environed our Horizon. By break of day we were at Belf is, about entering the skirts of the Town, this honest and grateful servant, (which is much in an Irish man) being then assured of our safety, took his leave of us, and returned to the seeds.

Here were we received with much picty of all, and entertain'd, and cloth'd and 'ed, by some charitable minded Persons, to gratifie their souls for what they bad done for my mothers body, and those that belong'd to her, my Father frequently preache, which gave general satisfaction, and continued thus in instructing his hearers, till the Sark or Sarplice, was adjudged by a Scotish Faction, to be the absolute Smock of the Whore of Barrion. Then was he constrain'd to see again to Linsegary,

aking his charge with him,

Befors

f

b

n

i

er.

n,

10

or.

UC

ur.

35

36

17.

1-1

C-

:5

15,

ul.

ne

uls nd

ly

ns irk

on.

בוש

EZ

Before I proceed, give me leave to digrefs to little in giving you a brief account of the leife Rebellion, Not two years before it broke out al those ancient Animofries, Grudges, and Hatred, which the laift had ever been observed to bare unto the English feemed to be deposited and buried in a firm Conglurination of their " feet ons, and National Obligations, which paffed between them, for these two bad lived together form Years in peace, with fuch great fecurity and comfort that it had in a manner confolidated them into one body, knit and compacted together with all those Ligatures of Friendship, Alliance, and Confanguinity, as might make up a confrant and everlatting Union betwirt them there, Their Inter marriages were near upon as frequent as their Gestippings and Fosterings, (relations of much dearnels among the Irif) together with all Tenans cies, Neighborhoods and services interchanges bly paffed among them. Nay, they had made as it were a mutual transmigration into each others manners, many English being strongly degenerated into Irish Affections and Customes, and many of the better fort of Irish studying as well the Language of the English as de ighting to be Apparrel'd like them. Nay, fo great an advantage did they find by the English Commerce and Cobabitation, in the profits and high improvements of their hards, as Sir Phelim O Neal, that Rebellious Ringleader, with divers others eminent in that bloody Infurrection, had not long before turn'd off their Lands, their Irith Tenants, addmitting English in their rooms; who are able to give hem far greater Rents, and more certainly pay the fame. So as all those circumstances duly weighted & confider-

C

d

i

ti

J

8

lı

D

21

le

11

7

W

61

th

fw.

OF

W

no

fla

all

by

C

th

bc

ed with the great increase of Trade, and many of ther evident Symptoms of a flourishing Common wealth; it was believed even by the wisest and most experienced in the affairs of helant, that the Peace and Tranqui'ity of that Kingdom was fully settled, and most likely in all humane probatility to continue, especially under the Government of such a King as Charles the First, whom after ages may admire, but never match. Such was the testenity and security of this Kingdom, as that there appeared not any where any Martial preparations, nor reliques of any kind of disorders, no nor so much as the least noise of War whisperingly cars ried to any ear in all this Lands.

Now whilst in this great calm, the Brittish continued in the deep it security; whilst all men far pleasently enjoying the fruits of their own labors, sitting under their own Vines, without the least thoughts of apprehension of Tumults, Troubles, or Massacres; there brake out on October the Twenty third, in the Year of our Lord, sixteen hundred forty and one, a must desperate, dierful, and formidable Rebellion, an Universal Detection and Revolt, wherein not only the meer Native Irish, but almost all those English that profess the Name of Raman Catholicks, were totally involved,

Now fince it is refo ved by me to give you a particular account of the most remarkable. Transactions and passages of my life, it will be also necessary to acquaint you with the beginning and first motions; Neither shall I omit to trace the Progress of this Rebellion, since therein, I shall relate summarily my suffering, and what others under went, the horrid cruelties of the Irish, and their abomic table mursers sommitted, as well without number. ber, as without mercy, upon the English Inhabi-

tants of both Sexes, and all Ages.

יווח

and

the

vile

lety

ut

ges

10

ert

ms.

fo

315

Off-

far

ors.

eaft

es.

che

CCH

ful,

ion

tive

the

d.

D11.

di-

mo#

reli

um.

ent,

MIM

um

bes,

la was carried with fuch fecrefie, that none underitoed the Conspiracy; till the very evening that immediately preceeded the night of its general execution. I must confes there was some such thing more than suspected by one Sir Willia & Cole, who presently fent away Letters to the Lord Chief Juffices, but mifcarried by the way. Owen O Cosally (though meer Irift, was notwithfaning a Protestant) was the first discoverer of this general Infurrection giving in the Names of fome of the chief Conspirators, Heresponene Lords convened and fat in Council, whole care and pruderce at that time was fuch, that some of the Ringleaders were instantly feized, and upon examination, confest that on that very day of their furgrizal, all the Ports and Places of Arength in Ireland would be taker; that there was a confiderable number of Gentlemen and others, twenty out of each county, were come up expresty to furprize the Castle of Dubin. Adding further, that what was to be done in the Country (where Mircury the fwift Meffenger) could neither by the wit of man, or by Letter, be prevented. Hereupong frie fearch was made for all firangers lately come to Town and all Horles were feized on, whole owners could not give a good account of them. And notwithstanding there was a Proclamation disperst through all Ireland, giving notice of a horrid Plot defigned by Iris Papifts; against English Protestants, intending thereby a discouragement to such of the Conspirators, as yet had not openly declared themselves, Yet did they affemble in great muse ber, principally in the North, in the Province of HIB er

Ir

n

6

N

0

fi

C

W

fe

kı

tl

C

W

2

of

20

P

th

RE

be

11

an

th

La

ftr

CI

mor, &c. burning spoiling and committing horrible murthers every where. These things wrought fuch a general consternation and alternishment in the minds of the English, that they thought themselves no where secure, string from one danger into another.

In a very thorn time the meer Irish Northern Papiles by clody Perfuing on their first Flor, had got ten into their pollettion most of the lowns, Fore Caftles and Gentlemens Houses within the Counties of trees, Donegal, Formacah, Armah, Cann. Sec. The chief that appeared in the Execution of this Plot, within the Province of Uliter, were Sir Philim O Neal, Tourlough his Brother, Rome Man Guera Philip O Kely, Sit Come Mac count, Mac Brown and Mac Mahon, these combining with their Accomplices dividing their Forces, and according to a general Affiguation, surprised the Forts of Dongamon and Mon joy, Carlement, with other phices of confider bie ftrength. Now began a deep Tragedy: The English having enther few or ver than Irih Landlords Tenants, Secvants Neighbours, or familiant rlends, as foon as this fire brake out, and the whole Country in a general Confligration. made their recourfe prefently to fome of thefe, ly ing apon them for protection and prefervation, and with great contidence trufted their lives and all their confeers in their powers. But many of thefe in thorteime after, either betrayed them to others, or deftroyed them with their own hands. The Popith Prichs bad for charged and laid fuch bloody impressions on them, asie was held according to sheir Doctrine they had received, a deadly fin to give an English Protestand any relief. All

or.

ght

C in

m·

ore

Pa-

00.

17

in-

AN,

ot

Sir

1 ac

1as

cir

ng

of

TOT

ep

ne

rs,

ut,

on,

y-

n,

ail

ele

ITS,

dy

to

All bonds of Faith and Friendship new fradur'd Irifh Landlords now prey'd on their English Tenants, Irish Tenants and Servants, made a Sacrifice of their English Landlords and Masters, one Neighbor murthering another; nay, twas looked on as an act meritorius in him that could either subvert or supplant an English man; The very Chi dren imitating the cruelty of their Parents, of which I shall carry a mark with me to my Grave, given me with a Skene by one of my Irish Playfe lows. It was now high time to flie although we knew not whither; every place we ari ve at we thought least secure, wherefore our metion was continual; and that which heightned our mifery, was our frequent ftripping thrice a day, and in such a dilma formy tempeltuous feafen as the memory of man had never observ'd to continue fo long together. The terror of the frish and Scorch incompurably prevailed beyond the rage of the Sea, fo that we were resolved to use all possible means to ger on Shipboard. At Belfast we accomplishe our defires, committing our selves to the more merciful Waves. This Relation being fo more, cannot but be very imperfect, it I dare credit my mother, it is not stain'd with falshood. Many horrid things (Iconfels) I purposely omitted, as defiring to wave any thing of aggravation, or which might occasion the least Animosity between two, though of several Languages, yet I hope both united in the demonstration of their constant loyalty to their Soveraign Charles the Second. Shed and seat bib med

o il -tuo mind

CHAP. III.

After his arival in Devonshire, he briefly recounts what waggeries he committed, he ing but a Child.

Bing about 5. Years of age, Report rendred me a very beautifu! Child, peither did it (as mol commonly) prove a Lyar. Being enricht with all the good properties of a good face, had not pride in that my cenderage, deprived me of those graces and choile ornaments which complear both forn monly many Turkeys; one amongst the rest cou nor endure the fight of a Red Coar, which I usually wore, But that which most of all exasperated m budding pation, was, his affaulting my bread an botter, and in fread thereof, fometimes my hands which cauted my bloomy Revenge to use this Stratagem: I entired him with a pitce of Cuftar (which I tempting y flewed him, not without fome fulgition of danger which fear fuggetted, might strend my treathery, and fo led him to the Orchard-gate, which was made to thut with a pulley; he reaching in his head after me, I immediatly clapt fast the Gate, and so surprized my mortall Fire Then did I wie that little ftrength I had, to beat his brains out with my Cat-flick; which being done deplum'd his tayl, flicking those feathers in my Bonnet, as the infulrning Trophies of my first and latel Conquelt, Such then was my pride,

to the second of the second of

othing but gazed up at them, which fo tried the reakness of my eyes, and so strain'd the Oprick Verves, that they ran a tilt at one another, as if they ontended to share with me in my victory. This ccident was no finall trouble to my Mother . that o doated on me, that I have often heard her fay, the forget to eat (when I fat at Table) for admiring the weinels of my Complexion. After the had much rieved her felf to little purpole, the confidted with patience, and applied her felf to skilful Occuliffs; o repair the los this face-blemishing had done to weet a countenance, though for the present it clipsed my Mothers glory and pride, yet Time and Art reduced my eyes to their proper flation; fo hat within fix Years their oblique aspects were ardly discernable. When I was about ten Years d, I have heard some say, that this cast of my yes was to far from being a detriment, that it beame my ornament. Experience confirm'd me in his belief; for they prov'd as powerful, as the pervalive arguments of my deluding tongue; both thich conjeyn'd, were sufficient (1 speak it not ain gloriously) to prevail even over the Goddess of bastity, especially when they were backt on with rdent defires, and an undaunted resolution But o my purpole: Being driven out of Ireland, there eing at that time no place of fafety in that Kingom, my Mother taking me with her, (being comelled to leave my Father behind, Barbaroully murered by the Rebels for being a Protestant Preacher) te adventured to Sea, not caring whither the went. oulness of weather drove us upon the Coast of rance, where we were forced to land, to repair whar mage the Ship had fulfained in firels of weather. From

From hence we fet fail, and landed in the West of England, at a place called Barnstable in the Countr of Devon. Here we were joyfully received, and well entertained by some of my Mothers kindred at first: but lying upon them, they at length grew weary; fo that we were forced to go from thence to Plimouth fo called from the River Plime, unto which the Town adjoyneth; at that time it was strongly fortified by new raif'd Works, a Line being caft about it, befide places of frength antiently built; as the Caftle, the Fort of an hundred pieces of Ordnance, that commands Cot-water, and overlooks the Sound, Mount Batten, and the Islands in the Sound, well furnished with Men and great Guns impregnable; had they been never built or demolished, raced assoon as raifed on their Basis, it had been much better then to have prov'd the Fomenters of Rebellion in the late -Wars for a whole year, daily thundring Treafon against their lawful Soveraign. We being here altogether unacquainted both with the people and their profession, my Mother having an active brain, easts about with her felf how the should provide for her charge, but found no way more expedient, than the pretention of Religion. Zeal now and Piety were the onelythings shestem'd to prosecute, taking the literal lenie of the Text; Without doubt Godlings is great gain : But the err'd much in the profession and featonable practice thereof; Hers being according to the mind of the true Church, the Church of England, whereas the Phymotheans were at that time Heterodox thereunto, and led away as the rest of their Brethren galled Roundheads, by the spirit of delution. Finding how much the was mistaken, the chang'd quickly her Note and Coas; a rigid Pres

Presbyterian at first, but that proving not so profitable, instantly transform'd her self into a strickt Independant. This took well, which made her flick close to the Brethren, which rail'd their spirits to make frequent contribution in private to supply her wants. Here we had borrowed so much of the Sifterhood; who vildly suspected my Mother to be too dearly beloved by the Brotherhood, that it was high time to rub off to another place, left flaying longer, the holy Mask of Diffimulation should fall off; and the being detected, be shamefully excluded their Congregation, and so delivered up to be buffered by Saran. Before I leave the Town, give me leave to rake a short view thereof. Formerly it was a poor small. fishing Village, but now so large and throng'd with Inhabitants (many whereof very wealthy Merchants) that as it may be compared with, so may it put in is claim for the name of a City. Havens, as there are many fo commodious, which without firiking ail, admit into the bosome thereof the tallest Ships hat be, harbouring them very fately, and is extellently well fortified against hostility. mate alike for profit and pleasure; in brief, it wants inle that the heart of man would enjoy, from the arious productions of the whole Universe. Now arewel Plymeth, no matter whither we went, for where-ever we came; we found fill fome or other hat gave its entertainment for those good parts they ound in my Mother, the being very well read both n Divinity and History, and having an eloquent ongue, the commonly appli'd her felf to the Miifter of the Town; who wondring to fee fo much arning and perfection in a Woman, either rook sinto his own house for a while, or gathered some con4

utb, fo OWI ed by fides e, the comlount ilhed they s raien to e late eason re ale and orain,

le for

r, than

Piety

aking

dlines

effion

ccor-

rcha

ttime

rest of

irit of

aken,

rigid Pres

eft of

uncy

firft:

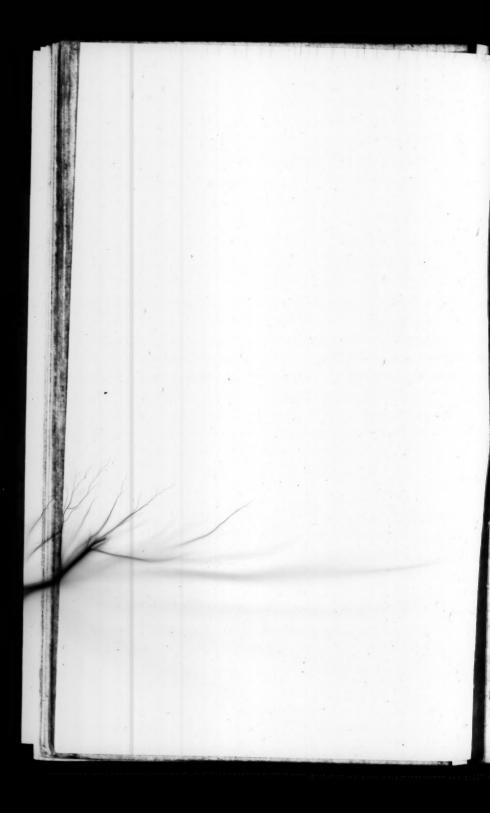
y; fo

contributions to supply our present necessities; with which we travelled to the next Town : And in this manner we stronled or wandred up and down. being little better than mendicant Itimerants. Staying so little time in a place, and my Mother being more careful to get a sublistance, than to season my render years with the knowledge of Letters, I was ten years old before I could read. Travelling through many Towns unfit for our purpose, we at last took up our feat for a while at Birdport in Dorfeishire, here being atham'd to go to School in this ignorance, I apply'd my felf to my Mother, who raught me to apprehend the Alphabet in less hours than there are letters; fo that in a fhort time. I could read distinctly, and immediately introduc'd into the Grammar-School; where I had not been long, before I became a Book-worm, fecuring as many as lay in my way, if convenient privacie ferv'd. And to the intent that my Thefts might pass undiscovered, before I would vend what Books I had ftoln, I ufually meramorphized them: If new, I would gash their skin; and if the leaves were read, I would make them look pale for the wounds they received: If much used, tear out all the remarks, and paint their old faces, and having to done, make fale of them. This course i followed a long time undiscovered, which coft many a Boy a Whipping at home by their Parents, as well as Mafter. I had various uses for my money I made thereof (you must think) but principally to bribe fome of the upper Form to make my Exercifes; which were fo well liked of by my Mafter, that I still came off with applaule; and in short time fo advanc'd, that I was next to the highest Form, when Funderstood not the lowest Author we read L W3:

with n this own, Stay-being on my I was elling we at Dor-n this who hours

could to the g, beny as
nd to
ered,
fualtheir
make
i : If
their
hem.

ered, their or my inci-e my after, time orm, read.



I was forced to imploy my Wits in the management of my hands, to keep touch with my Penlioners. left they failing me for want of encouragement, my Mafter should discover how much my Dunceship was abused. Frequent were my Truantings, which were always arrended with fome notorious Fact besides small Faults, as robbing of Orchards, pulling the first and feconds offorty or fifty Geefe at a rime, milking the Cows or Goats into my Har, and fo drink the milk: And then for Poultry, there was feldome a day escaped wherein I had not more or less, usually I took them thus: At night I haunted the Hen-roofts. taking them off fo quietly from what they flood on. that their keckling noise seldome alarm'd the rest: if I could not conveniently carry them off. I made their Eggs compound for their Heads. If I met with any Geefe at any time, them out came my fhort flick with a ftring faftened to a bullet, and ried to the end thereof, with this would I fetch in my Game by the neck; the weight of the bullet twirling the firing to many times about the neck, that they could not dilingage themselves from inevitable destruction. I used to fish for Ducks; bairing my Hook with agur or some such trash; and laying it on a piece of Corke, that fiviming it might be the sooner perceived, I could carch in a thort time as many as I pleased: Nay, I have not onely thus deceived these tame Fowl; but the fame way with a longer time. I have caught Gulls and other Sea-Birds. What I had gotten by these cunning (and so much to be seared tricks) I carried to a house that encouraged me in my Roguery, participating of the cheer, and so feafling me for my pains. If I had floln any thing, I had my recourse to them, who would give me two pence

for what was worth a shilling, and render me good Content. I knew my punishment for my rambling, and valued it not; therefore little hope of reformation from thence. Nay, for very small faults I wisherto be whipt, knowing the Rod would then be laid on gently; which carried with it a tickling pleasure. As for my Thefts and Rogueries abroad I was careful they should not be discovered. If any Boy had injur'd me whose strength exceeded mine, so that I durst not cope with him, I would exercise my revenge upon him privately, concealing the refentment of the injury he did me; For to grin and not bire, doth but perswade an Adversary to knock our those teeth that may prove sometime or other injurious. One common trick I had, was to flick a Pin on the board whereon he was to fit: in this manner did I ferve feveral; in which fact I was at last raken; The punishment my Master inflicted on me, was: To fit by his Desk alone, and compose a Copy of Verfes; there was great likelihood I thould perform my rask, when I knew not how many feet an Hexameter required, and yet I then read Virgil. However some thing I must attempt, and thinking Saphicks, and Limbicks too difficult, I ventur'd upon Heroicks, suppoling them the easier composition. But Lord into what an excess of laughter did my Master fall into, when he perused my hobling strains; Surely said he, these Verses are running a race altogether, the full did not fart fairly , or elfe is a very nimble Gentleman, for he hath out-run all his fellows four feet? the fecond comes two foot short of him, yet too forward for a true pace; here is another lame in a foot, and halrs most scurvily; here is another whose quantity is fhort, and hath gotten upon fills to feem long,

good ling, TIMAhrte d on fure. carev had hat I y refentd net k-out inna Pin anner ken; s: To Verm my meter fome and fuplinto into, id he, e first entle. t? the ward , and anth long,

and

nd one (in contradiction to him) which is long, because he will be short hath cut his own Legs off; With thele and the like speeches did he please himfelf in his own wit . (which I understood but little) and after he had tired himfelfand me too, with prodigal talk: He then spake to me in a harder dialect. making me understand how ignorant I was and how much precious time(irrecoverably) I had loft, which fo much feiz'd on my fpirits, that I was much griev'd and troubled, fo that he made Vermilion tears run down my cheeks, oc. After he had bestowed so much correction as he thought might work in me penitence for my egregious truanting he degraded me. and made me begin anew. The shame whereof, and reproach I daily received from my School-fellows. I could not bear; wherefore I prevailed on my Mothers ludulgence, to let me regain what I had loft at home, which the confented to. But perceiving my Lecherous inclinations, by my night-practifes with her Maid resolved to send me to a Boarding School? For our Family being but small, I lay with the Maid: being so young, my Mother did not in the least suspect me; but my too forward Lechery would not let me lie quiet, putting her frequently to the squeak. In fine, I was sent away a great difrance to a very severe and rigid Mafter. I no sooner commenced Scholar to this Tyrant Pedagogue, but I was kept close to my Book; and left my Wit should be any ways dull'd, my stomack was always kept fharp; which quickned my invention, to supply what was deficient. There is no complaint so insufferable as the grumbling of empty and diffatisfied Guts. My greatest care was to infinuate my felfinto the favour of the Servant-Maids, knowing they lovid

to play at Small Game rather than flick out. Tperformed my bulinels fo well, that my flomack was alwayes fatiated, when the rest of the Boarders were diffarisfied; often going to bed in a manner fipperlefs. Here I was deprived of my old pilfering way, because I had no convenience for the disposal of what was stole, it being but a very small Village. However to keep my hand in use, I daily practifed on Fruit, sometimes with a Spar sharpned at one end, I pricke the Apples out of the Baskers : at other times I took with me a Comrade, and then this would we do. I would go to a Fruiterer and bargain with him for a penny worth or more of Apple, receiving them into my Hat, pretending to draw my money out, I did clap my Har between my Lege. my Partner perceiving that (as we had afore plotted it would be) behind, matcht it through my Legs and ran away with it, I thereupon did ufe to roar our as if I had been undone, and pretending to run after him to regain my Har, we got out of light and then shared the booty. One time coming along the Marker, I faw a fmall basker of Cherries, I demanded of the woman that fold them, what the would have for as many as I could take up in my hand; the fook ing upon it and feeing it was but a very finall one, proportionable to my Stature, two pence faid they with that . I laid her down her price , and took up basker and all the Cherries therein contain'd, and in a fober pace carried them away. The woman amazed that the thould be thus furprized by fuch a Younker, followed me; and making a great noise, gathered a conflux of people about us, and among the rell a Gentleman of quality, who was very earnest to know what the matter was: Holding my purchase fall

per-

as al-

Were

pper-

way,

fal of

Ctiled

other

thus bar-

ple.

draw

Legs,

otted s and

tit as

after

g the

nded have

ook-

one,

the

k up

nd in

maz-

ther-

e reft

eft to

fe falt

in my hands (for mothing could perswade me to let go that booty I had fo fairly obtained) I defired the Gentleman that he would be judge of my cause. whereupon I related to him in what manner I bargained with the woman, and that I had done nothing unjustly, but what was according to our contract. The Gentleman wondring at the pregnancy of wit in fo tender an age, laught heartily, and condemn'd the Cherries for my proper use, but withal paid the woman for them. I was naturally so prone to please my fenfes fo that I cared not what courfe I took that I might obtain my defires. I appli'd my felf more to my Wit and invention, than I should have done, had I had any thing allowed me from a Friend for a moderate expence. But my Mother thought otherwife. knowing by infallible symptoms, the extravagantness of my inclinations, and therefore debard me as much the could the very fight of money. A River confined within fome made Bank, deterring its patural course, will (when that is overthrown which impeded its progress) flow with the greater impetuolity: Youth may for a while be citcumscribed as to its defires; but if his inclination prompt him to the enjoyment of fential delights. fooner or later he will talte their relish; and better early than late. Before the Noon of his days approach, Experience may reform his Life and Conversation; though from the Dawning Morning thereof, till the Meridian, his Actions have been nothing elle but the Extract of all manner of Debauchery. But ('ris commonly observed): That Man which in the Declination of Age tracks the by-paths of Vice and Licentiousness, seldome desists till Deaths euts off his paffage; never leaving off deting on such false and

and immaginary pleasures, till the Grim Pale-fat Messenger takes him napping. Thus much by wa

of digreftion.

Our Master was very ancient, however resolvid that his Age should not hinder his Teaching: for if he found himself indisposed, he would send for usal into his Bed Chamber, instructing us there: A ma of so strange a temper, that he delighted to inven the course of Nature; lying in bed by day, and walk ing in the night, the rain feldome deterring him. O a time above the reft, a Gentleman had fent his So five pieces of Gold to give his Master for Diet, de Our Master receiving them, called for a small Ca binet that flood in theroom, which I (more officion than the reft) brought him. Having put in the Gold he commanded me to carry it from whence I hadin which I did; well confidering the weight thered being though small very heavy. The Devil present became my Tutor, suggesting to my thoughts w rious ways for the gaining this money. At last Infolved to take the impression of the Key in war which with much diffigulty I obtain'd, and carried to a Smith four miles diffant, The old Fellow (in mediately upon my proposal) suspected me; (doubt less he was acquainted with such kind of devices) an questioning me what I intended thereby, I was for ced to betake my felt to my Legs for fafety. knowing what answer to make him. The Smit feeing me run, thinking to benefit himself by appre hending me purfued after, with a red bot iron in h band which his hafte had made him forger to h alide; one standing by me (just as the Smith he almost overtaken me) feeing him come running with a hot iron in his hand, and fearing left hi blind

la-fact by way efolvid : for i or usal A man inven walk im.O his Son all Ca ficiou Gold hadin hered elenth hts va At I so wax rriedi w (im doubt es) an , 10 Smid appre n in hi unning eft hi

blind

blind passion might prompt him to mischief me, fruck up his heels, who in the fall gave himfelfa burnt mark in the hand, which no doubt he had long goe delerv'd; my unknown friend would not fufer him to rife, till I was out of fight. My fielt ftraagem not fuiting with my purpose, I try'd a Pickock of mine own invention: but that would not feet my defign neither; fo that I concluded to take Cabinet and all, and in order thereunto watcht my. peportunity when he should walk abroad according to his cuftom at night. It was not long ere I enjoyed my withes. My mafters cultom was to walk abroad it nights, and fleep in the day time; inverting the fourle of Nature: foreknowing his intention, I got nto the Chamber, and conceal'd my felf under the Bed. So finding my way clear, I convey'd my felf ind purchase out of the House; and travelled all ight. In the morning I found my felf near a small lown, about fixteen miles distant from the place thence I came. Thinking my self now secure, I hought it very requifite here to repose my wearied imbs, and solace my self with the sight of what I ad gotten: but it was not long after that I was fo ac'd for it, that comparatively to my punishment, ridewel whipping is but a pastime. The first Bush I ame at, I went in and called for Sack, having never afted any, and hearing much talk thereof, at which he people of the House much admired, that so small Urchin as I should call for such costly Liquor. They iewed me very intuitively, but more especially the Cabiner, which caused them to suspect me. The Maer of the house was acquainted herewith, who as the Devil would have it was a Puritan, and a Conestable to too officious and severe. Without craving paron for his bold intrusion, he desired me I would

admir him into my Boy-ships society. I confess gray hairs and fowre countenance made me at fi fight, very much fear what the event offis vil would prove: However with a feeming undaunted ness, I drank to him (but what a difference of tal there was in that and the first glass I drank Solus length he began to ask me divers questions, When I came ? Whither I was going ? Woat was contain within that Cafeanet? and the like. Before I coul give the resolution of what they demanded, the H and Cry overtook me: presently I was laid hold of And my treasure taken from me : that which ver me as much as my Supprizal was . I had no furth time to try what kind of rafte the Sack had. Vario were the talk of the people, every one spending Verdia on me. This is a prime young Rogne indeed begin thus foon , faid one ; could be bave feen, when bis Mithers belly , furely be would bave fola fomethin thence, Another faid Forward fruit was foon rotte and fince I began to feat whileft a child. I food be ba ged before I should write Min. Ready to die with fea I was fent back to the place whence I came, and from thence to the place of Execution, had not the tends ness of my age, and sewness of years, procured pi from my injur'd mafter. Confin'd I was within house, locke up close Prisonner in a Chamber, that he could acquaint my Mother with what h past. In this time I was not debarr'd of my fustenant though my Commons were Epitomiz'd, neith was I altogether deprived of fociety, for I was da vifited by my Mafter, attended with a Car of Ning tails (as he call'd it) being to many finall cords, wi which he fley'd my buttocks; and when he found hubborn, or not penitent enough as he thought, and

onfess s ne at fire this virtual to the state of talk Solus: When e I could be the He hold or ich ver of further Varion dingh indeed when imethia n roues d be ha rith fea and fro tende red pi ithin h per , ti neith as dal f Nins ds, wit ound n hr, afte



had skin'd my podex, he would wash it with viegar, or water and falt. Within a week my Mother riv'd, who hearing of my Rogueries, was fo impaent, that the would needs take me to task her felf; it when the had untrust me, and faw me in fo woful plight, my thirt being as stiff as Buckram with blood. ad my render Breech plow'd and harrowed, fell own as if the had been about to expire: recovering. Mafter endeavoured to pacific her, by telling her, hat great offences, required great punishments; and he way to bend and Oak, is to do it whilft its young; had once when young (faid he) a Spaniel which would find out the Hens nest, and breaking the Eggs ick them, fo that we could never have any Chicens, at last discovering who was the malefactour; bethougt my felf of this punishment which should inder him from ever doing the like. I got an Egg cafted so hard till the shell was ready to burn, then id I first show the Egg to the Dog, and then clapt it or into his mouth holding his jaws close, this fo torpented him by burning, that ever after he could not ndure the fight thereof; but if shown run away lying as if he had been beaten. Thus for this notoious fact your Son must ! fo sharply chastized, that then he thinks of stealing, he shall remember those orments he once indured for it, and fo frighten him om executing any fuch crime. Many more arguents he alleadg'd to that purpose, which had satised her well in his feverity, had not natural affection sterposed. Whatto do with me, she knew not; wherebre the confulted with my Mafter, who told her, he durft not keep me longer, the Country people bringing idaily complaints against me. And to aggravate my lother the more, he briefly fumm'd up my faults

in this manner; having had juftly various acculer.

who drew up my indictment, Thus.

Imprimis. That one of his Maids having croft me (to be reveng'd ofher, knowing she was a drown wench, when affeep, not eafily wak't) as the flept be the fire , I took my opportunity , and melted for glew, and gently toucht the clofure of both her eve lids with a pencil which well I knew would lod up her fight. Against the time I intended to water her, I placed all about her Chairs and Stools. The Plot being ripe, I pretended her Mistris called The weach fearing up and running rubbing of he eves turn'd topfie turvy over the chairs, getting w the engag'd her felf with the stools, and so entange led her felf therein, that endeavouring to free he felf, her coars acted the part of Travtors, in difevering the hidden secrets and Arcanas belonging to her fex: and that with much fatisfaction I had feen the execution of my revenge. That this went could not be perswaded by any means, but that a a judgment the was stricken blind for some fin the had committed privately, which then her Confeience did whisper in her ear, and undoubtedly had turn'd Lunatick had fire not been speedily reftored to her fight by taking off the glew, which was done with much difficulty. That he going about to correct me for this unlucky and mischievous fact, was by me shown a very shitten trick, which put him into a stinking condition; for having made my self laxative, on purpose squirted into his face upon the first lash given. That being upon boys backs, ready to be whipt, I had often bir holes in their ears. That another time firreverencing in a paper, and running to the window with it, which looks our into the yard my aged Miftres looking up to fee who opened the Casement

acculer,

croft me drowner flept by red form her eye lld lock to wake lls. The called ag of her

entanger free her n discolonging n 1 had as wender that as fin she Conscidly had

reftored as done to cort, was out him my felf pon the spead

That unning he yard ned the ementy Cafement, I had lik'd to have thrown it into her mouth; however for a time deprived her of that little ight she had left. That another time I had watcht omelufty young Girles, that used in Summer-nights bout twelve a clock, to wash themselves in a small rook near adjacent, and that I had concealed my elfbehind a Bulh, and when they were stript, took way their cloathes, making them daunce home afer me ftark naked, to the view of their fweet-hearts. shom I had planted in a place appointed for that purpose, having given them before notice of my deign. A great many more fuch tricks he reconnted. which he knew, but not the tenth of what he knew or. As for example, on Christmass-day, we had a ot of Plumb-broth, I askt the maid to give mea afte, to see how Ilik'd them, Ithat I should, the faid. this was the maid I had fo ferv'd before with glew) nd with that, takes up a ladle full, and bid me sup, beholding the ladle in her own hand, I imprudently pening my mouth somwhat larger then I should, she oured down the scalding Portage through my broat: at present I could not tell the Jade (that sught till the held her rides) how Ilik'd them; but I trily believ'd I had swallowed the Gunpowder-Plot. specting every moment to be blown up. I took as the notice of this passage, as possibly I could, redving to, retalliate her kindness when she least hought ont. I observ'd the maid to carry this plumb ottage-por into the yard, and taking notice that neweight of the Jack was in the same yard wound pa great height under a smal Pent-house, the Jack sing down I suddenly removed the weight, and dened the Porto the line; fo going into the Kiring, wound it up to the top, and then stopt it,

for the meat was taken up. The house was all in uproar instantly about the Potevery one admiri what should become of it : The maid averred the the faw it even now, and none could remove it the Devil. Others afferted (which were infede with Puritanism) that it was a Judgment shown f the Superstitious observation of that Festival days the next day, roafting Meat, this feeming Mirad vanished by the descending of the Pot fastened to the Tack-line. Another time my Master had referre in his Garden some choice Aprecocks, not above half-score; which he purposed for some friends the intended to vifit him fhortly: The daily fight this delicare fruit, being forbidden, tempted m more strongly to attempt their Rape; but I ma choice of an impropitious hour to accomplish defign in; for my Mafter looked out of his winds and fawme gather them, though he knew not able futely whether is, was I or no. Whereupon ; hei stantly summond us together; being met, I quick understood his intention: therefore I conveyed Aprecocks into the next boys Pocket; I had no foo er done it, but we were commanded to be fearche I was very forward to be the first though I was m fulpected, but none was found about me, so that was acquirred. But to fee with what amazement poor boy gazed, when they were discovered abo him, how frangly he looked, differring his face i feveral forms, produc'd laughter even from my cenf d Mafter, but real pitty from me; for he was verely whipped for that Crime I my felf committee I could recite many more fuch like childish Rogue ries , did I not lear I should be redious in their re tion, and burden the Reader with juvenile follie cherefo

fore I shall return where I left off. Whilst my Mother was in a serious, consultation with her Reason, how she should dispose of me. I had not patience to wait the result, but gave her the slip, resolving to not the risk of Fortune, and try whither mine own endeavours would supply my necessities.

make room for Silk radiant Beams, to adligate its

phere in obscurity. In the morning I went our my progress as the dy of AHOen began allow

g'some darknets that had muffled an

the be van from his Malbergound what charfes the feered in one whole years Ramble, which are

T was in July when I undertook this my Knight-errantry; the fairness of the Sealon much woured my Enterprise: thinking I should always my fuch weather, and never be pinche with necity. I went on very couragiously. The first dinner made was on Blackberries and Nurs, effectied by very delicious fare at first, which delighted melo ch the more, having not my liberty controul'd hen night approached it feemed very uncouth and range, finding, instead of a Feather-bed, no other ng to lie on but a Haycock, and no other coverlid the Canopy of Heaven. But confidering with my that I had no task to con over night, nor fear fover fleeping my felf next morning, and so be acht to School by a Guard of my fellow Schollars uth a Lanthorn and Candle, though the Sun apard at that time in his full luftre; I laid my felf ewn and slept profoundly, not without some af-ighting dreams: The last was of the Cat of Nine als, which my Mafter laid to home me thought that

all in a dmiring of the control own for day; but Mirade of to the referred above a mode of the control of the c

plift man plift man windown ot abin to the puick project to the puick pr

fighte

earched was man for that ment the dabout face in

n my in the was in mitted Rogue

e follis

that the finart thereof made me cry out, and fil awaked; as then the early Park, the winged He rald of the morning, had not with her pretty was bling Notes, furnmen'd the bright watchmen'd the Night to prepare for a retreat; neither ha Aurora opened the Vermillion Oriental Gate, make room for Sols radiant Beams, to diffipate the gloomy darkness that had mustled up our Hemil phere in obscurity. In the morning I went on my progress as the day before; then began a flow er of tears to fall from my eyes, considering how I had left my disconsolate, and almost heart-be ken Mother, lamenting my los, and fearing wha faral courses I might take: it was no less troubles me to think that I was travelling I knew not whither, moneyles, having nothing but Hazel, a Brambles to address my self for the appealing Hungers approaching gripes. Now me though began to loath my aforenamed Manna, Black rles, Nuts, Crabs, Bullies, &c. and longer talte of the Fleib-pots again, but the Devil could I ger but what the hedges afforded me. day Ithus wandred about, not daring to come n any Town, having had fuch bad ficcess in the when I first rambled, and now night came of which pur me in mind of procuring a lodging to what warmer than the other. A Barn preled without delay or fear, entered into the inchant Calife , where I found accommodations for t most faithful and valient Knight that ere frode S die for Ladies fake. Here might I take my choice variety of fresh straw, but my weariness would permit to complement my good for rune one job to fumbled over head and ears; I had not lain the

and fol ged He cty war. nmen d her had ace, n pate the Hemi nt on a fhow ing hou art-bm ng wh couble not whi el, a afing hought tack the n ame d prefer ett, nchante for the ode S choice ould ! ne job ain the

2001

above an hour before I heard a noise, and peeping out of the straw, being in a great fear, I faw a many frange creatures come into the Barn, for the day was not yet thut in. My thoughts prefently reninded me that I had heard talk of Hobgoblings, Fairies and the like, and judged these no other; and that which confirmed me in this be ief, was their Garb and talking to one another in a uguage I understood not, (but fince, lunderland it to be Canting.) I lay fill as long as my er would permit me, but they furrounding ne, I was not able to contain my felf longer, ut crysed out aloud , Great God , have mercy on ne, and let not thefe Devils devour me ; and with ar, farted our from among them: They amazed much as I, ran for it too, leaving their children chind them, every one effeeming him the happithan which was the foremost. Hooking behind e, feeing them following me, imagined these Debran upon all four, and having flarted their game the resolved to hunta finful Leverer to death: encluding them long-winded Hell-hounds, I judge tying a lafer way than flying, and so fell instandy my knees: the Gypties quickly overtook me, d finding me in that posture, soon understood hence their fear proceeded. They then spoke to ein a Langage I understood, bidding me not be mid; but I had heard the Devil was a Lyar from theginning, therefore I would not believe them. bey would have rais'd me from my devotion . telgme it was enough, and that made me suspect in the more; thinking they deligned to get me nof a praying posture, that they might have the ore power of me. Nothing prevailing with me, y vowed and protested they would not injure me m

in the leaft, and if I would go along with them . I should fare as deliciously as they did, this was a potent argument to perswation, and fo I agreed to to along with them back again. All their cry was now for Rum-booze (i.e.) Good Liquor. Their Caprain not induring to hear fo fad a complaint, and not on deavour the supplying the want complained of, in mediately commanded out four able Maunders (Beggars) ordring them to ffroule (wander) to the next Town, every one going apart. Some Com trey-men gave them drink fearing they might he the houses in the night, out of revenge, others (or of the more ignorant fort, thought they could con mand infernal spirits , and so harm them that was or elfe bewitch their Cattel, and therefore wo nordeny them; in fo much that in a thort time the four verum d laden with bub and food. It was per fently placed in the middle of us, who fare circul ly; then out came the Wooden diffies, every of provided but my felf, but I was foon fupply'db voing Rum-Mort that fare next me intended my foorting mate. A health went round to the Pi de of Mauniters, another to the Great Duke of Ch perdogeous, a third to the Marquels of Doxy Deliga Rum-Morts , a Sourth, to the Earle of Chimes ; a ther did we forget, Haly Abbas, Athumazar, An dam, with the rest of the Waggoners, that Strives thall be principal in driving Charles his Wained part of the night we spent in boozing, pecking in ly or wapping that is drinking eating or whom according to those terms they use among the felves Jealouffe was a thing they never would at of hytheir Society, and to make appear howling they were tainted therewith, the males and fem lay promisenoully rogether, it being free for any

em, I

5 2 po-

d togo

as how

aptain

110t di-

of, in

mders,

) to the

Coun

ight fin

ers (ou

de com

at war

e wol

imethe

waspo

circul

every d

ply'db

endedi

the Price of Clarific Mess; in the Price of Clarific Mess; in the Ching of the ching of the could admire how line and female for any

the Fraternity to make choice of what Doxie he liked best , changing when he pleased. They plied me so of with their Rum-booz (as they called it) and pleaed me so well in giving me a young Girle to dally with, who (though in Rags, and with a skin artiicially discolloured tawny) yet I was not so ignoant, as not to understand good flesh, and what proerties went to the compleating a votarel's for Venus rvice. I was so tickled in my fancy with this pretty ttle wanton Companion , that for her fake , I was ery well content to lift my felf one of that Ragged egiment. And that which added to the inducing eto this resolution was my want of money , and hat I suffered in those two foregoing hard days reamong the Nut Trees. I first acquainted my exie with my intent, who glad to hear thereof, gave vent and broache it to the rest who unanimously th joy imbraced me; and to congratulate my inaavation tipt to each other a Gage of Boos, and fo. ent round. The fumes of drink had now ascended. to their brain, wherefore they coutcht a Hogs-bead, d went to fleep.

D 3

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Wherein he Relates what manner of People the were into whose Society be entred himself, a vision of their Tribe, Manners, Customes, a Language.

S foon as I had refolv'd to travel the Count with them, they fitted me for their compa by ftripping me, and felling my proper garmen and cloathing me in rags, which they pinn'd ab me, giving a ffirch here and there, according as cellity required. We used not when we enter our Libkin or Lodging to pull off our clot which had I been forc'd to do , I could never be put them on again, nor any, but fuch who weres cultomed to produce Order out of a Bable of Being now ale mede de Tatterdemallion , to comp me for their purpose, with green Wallnuts the discoloured my face, that every one that faw would have fworn I was the true Son of an Egypti Before we march on , let me give you an account our Leaders, and the rancks we were disposed Our chief Commander was called by the name Ruffeler, the next to him Upright-man, the rell order thus :

Hockers, (alias) Anglers. Priggers of Prancers. Pallyards. Fraters.

Prigges. Swadlars. Curtals. Irish-toyle. Swigmen.

Jarkemen.

Jarkemen.

Jarkemen.

Jarkemen.

Jarkemen.

Jarkemen.

Bawdy-Baskets

Autem-Morts.

Doxies.

Wbip-Jacks.

Counterfeit-Cranks.

Kitchin-Morts.

We Muster'd above threescore old and young. and because we were too great a company to March together, we were divided into three Squadrons. The first Squadron that led the Van, was ordered by our Commander, to flick up small boughs all the way they went, that we might know what course they freer'd. For like wild Fowl we flie one after another, and though we are scattered like the quarters of a Traitor, yet like water when cut with a Sword. we easily came together again. As the Switzer hath his Wench and his Cock with him when he goes to Wars: or like a Scotch Army, where every Souldier almost hath the Gend Wife and the Bearns following him: So we had every one his Doxie or Wench, who carried at her back a Lullaby-cheat, and it may be another in her Arms. When they are weary of carrying them, they take their turns to put them in a pair of Panniers, like green Geese going to Marker, or like Fish in Dosfers comming from Rye. Where note, that each division bath a small Horse or two. or else Asses to ease them of their burdens. Some of us were clad Antickly with Bells and other toys, meerly to allure the country people unto us, which most commonly produced their desired effects. In some places they would flock unto us, in great quantities, and then was our time to make our Markets. We pretended an acquaintance with the Stars (as having

Sa

ple the

Countr

ompa

arme

ng as I

enter

cloth

weres

e of the

comp

ts they

faw in

ccount

posedi

e name

he ref

lf, a

having an Alliance to the Egyptian Magi, the found ders of Aftrologick Art and that the Ministers of Fare were our Familiers, and so possessing the poor ignorant people with a belief, that we could tell their Fortunes by inspection into either hand or faces; whil'if we were feriously looking thereon one of our diving Comrades picke their pockets, o with a fhort fharp knife, and a horn on the thumb mipt their bungs. By asking the filly Milk maid questions, we gathered from their own mouthst properest resolutions, then would they admire; and in their admiration tremble to hear the Truth proceed from the mouth of fuch as were ftrangers to their actions, by which means, among fome we gain'd a great respect, accompanied with fear. Di not Aftrologers make use of fuch Stratagents, the could never acquire fo much repute among the dicions, as well as vulgar capacities. And because it falls in fo pat to my present purpose, I shall be fo much patience from the Reader , as to give his a brief account of Some fallacies some Star-page Impostors use to work their own ends, and delud credulous People. One whereof I knew, who rais his credit (and fince a confiderable effate) upont Balis of good intelligence. He kept a fervant, wh constantly attended below for the reception of sed who came for farisfaction in the aftrological Refo lucion of questions. This mans Office was to tel the Querent, That bis Mafter was bufie above, about Some grand concern, but if the Person would be please to moit a little while, till that bufinefs mas diffatchil be questioned not but that his Mafter would render him a latisfactory account of what be demanded; adding father, (to infuse into him faith, to credit what he (and yet at though report bad spoken largly, (and yet

he

nothing but what this Artist hath mierited yet all e founcame far fort of bis real defert , baving done treb finfters of pendious things that must needs (without injustice) be g thefe commemorized to Evernity , and admired by future e could ages. In the mean time, this fervant endeavoured r hand to pump out of the Proponent what he earne about. hereon, which having understood, he gave information to ers . a his Mafter, by fo many times ringing a Bell. This thumb. Irem being given, the Querent is called up, and bernaide fore ever he can frame his mouth to propound his erchethe question, this profound Artist prevents him faving. ire, and Iknow what you come about Sir, (therefore fave your rh profelf the labour to tell me that which Iknow already) gers n you have loft a Watch, a Horfe; or you would know bow ome we youshall prosper in such a bufiness, whither Marriage ir. Di or an Imployment; or any fuch like common question. s, the This makes the Artift be wondered at; and then ethe in recting a Scheme, positively and surfily rells him becauk hallte what he must expect. And that he may give anive him fwers more exactly concerning stollen goods, he was in conftant fee with Thief-takers, who from time to er-palm time, made him a report of what persons were robdelude o rais bed, what the things were, and many times gave him a discription of the Fellon. By these practipont it. who les, men believed every word he delivered to be an Oracle; fo that his Chamber was daily fo thronged of fud with the report of people, that in a short time his I Relo ambition pricked him on to purchases, with the s to tel about money he had gained thus falliciously. One Story, plealed very remarkable, I shall add, and then crave your patchid pardon for this my difgression. One day a young Gen lleman (but of a mean estate) came to him, who ader him adding was more credulous then wife, and more inquititive then prudent; and having not that wealth which his what he redigality required, defired instructions what course and ve

he was to ager to arrive at the Port of his wifes and hopes: viewing him narrowly, he perceived him to be a man of a fweet complexion, and a body well proportioned; and therefore judged him afe Sir , (fail he) I hall give you my best advice , but I shall crave your patience for a little while; for a matter of this weigt me not precipitately be undersaken : wherefore if you pleafen fee me to morrow, what lies in me shall be at your fernice. Being just gone it happened that a Stale Maid, who had more moneys than beauty, and less discretion than leachery, came to be refolv'd of him, Whenk should be married: (for it feems by the fequel the could carry no longer:) viewing her well . (though the knew not him) he knew her to be wealthy, and nearly related to persons of quality. Madam, (fail he) Ishall endeavour your satisfaction; and so with drew into his Closer. Having staid a while, bring ing out his Figure, and with much gravity looking thereon, he thus unridled the mysterious men ing of the Celeftial bodies. Madam, You never me much troubled with the importunate fuits of ambrous Vi frants, (this he gathered from the deformity of he pholiognomy) they all knowing your indifferency to change your condition, but upon confiderable grounds; which means you have almost frustrated what the Stan bave designed for you. I hope it is but almost . (faid the not altogether; for it troubled her very much to her the should leave the world without tasting the sweets of a married life. No. (he replyed) for if to morow by four of the clock in the Afternoon , you go in More-fields, and take a turn or two in the Uleren Walk) you hall there meet with a per fon rich and bank fome, that at first fight shall fall extreamly in love will you : flight bim not , neither deny bim his conjugal pri

s wife

erceived

d a body

him afe

ir', (faid

rave your

eigt, mit

er fervice.

aid, who

ifcretion

Whenk

he could

ough he

y, and

mz, (faid

fo with

, bring

looking

is mean-

prous Vi

ty of he

erency to

undsih

the Stan

faid the

n to her

ling th

if to mor-

s go int

Ulerers

ed bank

ove with

regal pro

polal; if you do, it will be too late to bope for an busbandy You hall distinguish bim from others by thefe figns : His Complexionis fair, his Eye fo arp and piercing his Hair flaxen, of a middle Stature. Her joy had like to have transported her beyond the bounds of modefly which the could not conceal, but made it appear in a pecuniary expression of her gratitude for sich welcome tidings; and so promising him to follow his counsel, the took her leave. The next morning the young Gallant came, who had his leffon given him : but before he went, he made him give him a Bond of 200 /. to be paid upon the day of his marriage with that Gentlewoman; which he gladly confented to. and paid that very fum within ten days after, for according to the directions was given him, he met with that Gentlewoman describ'd to him, as he had been before to her, who at the first fight of each other, were incapable of containing themselves, but mutually embrac'd (after three or tour words past) asifhe had been her (quandam) Dearly Beloved, return'd from some long Voyage, and went not to their respective lodgings till their marriage was confummated. But to return where I left off.

Thus we rambled up and down the Country; and where the people demean'd themselves not civil to us by voluntary contributions, their Geese, Hens, Pigs, or any such mandible thing we met with, made us satisfaction for their hide-bound injuries. Our revenge most commonly was very bloody, and so merciles, that what ever sell into our hands, never escap'd alive, and in our murders so cruel, that nothing would satisfie us but the very hearts-blood of what we kill'd. The usual sacrifices of our implacable revenge, were innocent Lambs, Sheep, Calves,

er, all which we handled more feverely than Pris foners are by Serjeants when they are not paid their uninft Demands; Fees, I should have faid, but that by experience I have found, they walk not accome ding to the Rules of ancient Conflitutions, but are guided by the dictates of their infatiate wills, which is their Law, which poor Prisoners must indulge. (though they rack their flender credits, or pawn their cloaths) or elfe they must expect less kindness from them, then a condemned person about to be tyed up by the Hangman, who will fray till he is ready to be turn'd off. A Goose coming among us, we have a trick to make him fo wife, as neverto be Goofe again: But let the wifest use what tricks they can they ne'er shall make some Serieants hones men. We feize the prey, and leave the Tragical part to our Morts or Women to act : the Stage on which they perform their parts, is either some large Heath, or Firz-bufh-Gommon, far from any Houle. being done, and night approaching, we repair to our Dormitories, or Houses of Rest, which are most usually Out-Barns of Farmers and Husbandmen. which we make choice of infome poor fragling Village, who dare not deny us, for fear ere the morning they find their Tatcht houses too hot to hold them. These Barns serve us instead of Cook Rooms, Supping Parlours, and Bed-Chambers: having Supt, (most commonly in a plentiful manner) we cannot Couch at Hophead, that is to fay, fleep, without good ftore of Rum-booze, that is, drink; and having sufficiently warm'd our brains with humming Liquor, which our Lower (Silver) thall proeure ; if our deceixful Maunding (Begging) cannot, we then fing a Catch or two in our own Language,

ian Pri-

tid their

but that

but are

dulge,

r pawn

indues

if to be

among

everto

Cricks

hones

al part

which

Heath,

This

pairto

re molt

ng Vil-

mor-

to hold

ooms,

r) we

with-

; and

hum-

pro-

uage,

which we had good flore; which for their bawry I omit: however, give me leave to instance one
anting Song, and I shall wave the rest, being loath
orire you too much with one thing.

Ing out bien Morts, and toure, and toure, Bing out bien Morts, and toure; or all your Duds are bing da maft The bien Cove hath the loure. met a Dell . I view'd ber mell , in the She was benship to my watch ; ofbe and I did fall and clay Whatever we could catch. bis Doxie Dell can cut bien whids, And map fell for a min; and prig and cloy to benthiply All the Demfea-vile within. be boyle was up, we had good luck In froit for and in Snow : Worn they didfeek, then did me creep, and alle in sollo And plant in Ruff-mans low. To Strawling Kenthe Mort bings then, in or ever on To fetch loure for ber cheats; Pude & Ruffe-peck, Rombold by Harman-beck 1 111101 And wen by Maunders feats. le Maunders all, flow mhat you ftall, To Rome Coves what fo Quire, adent enise nexts And mapping Dell, that niggles well, And takes loure for ber bire. And Tybe well jerkt, teckrome confest. For back by glymmar to Maund; Tomill each ken , let Cove bing then, Ibrough Ruff-mans, jague, or Laund, Till Cramprings quire tip Cove bis bire;

And Quier Ken do them catch;

A Canniken, mill quire Cuffen,
So Onier to bon Coves watch.
Bien Darkmans then, Boufe Mort and Ken,
The bien Coves hings awaft,
On Chates to trine by Rome-Coves dine,
For his long lib at last.
Bing'd out hien Morts and toure, and toure,
Bing out of the Rome vile bine,
And toure the Cove that cloyd your duds,

Upon the Chates to trine.

Having even wearied our felves with drinking and finging, we tumbl'd promiseuously together, Male and Female in Straw, not confining our felvest one constant Consort, we made use of the first that came to hand; by which means Incests and Adul teries become our pastimes. By this means I gree weary of their practices, and therefore resolved in defert them as foon as the first opportunity should offer it felf, which was in a fhort-time; wherefore at the present I shall say no more of them, only give me leave to give fome fmall account of their Language. The first Inventor of Canting, as I amintorm'd, was Hang'd about fourfcore years frice! fuch Gibberifh was never heard of before; fince which time, there hath not been wanting firch, who have raken pains in the pollishing, refining, and augmenring that Language of the Devils Imps. It is a confir fed invention of words; for its Dialect I cannot find to be grounded on any certain Rules; and no wor der, fince the Founders and Practicers thereof, are the chief Fathers and Nourishers of Disorder. Yo even out of that Irregularity a man may oblere fome kind of form, and fome words do retain fom thing of Scholarship, as Togernan a Gown, from Toger

Pannam, from Panis, Bread; Cofan, Cafeus, Cheefe. The monofyllable Chest, we use as a Relative, as Nat, a Head ; Nab-chest, a Mar , Oc. Cove or Cuffinista general terms a Man; but by adding bien, which fignifies good, or well, or Quire, which is wicked or Knavish ; you make the word Cove fignifie an Honest man, or a Juffice of Peace. Pardon the expression, for they call a Juffice Swier-Cuffin ; that is to fay as before-mentioned a wicked knavish, or foolishman. To conclude, I shall here insert this little Canting Vocabulary Alphaberically:

A Utem Mor? Abram ? Abram Cove 32H Gro Autem Bugbar mid A Chicken Bosse Boufing Ken forde Boung Bien Benshiply Senar Ring Bube Bufe Bleating chear a Belly cheat Land

g and Male

TES TO

Adul

grew

red to

hould

refort

y give

Lan-

m m-

meet which

have

menonfu

t find WOD-

Yet Yet

ferve fom-

Toga;

Pani

Betty

Bite the Peter or Roger

Married Woman / Naked A Tatterdemallion A Church million A Cur An Ale-house A Shilling A Purfe stando guidena. Good or well Very Well lew Megel of Better thid meid and Car cuite white og oT ling a wafte ais reserved Togo away The Pox A Dog A Sheep An Apron An Instrument to break a

Steal the Portmantle or

(Cloak-bagg.

Budge

Goods

Onds-Real

Budge

Cloak Densca-vile

and Denmerar

Darkmans

Donie >

Dell

Dock

Wap 5 Deuswins Dup Earnest

Astip me my Earnest Frummagem Fileb Ferme Fambles Fambles cheats

Fib Flag Fogus Fencing Culy

Slymmer
Slazier's
Grannam
Sentry-More
Gan
Gage
Trunting cheat
Siger

The Country A Mad-man Night or evenin

A Wench

To

Two pence
To enter
A part
Give me my part or share
Choakt
A Staff
A Hole
Hands

Rings or Gloves
To beat
A Groat
Tobacco or Smoke

One that receives stollen (goods

Eyes
Corn
A Gallant Wench
A Lip
A Pot or Pipe
A Sucking Pig

A Door Any Writing or Pals One that goes in at the (windows

Denie

low

Z

Cile

Gilt Harmanbeck Harmans Heave a Booth Half bord Hearts ca ! Focky

Fague Tarke Ken

Kinchin

Knapper of Knappers Kinchin Cove

Kate Loure Lightmans Tib

Libben Lage

Libedge Lullabie-cheat

Lap Lurries Maunder Maunders Margery Proter Mill

Make Mint

Moffling escare problem A A Napkin Mumpers.

The Face

A Pick-lock A Constable The Stocks To rob an House

Six pence

A twenty shillings piece A Flayl, or mans Privide

A Ditch A Seal An House Little

A Sheep-stealer A little man

A Pick-lock Money

Morning or Day To tumble an house to lie in

Water a Bed a Childe Pottage

All manner of Cleath

To Beg Beggers an Hen To steal

an half-peny A Gold

Took A Gentile Beggars Milker of 10 gning Wyn One that Breaks house

an Head

Nap

Palliard

Paplar

Prats

iece

vide

Prigg

Peckidge Plannam

Plant

Prigging

Prancer Prating-cheat

Peake

Pike on the Leen

Perry Peter

Prigger of Prancers

Pad

Plant your whide

Quarron

Quacking cheat Quier

Quier-Ken Quier-More

Juier-Cove

Ramboyle Rome

Rome-Ale

Rome-Mort

Ruffin Roger

oule

Ridge-enly

Mer

To take

Or cheat

One whose Father is a

Beggar born

Milk-Pottage

Thighs

To Ride

Meat

Bread

To lay or hide

Riding an Horse

a Tongue

any Lace

Run as faft as you can

Fearful

a Portmantua an Horse-flealer

The Highway-man

Have a care what you far a Body

a Duck

Wicked or Roguille

a Prison

a Pocky Jade

a Rogue

a Ward or watch

Gallant London

a Gallant Girl

The Devil

a Cloak-bagg

a Goldsmith en over-acounting

Ruffe peck Red-shanke Rom-pad Rome-padders Rome-Culle Swagg Snudge

Shop-lift

Stampers Stock-dramers Stamps Scoure Skew Slate. Strommel Skepper Stow your mebide

Stalling-Ken

Smelling cheat Solomon Tour Tout his muns Track up the Dancers The Cal Snylches Tip the Cole to Adam Tyler Give what money you

Tip the Mish Tibe'th' Buttery Bacon a Mallard The High-way High-way-men a Rich Coxcomb a Shop

One that lies under the bed to rob the house One that steals out of

The shooes Stockings Legs To wear a Difh a Sheet Straw or Hair a Barn Be warv a Brokers House, or an

House to receive follen goods. A Garden The Mass To look out Look in his face Goup the Stayres The Man eyes you

pocker-pickt to the next party , prefemi Give the Shirt

a Goofe To give The Mort tipt me a wink

Trine
Trining
Tick-Rome
Tres wins
Win
Wicher Cully
Tasum

house

out of

thops

e stole

y you

The Whore gave me a wink,
Tyburn
Hanging

Hanging
A License
Three pence
A Penny
A Silver-smith

Milk

Thus much for a taste: I think it not worth my pains to insert all those Canting words which are used; it is enough that I have here divulged what words are most in use. Having now deserted this Tawny Grew, I resolved to betake my self to a new Trade; which you shall understand in this sollowing Discourse.

CHAP. VI.

How he went a Begging. What Rules he observed therein. What Villanies he committed whilf he profest that mysterious Art.

TEcessity is a thing better known by the essects, than its character; and of all things the most insufferable: to prevent which, it puts a man on to venture upon all manner of dishonest and dangerous actions, suggesting strange imaginations, and desperate resolutions, solliciting things infamous,

7/4

and

and attempting things impellible; the product which is onely diforder, confission, shame, and in the end ruine. But when Necessity shall conjoys with an evil disposition, a depray'd nature, what horrid and nefarious facts will it not instigate that man to perpetrate? And though he feeth monthly examples of persons condemned and executed for the like crimes he daily practifeth, will not forber nor delift from fuch irregular and life-deftroying courses, till they have brought him to the like mile rable Catastrophe. Necessity had now deeply fall in love with me; and the young Virgin Shamefac'dness (once my Mistress) had forfaken me: for as foon as I had pull'd but one thread out of her garment, all the reft unravell'd; and the not brook ing her nakedness, changed her master, and some fally left me. Having now obtained more thank convenient boldness I travelled, and begg'd win very good success. But me thought my life was somewhat uncomfortable without a Companion, (a) Creatures covering fociety, but more especially Man:) at length according to my defires I met with one, whoselong practice in this Art, besides the Observations of his Predecessours, deriving his per degree in a direct line from Prince Prigg) indu'dhim with fo much skill as to furnish me with the know. ledge of any thing that belonged to the liberal And Begging. We streight betook our felves to the Boozing-Ken; and having bubb'd rumly, we concluded an everlasting friendship. Than did here count to me the most material things observable in our Profession. First, he tun'd my voice to that pitch which might most of all raise compassion; next what form of prayer I was to use upon such an accasion, what upon fach, varying according to the humon

iuct d and in njoyn What te that onthly red for orbear oying mile ly fala hamee: for of her brook. foto than a d with fomt-1, (2) ecially et with des the is per i'd him know. Arto to the e con he reable in t pitch ct what cafion,

umon

of those persons that I begged of gathered from their habit or gesture; then he told me when we came to London, he would acquaint me what places were most fit for our purpose, & what times. That I ought not to be too importunate to some, always wishing well, and loudly praying for the health and fafety of Estate and Limbs of such as deny'd me Alms; but more especially pronounce a God bless you Master, and let Heaven reward what you have here done on earth, if any thing is bestowed upon me. If any should pity my nakedness, and cloath me in garments without holes in them, Ishould wear them no longer than in the Doners fight, referving my rags to re-invest my self, and sell the other, as unfit and scandalous to our Occupation. That we should never beg far from one another, and at nights faithfully share the gains. Moreover, he inform'd me the way to make all forts of feeming fores and lameness. That within the ratter'd rags, there be places provided for private conveyance. Some of maturer age, if they have no children, rent them of fuch as have: but we had no occasion for this fallacy. That if I saw a door open, I should go in boldly; if I met any in the way, I should then in a very submissive manner implore their help in the relieving my want, never deliring any thing but what was of small value, one half-penny, farthing, or some broken crust, (if at a door) pretending the not eating of a bit in two days. If the passage was clear, whip away what was nearest to hand. That the time of riting in the morning be very early, shewing my self in the street: for then will those that pass by, judge I have no or ther lodging but what a stall affords, that way procuring relief from pitiful-minded persons, and so continue beging till the evening; when it beginneth

br

C

in

m

of

m

Y

ag

Ne

an

an

28

FO

to

th

há

fel

te

he

h

pu

ı.

to be duskish, if any then walks fingly, accost himin a begging form; coming up so close, as that you may knock him down with a Truncheon, still carriedabout for that purpose; which is done securely, and

many times with a good booty.

Being full fraught with these, and many more precepts he delivered, we fet forth on our progress. We had not gone far , before we were furprized by the Constable, as two sturdy Vagrants, and as bandfail to my new Trade, we were both foundly whipe out of Town. To avoid this danger for the time to come, we mist all the towns of any considerable note in our way, and onely frequented Villages; nay at last we were forc'd not onely to avoid them but the High-ways too: for Travellers observing our garb, countenances, and weapons, which was a Bartoon, suspecting us, would before they came near us, fer spurs to their horses and ride as if the Dent drove them. Many petty rogueries we performed by the way, not worthy the commemoration, and therefore I shall pass them over; onely this I shall infert.

Traveling the Field-way, we stumbled on a Tinker and his Tralllying by an Hedge-side, I knew not what to thinke at first they lay so still, with much pulling and stirring then they awakened; I askt them what they lay there for? They answered me, That they were lately bitten by a Serpent near adjacent, a potent creature, mighty in strength, and of a vast proportion, who had lately stung severall as well as they. It seems very strange to us, especially having heard not the least report bereof. To be short, I desired them to she wis the place of his residence, which they readily consented to. In stead of this Venomous Animal, they only brought

mm

may

ed a-

and

nore

res. d by

and-

hipt

e to

note

nay

but

Our Bar-

us,

evil

ned

and

hall

n a

vich

; [

an-

y 2

in

tely

nge

non

the

te t

nly

14

brought us to its representation in a fign, where a Cup of double-brew'd Beer was fold , notable huming geer. The people lik'd the Tinker and his Female Comerade well enough, but would not admit. ofus, till we fhew'd them money: For our Vestments look'd like the Gleanings of a Rag-merchants Yard. We drank stiffy till we laid the woman affeep again: still the Tinker bore up stiffly, she had not flept long, but up the started, pull'dup her coats. and in our presence pis'd in the middle of the room and fo fare her felf down , yet awaked not : which action could not but produce much laughter from me and my Comrade. At last the Tinker felf alleep too, having added so much to his former burden that he was no longer able to stand under it. Now had my wirs enough to work on: but finding my felf very drowfie, for the strength of the drink had almost over-powred me, I was forc'd to advise with my friend what course I were best take to make me little more fober: he was so well known in such matters, (being an old experienced Pitcher-man) hat he quickly counselled me what to do, he himself being not in the least disturb'd. This was his advice which he did put in practice, he got a Pail full of water, and so taking me up by the heels, he clapt my head thereinto; holding me in that manner folong, hat the Pail had like to have prov'd the Terry-beat hat should wast me over the Stygian Lake; this so qualify'd the hear my head had contracted by my extellive drinking of that strong stupifying liquor, that found it had wrought its desired effects.

After this, we ranfackt their pockets, but found ittle in the mans; but fearthing the woman in a private place between her Pocket and Placket, we there lifeovered fomething confiderable. Having so done,

we thought it high time to be gone, but first were folv'd to make some sport for their moneys, which was thus: I tied to each of their Girdles behinds Elaggon-pot, and to each a Label affixt, or a paper of Verses, and so immediately tript off. feeing us go out of doors with more than ordinar speed, ran into the room where the Tinker and his Lady were: he fuddenly awaked them, telling the we were gone. Hearing this, they hastily started in and reeling ran to overtake us: the Master ofthe house seeing his Pots dangling at their breech, ra after the Tinker , crying , Stop'em , ftop'em , Stop it thierish Tinker, stop the Whore with my Pot. We were wifer than fo to flay to hear how the Tinker and his Trall came off, or to hear the laughter that weun doubtedly raised by this waggish contrivance, but directed our course for London directly, where wear rived foon enough, nay too foon for fome. Out-cry foon alarm'd the ears of his Neighbour who with the Hoft seizing on them, and carrying them back, gave us an opportunity for our escape. The Lines that were about the Tinkers Pot, were these to my best remembrance.

> Serpents but sting, or onely bite so deep To numb the sence, so lay men fast afleep. Wit acts far greater things. I'll say no more: T'ave payd for sleeping, Sir next clear the score.

Those that were fastued to the Womans Pot, were these:

'I was not the Serpent, but strong Beer that stung! The vent being stopt, the Drink wrought through the Bung.

I had like to had forgot to give you an account of

that

were which ehinda a paper he Hot rdinan and his ig then rted up. r of the h, ran Stop the e were and his weun ce, but e Wear-This hbours, arrying escape. , Wert

e: core. ot, were

t stungt orough

unt of

merry passage that hapned upon the road we travelled on; bearing the hoof we overtook a Cart, but in the name of Rabbi Abraham, what think you was in it? In troth even a Squadron of the Tatterdemallion Regiment; Some pretendedly blind, others their leggs tied up in a ftring. A third fort having a dead Palfy over all one side. A fourth so lame as if he never had been ftrung with finews. fell into discourse, asking them whither they were bound thus carted ? They answered us: every one for his own Country, we have been already jib'd (faid one) that is jerkt at the Whipping-post, and now enjoy the benefit of a Pass. The Surly Rogue the Carter observing our familiar ralk made a stand. speaking to us after this manner. Why how now Gentlemen , how dropt you out of the Carts Arfe? what, you go on foot and your Brethren ride? It shall not be; ease your legs, come I'le lend you an hand. I was about to reply when a fellow came along who knew this Carter, and askt him what he would do. or whither he was going with them Criples. Introth hid he, to tell you the truth, I am going to Kilum (a Town it feems on the borders of Oxford-Shire.) Hearing this, I knew not what to think on't but confulted with the aspect of the carted crew. Their faces discovered nothing but sence of danger, so that now I perceiv'd their thoughts were foly imployed about their escape, which they did soon put in execution. For forthwith the strings were cut that tied up their legs, who filently flid out of the cart one after another for fear of discovery, the blind could fee their way down too, the Paralitick could run as swift as a Stag; The fellow drove on still, not missing his Company presently, at last looking about he law one running this way, another

that way a third contrary to either, a fourth wa hiding himself in a bulh, thus they were all dispersi D'ee here, d'ee here, cry'd the Carter, restore the leggs and eyes you borrowed, and then run to the Devil if you can. I heard one of them distinct answer him, I le see you hang'd first, you murdering Rogue e're I will come near you; dont you remember that you faid even new that you were going to Killum. Could you but imagine the various posture their caustels fear put them in you would be a great Sharer with me in laughter, I could not retaine my felf from; this ftory put me in, mind of the like mistake whose effects proved more fatall in the time of the intestine wars in Ireland: A Trooper met with a Sculogue or Country-fellow, and demanding of him whence he came, he answered from Killwanium whither art a going? to kill more fayd he: thefe an two Towns) with that the Soldier sware he should not kill more, and so pistol'd him.

CHAR

Com

th

th

C

fer

as

00

ny En ny Co leff in under his ch Clym

coul

ime



CHAP. VII.

ny ike coming to London, he enters himself into the society of Beggars, distinguished by these Titles, Ben-seakers, Dommerars, Clapperdogeons, &c. With a short description of their Manners and Customes; as also a relation of a piece of Thest he committed.

Oming up to London, we strait way betook your selves to Newington-Butts; but by the way, my Friend could not forbear calling on his Friends in Kent-street, there they gave me a Nick-name; and my Comrade immediately fell to work, to put him-less into an equipage sit for the employment we had undertaken. He needed not to alter his habit; but his chief aime was to make counterfeit Sores or Clymes, according to the term of Art that is given them. With the assistance of some of the Fraterity, be had in an hours time, such a Leg, that could hardly look upon it without even dropping lown; and thus they made it: They took undlaked lime and Sope, mingled with the rust of old Iron; hese being well remper'd together, they did spred

ne.

eft

of

in

ad

Beel

he

o ii

nd

t try

frei

ore

he v

rou

nd t

he ft

d cir

yes .

icat hey

im :

alue

bater

od 1

eno

nt ba

pon

ght

onvo

POPI

it thick on two pieces of leather, which they and ply'd to his Leg, binding it thereunto very hard which in a short time did fret off the skin, the flest appearing all raw; then did they take blood and rub'd it all over his Leg; which being fully dried made the Leg appear all black, the Sore they did only let peep out of the holes of five or fix matteria clours. He foon got us a Doxie too, with a couple of children, (the fitter for our purpose) the one to carry in her arms, and the other to lead. Providing himfelfand me a good lufty Filch or Stick, with a hole at the end thereof, to put in a hook if occasion should ferve, to filch any thing off Hedges, &c. A way we went into Moor-fields: he would have made mea Clyme too, or an Artificial fore; but my stomack would no wayes accept of his kindness. Coming into the Fields, he planted me in a convenient place, the Doxie with her Lullaby-cheats in another, and him felf in a third, not far distant from one another, that one might catch the others Maunding at the rebound I observ'd my Friend and Rogue diligently, whathe did for my own information. One would have fwon he had been absolute lame, for (about to lie down) he flid to the earth by his Staff; being on the ground the first thing I took notice of; was the pirious differting of his face into various forms, to flir up com passion in such as passed by him; to which he added, a most doleful noife to this effect; For Gods fake, form tender bearted Christian, cast through your merciful qui one pittiful look upon a fore, lame, and miferable wretch! Bestow one penny or half-penny upon him that is ready perish, &c. I knew not how to tune my voice ; for hearkning to him; which he observing (when the people were passed by) he held up his sticks

25

ard.

Bell

and

ied,

on-

Til

e of

SLLA

im-

nole

bluc We

nea

ack into

im-

that and,

t he

orn wn)

md,

tor-

On

led,

ome eyes tcha

40

for

1 2

k at

BIG!

ne, a strong argument of his great displeasure, which eft I might further incur, I was forced to tone it out o some purpose. Night approaching, we left off begting, resolving to recreate our selves with what we ad got : in the way home, I faw a very fine piece of Beeflying on a Butchers-stall, the woman that kept he shop, was telling a Gossips tale to her neighbour o intentively, as I thought I might seize on my prey. and the never the wifer; with that I boldly fnatched tup; which an opposite neighbour perceiving, ran fer me, and foon took me: I was brought back bebre the woman, who was so wise (for sooth) that he would not receive stollen goods, though they were her own; and so inraged she was, that nothing would serve her turn, but I must go before a Justice; and to add to my punishment, she made me carry the hestollen Beef openly. Coming before his Worship, y acculation was read, aggravated by many feigndeircumstances. The pirtiful and sad casts of my yes, were all the Rhetorick I used in my own vinication; which the merciful Justice perceiving, hey were so prevalent, as to gain some favour from im; whereupon he ask'd the woman what the alued her Beefat? Why, (faid she) I would not bave bated a penny of five (hillings. Take beed what you fay, nd woman, (faid he) for should you swear this, it enough to bang him. O Lord, Sir, (faid the) I would thang bim for a world; than said his Worship, You us prize it under thirteen pence half-penny; wherepon the Butchers Wife was content to value it at ght pence. The price being fer, the Beef was onvoyed into the Justices Kitchin , I fent to Prin, and the woman put to her Oath; having forn , my Mittimus was made, and therewith fent.

en

ette

ut

e fa

y. I

rped

e b

mity

er,

unt

mfe

ant

ng (

alc

64

fent to Prison. The woman now thought she should have her Beef furely, and without any danger the reception, and therefore demanded it ; but the Justice told her he would buy it of her, and in asked her what the would have for it: Sir, (fail (he) five billings : I cannot afford it one farthing me How, bow ! (faid he) did you not (wear but en now; it was worth but eight pence, and do you now tal of five flittings ? A mear Cheat, Extortioner, od Make her Mittimus, (speaking to his Clerk) which fo terrified the Woman, that the cried out mot pirreoully; good your Worship, do not send me to Prison, and do with me what you please. The Justice at this, looke stedfastly upon her (who was not fo old but that he could difcern a handsome we man when he faw-her) and indeed generally you Burchers hare jolly handsome Wives; otherwise they may be ashamed to serve seven years in hand ling and choosing good flesh for others, and at la know not how to make choice of a fine young blump juicie bit for themselves. I say, the Justice looking upon her, fmiled, yet feemed to reprove her tharply and at last pretended he had fomthing to tell her he would not have every one hear, can ried her into a withdrawing Room, where the staid not long but out the came and declared open ly that the would never defire more justice done her, than that good and just Justice (as the called And as I understood aker him) had shown her. wards, he did her fo much right, that the fent him in an half dozen of Bottles of Canary, and for with him on her own fielh ; I in the mean time withed them both choaked in the eating thereof for never did Roman Catholick endure greater mi feverer pennance for eating flesh on Good-fridal

d fo

talk chich ment The was wo-

late late thice rove hing carthe

pendens alled frerhim fupr eins eof

en I for coveting this; I have lov'd a Capon the etter for it ever fince, For I was no sooner gotten ut into the street, but I had a hundred people about e, crying which is the young Rogue; this, this is efaid the Butcher, pretending to lay his hand upon y shoulder; but gave me a terrible nip by the ear. hich made me roar out so loud and so suddenly unpected, that my Gentleman Usher that was leading e by the arm to the White Lyon, starting, let go his There was no dallying with fo fair an oppornity, fear and love of sweet liberty so wing'd my et, that running instantly hereupon, I was gotten refently a great way before them. The Harmanbeck. untiman or Constable seeing this, unable to run mself by reason of that great load of flesh he conantly carried about him, fet a pack of young yelng Curs to track the scent, but they were soon all a lofs: and fo I escapt their clutches.

an vhi

ut he

o k

Give his rich

urel ittif

bunt

or 1

to

athe

ow aid (

1, 10

bund ar wa

me g

ou sh

into

y rea

y por

) (c

ad to

ndnes y har ort k



CHAP. VII.

whilst a Beggar what cunning tricks he invented to steal undiscovered, and how at last so ved, being caught ipso facto.

THe next day I went into Lincolns-Inn-field where I faw a company of Rogues, chean Pick-pockets, &c. playing at Pidgeon holes (agts much practifed there, and in More-fields, by mischievious and lazie Rascals) growing very his gry, I fingled out two or three of the fittest form purpose in affishing or contriving Roguery; all tle riling grass-plat was our countil-table, where consulted what stratagems would best rake a were least known. Come Gentlemen faid I (the Liberal Science or antient profession they is died was enough to gentelize them) what mon have yee, fine Cerere & Baccho friget ingenium, must have good liquor that shall warm our blood enliven and unthaw our congealed spirits and ma our inventions and fancies as nimble as lighting Faith said one, I have but three pence; yet you may fee how well quallified I am for yourcompany, I'le have money for you presently. Her not gone much above an half hour but merrily

ame to us; fitting down he defired me to put my and down his neck between his wascoat and shire, thich accordingly I did, but admired to group ut there rashers of Bacon, which I produced to he Company. Very importunate I was with him, o know what it meant, and how they came there. Give me attention (faid he) and I will unravel his riddle thus. Walking along the streets leifurely, riclly eying any thing on which I might seize feurely and advantageously: at length I saw a good iniful old Woman (for fo the feem'd to me by her ountenance) felling Bacon, who I observed did it what money she took into a pocker made in her pron. Upon this fight Fancy me thought fuggestto me that her money was already as surely mine if I had already confin'd it close Prisoner in my athern dungeon. And thus I wrought my design. ow do you sell your Bacon a pound? Seven pence aid the,) whereupon I began a lamentable oraribund but that I had but three pence: that my Matwas a very cruel man, half starving his fervants; (he me give me your money firrah, she said, for once into slices and thrust it down my back; She asked y reason for it, I told her that my Master usually richt me, and should he find any such thing in pockets, he would half murther me. Alas poor of (quoth the good old Woman) lean down thy ad towards me, furely I will do thee that small idness: whilst the was larding my back, I got den y hands underneath her Apron, and with this city of knife nipt of the bottom of her pocker, and

gan gan fud hu

or m

re w

y fir nons

n, 1

1000 ma

ning et th

r con

thus have I done my part to procure yee both food an money. As I lookt on this as base ingratitude, so I coul not but tacitely within my self, both condemn and a horr such society, remembring the words of Juvens

Ingratos ante omnia pone sodales.

Of all persons we should shun most the ingrateful Neither could I forbear (though I was joyful of the purchase) to read him a publick lecture on his ingra titude; what (faid I) shall we find gratitude in Beal (as in the Lyon that was healed by Andronicus inth wood, which afterwards faved his life in the Theater and yet shall we be unthankful! I have read a flor of an Asp that was kept and nourished by an Hu bandman at his own table, feeding him there dayly at last the brought forth two young ones, one when of poisoned the Husbandmans son, the old one (asm Author tells me) in the fight of the Father killedt offender and as if ashamed of his ingratitude depart the house with the other and was not feen after. would have proceeded, but that they told me if I d they would have no men of morals in their con pany, and so away, we went to Beggars Hall, ha by, where we call'd luftily. Fearing we should see all the money, I defired the company that fome for portion might be left in my hands as a flock to ma on, which they consented to.

ed, the next days meeting was appointed, when a where. Against the time I had made a quantity Serpents, Crackers, &c. and brought them with when first I show'd them, they all fell out a law ing to think I could improve our stock by such

VIQ

food an so I could not and ab
Tuvena

grateful ul of the is ingue in Bealt theater d a flor an Lius dayly when

e (as m illed th departs after. if I di ir con ha ld spen he sma to tra

departmental
ntity
ith m
lauguach o

e in your ce in the ce in

s. Have but the patience to hear me (faid 1) then condemn' me if you fee cause . Ever since arted from you I have been racking my invenn to find out fome way whereby I might render felf both deserving of, and acceptable to or company, and I think this my first discovery I do it; I would have you Fack, Tom and Will, e an equal quantity of Crackers and Serpents, and on at night let us go into the Market, where each you shall observe each of us: where ever we make and be fure you throw a Serpent, &c. at that very ce; and then will we take the oportunity of the ples confusion and fright, and so march off with at we can lay hands on. This plot was very well d of by all. The evening approaching (it being r November) we went to put what I had contrived execution. The first that was thrown was where I od, which fell into the Basket on which a Market oman fate, the Woman starting up to extinguish it, denly it bounced in her face, the smoak whereof powder, for a little time so blinded her, that the ld not see me walk off with a shoulder of Mutton, comrades had the like fuccess with a Pig and a ofe. Having done enough as we thought for that e, we went to a place of our acquaintance, where had the Mutton, Pig, and Goose roasted, giving Landlord the Pig for dreffing, bread, and drink. were fo successful for the first, that we made se-I tryals afterwards not ineffectual. But in fine, I nd the Proverb verified. The pitcher goes not so n to the well, but that it comes home crackt at last. time I went, and having ordered them to doas had done before, a Serpent came flying on the mans stall where I stood and fell into her lap, which

which being brusht off, fell underneath her com and there burst, in the mean while I had gotton loyn of Veal and was trooping off with it, the Wa man missing it suspected me by my great haste, fol lowed me and laying hands on me found her mer under my coar. O have I caught you Mr. Theif. W stake not good Woman (faid I) it is no such mann For as I stood by your stall, the wildfire which so unhappy Knaves threw, fo scared me, that have your meat in my hand at that time cheapning it was fo frighted that I ran away with your Veals thun the danger, forgetting to lay it down, whetel pray take it again. Taking her meat, here is and excuse indeed (said she) but this shall not serveye turn, and with that, gave me two or three fuch blo on my chops, that I verily thought the had made swallow half my teeth. Another that had hearden discourse takes me to task after this : Come sim you love the fleth well, but 'tis fit you should for it. And it is but just if you will have my flet. should have some of yours. Up straight he snatcht Knife, and holding me by the ear I verily though would have marke me as he used to do his calves. crying and praying fo far prevailed, that he only me to his next Neighbour and fo from one to anoth fo that though it cannot be faid I ran the Gantley between the Pannyers on bothfides, I was kicking Gantlet from the Standard in Cheapfide to the com at the lower end thereof, This unhappy advent made me betake my felf to my old course of begg refolving as yet not to deal in that trade I had experience in.

iffe

bing

afti

le a

ere

rell

ood

nder

ordi

e pr

lling

TVIC

weet

hake

in

for

Cozte

otten

, fol

r men

mane

h form

having

ig.it, l Veal to

etefon a pun

ve vo

blo

ade

ardo

Giral

ald m

Belli,

tchth

ught

es. M

nothe

let.

ckt



CHAP. VIII.

Merchant seeing him begging, took a fancy to him, conducts him to his House, and entertains him as his Servant.

Ne day as I was begging, more fervently then formerly, having gotten not one penny that av, so that I found a civil war between my Guts nd Stomack, yet knew not how to falve up the ifference; neither would they hearken to any bing but a Bill of Fare. In the midit of this comaftion, a Tradesman of no mean quality, passing v, took a strong fancy to me, being extraordingly pleased with the form of my face and body. e asked me. Whence I came? what my Parents tere? and what I intended? I answered him with rell contriv'd forgeries, that seemed to give him ood fatisfaction: liking well both my speech and nderstanding, he bid me follow him, which acordingly 1 did; having conducted me to his house, e presented me to his Wife, my intended Mistris, lling her his resolutions of receiving me into his rvice; at which she blest her seif, saying, Prithee, weet-heart, from what Dunghil didst thou pick up this hakerag, this Squire of the body? This thing drest pin sippits? This Scare-crow, what shall I call him? for I am sure I had but few cloaths on, but what tere rather fit to dung ground, then to be fent to F 4

the Paper-mill.) Sa d my Mafter, Reft your felf fa tisfied, fince it is my pleasure, this shall be so: neithe can I give you any reason for my fancy. Whereupon he commanded me to be ftript, and well washed; the mean time cloaths were provided for me, afin of one of his Apprentices. A great Vessel like Corne line his Tub, was filled with water to bath me, be fo cunningly fet by the Maids, (though privately) that they might see me all over naked. It was my good fortune to observe my Mistress standing in am. vate place on purpose to see me dismantled; and after I was washed, the commended the whiteness of m skin and well proportioned limbs; and by the confe quent, approv'd all within her felf, for I was then stubbed Lad. Being new clothed, and raised to the unexpected fortune, how ftrangely did in s vain bla puff up my empty pate! However, I was refolk to carry my felf discreetly, lest I should overthrow the state I was then in, not yet well setted. When fore I behaved my felf very respectfully convards Master, and served him as punctually as I could, the deavouring that my fervice should require his kind nels in as great measure as my abilities could po form.

My endeavour was not only to please my Maltr, but my Mistress too, even in the meanest services so officious to her, that I was ready to perform the office of a Chamber-maid. The maid-fervants look ged also, by doing their duty, as making the fire washing the Kitching, nimbly and willingly doing any thing they would have me; which fo ingratiant my felf among them, that I always had their god estimation among themselves, and good word tom it. So Master and Mistress when occasion served. Very can

mea out mate reap too unde

re u

a m quire and. fome chie:

be a aggr: Etual try r Cour

and ney. instea nev : but b

ihere

our c the li ing h but a by I

derive ried had G basene

by in

reful I was, not to report what I heard, left I by that means, involv'd my felf in the affairs of others, without advantage to my felf. For by meddling in others matters, I should breed animosity among them, and reap just hatred to my felt, when discovered to be the too too busie intelligencer. This I looked on as an undeniable maxime, That nothing more recommends a man, then a filent tongue, (unless necessity required the contrary) a fair complacential carriage; and a faithful heart. My Master in a humour would fometimes find fault with me, but then it was my chiefest care not to reply, knowing, that what should be alleadged as to my just vindication, would but aggravate his spirits being passionate, alwayes punawally performing what was commanded me. To try my fidelity, he would lay a fixpence on the Counter, or in the Window, as if it had been left there forgotten. I was wifer then to be caught fo and therefore would instantly carry him the money. One time fending me out to buy fomething, instead of a shilling he gave me among other money a piece of Gold; I took no notice of it then, but being gone a little way, I came running back our of breath to restore him the piece; this and the like made my Mafter stand amazed at my seeming honesty. A strange alteration you will say; but all this was only to get a good effeem, whereby I might gain fast footing. What though I underwent a great deal of pains, and had my patience ried to the height? Yet I gain'd much in the end, had God given me grace rightly to use it, and the baseness of my nature not perswaded me to abuse t. So much credit I had gotten with my Master, by my civil behaviour, that he raised me graduim,

na

百島

vol

日 号 号

·(Ir

ind

per.

(to

ces

th

ble

ires

ome

21th

step by step. Being ignorant of Arithmetick; he can fed a Master to come to his house to instruct me, which I soon apprehended, and by that means capacitated to keep his accompts, which was the thing I aim'd at, intending thereby the prosecution of mine own ends, notwithstanding my pretended sideling, and his real kindness to me undeserv'd: which purs me in mind of the conclusion of an Epitaph I have read on a Tomb, which the Master erected for the perpetual commemoration of his servants cordial respect and honesty.

View of this Tomb-stone, since we seldome find,

A servant faithful, and his Master kind.

Now to the intent I might compleat my conquell of his heart, I pretended my self an Independent, not omitting any opportunity of going to their meetings; and upon all occasions would rail against Steeple-houses (as we called them) and tear the Bishops holland sleaves to pieces, calling them the impure rags of the Babylonish Whores Smock, &c. I would pray mornings and evenings so loud, so late, and so early, that my neighbours could hardly sleep for me, much less those of our own Family: Notwithstandingal this piety, not a day past wherein I cheated not my Master. Thus did I delude his eyes with pretended sanctity, yet concluded with the Poet,

Da mihi fallere, da justum Sanctumque videri, Noctem peccatis & fraudibus objice nubem.

Let me seem just; to cheat the better shrow'd, Let my deceits be hidden in a Cloud.

HOW

ing

Be

is 1

ove

tra

pof

ton

last

whi

Gra

211-

ne,

pa-

ing

ine iry,

ours lave

the

re-

t of

ngs; nouland the norrly, nuch gall my

low

How much did I filly fool deceive my felf, thinking my felf secure, because no mortal eye saw me.
Be not thus cheated as I was, for affure your self there
is no darkness so thick and obscure, which the Allover-seeing and Eternal piercing eye cannot penetrate——

Cernit Deus omnia vindex.

A passage remarkable in Erasmus I read to his purpose concerning a young Gentleman, whom a wanton Lady tempted, who used this expression as his last and best Resuge. Art not thou ashaned to do that in the sight of thy Maker, and the Holy Angels, which thou art ashaned to do in the sight of men We are asraid of disgrace with men, not caring for the Grace of God.



CHAP VIII.

How he came acquainted with level and vicion Apprentices. What Trade they drowe together what places and times of meeting.

Was as officious at home, as referv'd from L company, never stirring forth unless call by my Masters business, till my next Neighbou man intruded him elf into my acquaintance. Who farr infinuated himfelf into my affections, that I w in a manner wholly ruled by him. He and I met on time abroad, and would not be deny'd but he mu needs fasten a glass of Wine, conducting me to a I vern where the Drawer (as he faid) was his frien After several Congratulations past, order was give for a pint of Canary: being gone to draw it, the young man began to tell me what an honest fello this Ralph the Drawer was; which words he had fooner utter'd, but I heard him cry at the Bar, Ali of White-wine in the Rose score; and immediately he brings it, and in formality a glass, but we made use of it for he was fearful his Master would discom the cheat, and therefore defired us to be speedy the dispatch, and so we made buttwo draughts thereo Away he goes again, and brings in another, not all the same manner, but crying it Right, bring

vicion gether

from a so call' ghbou Who l' at I we met on the mu to a It is friend as give it, the A Phi at ely inade not affice over a firm or a firm

thal a Quart-Bottle in his Codpiece : Now, Gentnan , (laid he) using your discretion , you may sit dtalk freely, without either fear or Suspicion, uling our glais and when your pint is empty hill him again in shall not want for liquor Ladds. This something nazed me at first, till my Neighbour Thomas cold me at this was frequent, and that he and two or three ends at any time could be drunk for fix pence a ece. Come, come you are but a Novice, faid he; but if will be ruled, by me, I'll show you the way to soften e cord of bondage, to make the long time of a fevenars Apprentice hip feem, fort, by living as merry, y, more jovially then our Masters. They may be dealted with cares how to procure necessaries, pay Rint d satisfie Creditors, whilf we have none of these profres and disturbances on our spirits. What though we we an harsh word ar a smart blow, it may be, a bruken ne? We will make his Till spring a leak for it, or his oods go to Pot, and break him at last too. It may be his: rovision is neither dainty nor plentiful, nay restrained. om our liberty too : 'tis only by day then, we will be Maers of our own at night, not wanting any thing that may uduce to mirth, or the detectation of our insattate fenfes. lask'd him how could this be done! He answer-, If I would swear to be secret and faithful, and beme a Brother of the society, he would not only tell how all this (afore recited) might be performed, st would likewise introduce me into the place where ese jolly Blades used to congregate. I soon consented, joycing exceedingly at this bleffed opportunity, is I thought it) wherein I might sail in the Ocean delight, bound for no other Port bur that of leafure or Profit, never confidering the inevitable wickfands which fuch meet withal, steering that course

rad

D

ld

en ,

e to

e W

mtr ch :

Ith

ies

ba

rfor

M

hac

the

our

ers I

n n

omn All

me d fo

ele p

wh

ever

m;

ing i

dit.

y de

wvi

ays.

ce,

em a

course, having no other Compass to fail by the their own Fancy. Very eager I was to have him form my judgment with what at present I under flood nor, but doubted not in a little time to be as for ward as the foremost in any moral wickedness. Find he informed me, that I must insinuate my selfin the Maids favour, fo that, when occasion should n quire, the may let you have the Key of the Street door, or else sit up for your return, making her sensit that the doth not to break her fleep for nothing. The I must never fail coming home to gratifie her kind nefs. If the be modest and continent, only kish and that my behaviour should not be either ruden lascivious, that all my expressions should savour Platonique, or chast love, often repeating this her : O that I was out of my time , if it were for no ing else but to repay thee thy love! So great an acknow ledgement I have of thy civilities, that I hope atim will come wherein I shall make full satisfaction all &c. If the be buckfome, or wantonly given, I will never be content with hopes, promises, and pro testations, vows, and such like windy stuff; when fore you must kis, hug, and embrace her, telling how dearly you love her; and then fall to form what elfe: She may put you off at first with a Pl a Fye, or Pray be civil; yet be fo far from denyi that if you proceed not on vigourously, she w prompt you her felf, to try what mettle your made of; if dull, the will make you the Subject her private nay and publick laughter and for But be very cautious of procreation, which p may prevent feveral wayes. Now to tell your manner of persons we are; that are confederate there are few among us but what are of feve Trad

First dre

ren film

The

kind

her, de u

urd

, de

here

оше

P

yi

10 20

CO P. 100

rades selected, as Linnen-Drapers, Mercers, Wool-Drapers , Silkmen, Hosiers, Haberdashers, Grocers, Idfmiths, fewellers, Ribband-Sellers, Exchangen; to which add a Drawer and an Oyl-man, the epare our pallates for it. A great many Trades there which lignifie nothing in our Commonwealth as wirers, Braziers, Plummers, &c. we are only for th as will profit the body, please the Pallate & the Pocker. Every one brings his several Commoies at the place of meeting, then do we exchange barter one with another for what each respective rion wants; either to supply his own occasion, or Mistres: for it is to be supposed such a thing must had; when procured, must be maintained, though the destruction of our Masters Estates, and ruine our bodily health. Further he added, that our Mais might not detect us in the purloining his goods, m must not (said he) take too much of one fort of ommodity.

All this I liked wonderfully well, and promised meet that day seven night at the place appointed; dso we parted. Coming home, I immediately pur eleprescriptions into practice; first; taking notice what Goods we had greatest quantity; and whatever Commodity my Master forgot he had, I always fured it as mine own: nay, sometimes I would try m; There was such a person enquiring for such a sing to day when you were abroad, but I could not dit: it may be he would say, We had itnot; suiting y designe according to desire. Having taken a thow view of the Shop and Ware house, I saw so many ays of advantage, if assisted by a cleanly conveyce, that I could snip as well as the most forward of email.

he

wei

int

1

le.

Torts

efor

gree

rive

eud

art

A

ny 2 nilet

offin

effe

T

ordi

tich

nd 1

ie, I

ifec

odi

d.

YN

mon

fee

Si

rock

elco

The next thing I had to do , was to endear my to the chief maid, who was one of those that lavo vertly to fee me wash my felt in the Tub : and ash confest since, took an affection to me from that her It required no long time to court her into a com ance; her Complexion or Temperament, form her acceptance of any thing amoroully inclined: I colour of her hair inclined to Red, which colo (though I know not for what reason) I love about any : This may be partly the reason, because as a Complexion hath alwayes the concomitant of a w white skin, fo it hath two inseperable Companio Plumpness and Bucksomness: Her skin as the usual tendant of Redor Flaxenish hair, as I said) was white as whireness it felf: Her Cheeks naturally pa ed with Vermilion; plump were her Cheeks and I with a mole thereon, and a dimple in her Chin. the infallible marks of one that is willing to dedin her felf to the service of Venus.

Having a fit opportunity, after some amondiscourse, I desired her she would grant me in that night to talk with her in private, ham business of importance to impart to her: St condescended to my proposition. As soon our Master and Mistress were gone to take herest, her impatience to hear what I would say, maker soon send the rest to bed. The house being the cleared, and all things silent as the Air, when Wininto their hollow grots repair, I acquainted with the greatness of my affection, which I delived with all the Rhetorick I could invent, still toning that string which produced Loves harmonic concord: So servent I was in my expressions, so ardent and hot in my desires, that I soon meles

he conjealed iceness of her Chastity: But first there were mutual Articles reciprocally drawn & agreed into, viz.

That if the proved with childe, I should marry ber.

That I should devote my felf to ber service, and wones
We.

That we should both endeavour to make he of all op-

onunities for the enjoyment of each other.

12VI

nc

Win ed I That to prevent discovery, we should often fall out sore people, that without suspition in private we might gree the better; throwing often-times bones at my bead then sitting at Dinner, because suspition should not denine her of the Grizzle. So great was our seeming and sometimes, that our master was called in to artius:

After this I gave her plenary instructions as to my affairs, which she faithfully and punctually proused to observe. Then did I put my hand to the assument, and sealed the Articles with two witesses.

The night was come wherein I was too meet acording to promife. I acquainted my Amoretta ith my intention of going out at twelve a clock; and that my Master might not in the least suspection, I went to bed, but arose again at the hour promised. The first time I would not carry any Composities with me, resolving to see first what they id. Being come to the house, I was introduced by y Neighbour Thomas into a private back-room, mong the associated Brethren. I was much amazed psee such variety of Wares by upon a long Table, Silks, Stuss, Cloth, Linnen and Woollen, tockings, Ribbands, Muss, Hoods, Stars, and the like. Some of them came to me, and elcomed me as a Brother, drinking to me

wh

in

aga

mo ed l

ima

end

BHE

lie f

lay 1

aller

vent

dent

ing

quie

lov

When

hil

ame

hat j

reyed

ny M

nade

reGi

ngth

bave

0,00

all ta

or da

wn (

ing

e lea

in a Beer-bowl of Sack and Sugar.

Most of the Company being met, they truth with each other according to their convenience furnishing themselves with what they either flood in need of themselves or their friends. Several things were offered me; I told them I had brought nothing to retalliate: They told me my Credit was good which is the Soul of Commerce; telling me the should have occasion to make ale of me in the like nature another time. I rook with me onely had things as might be proper to beflow at home, a whom I had lately engaged my affections; which presented her with, accompanied with manyer pressions and protestations of a never-dying affe aion. She accepted of my kindness with much go tisude, but though the could not fully remunent me without a re-admission into her private, and the particular favours, I could eafily difeern her inch nations by griping of my hand, killing as ith would devour me, the palpetation of her heart and her inflamed eyes. I ran parallel with her the same defires, so that with much facility were clapr up a bargain, After which . I would havel taken my felt to my rest in my own bed burthar !! displeasing to her. I perceived nothing wouldon tent her , but that we should be bed-fellows. In allented to it, though to the hazard of both our in dies and fortunes. I defired her to go up first, ling her I would follow instantly after. Byth time I thought the was in bed up marche I the fain which creacks as if they had conspired a discount Coming up to the highest stair, I raised my hi (being fearful of making any noise) thinking the had been another , it descended with such press a Brother .

岩海 钟6 芒8

ention, that I made the house eccho. The Chamber wherein my Mafter and Miffres lay (the maid lying in a Trundle-bed underneath them) was right against the Stair-head. My master had taken a dole more than ordinary of Sack, fo that this noise awaked him not : my mistress at the first hearing thereof. imagined Thieves had broken into the house; she endea voured to wake her Husband, by ftirring him, but could not, therefore thought it the best way to lieftill, expecting the event. In the mean time I lay per due, stirring not till I imagined my Mistress alleep again. The maid, concluding I durft not adventure further by reason of this unfortunate accident, fell immediately into a profound fleep. Finding (after a confiderable time) all things still and quiet, I entred the Chamber, dark as Hell, and in low voice, groaping the contrary way, I cried, Where art ? Here, bere, faid my Miftres, in a shifpering tone: minding from whence the found ame as near I could, I directed my foot-steps to hat place: The same words being repeated, conleyed me exactly to that side of the bed whereon by Mistress lay. Taking her about the neck, I kist era thousand times: not perceiving my mistake, I nade all the hafte I could (and all too little) to unres my self; which was done in an instant : Openngthe Cloths to come to bed Hold, faid my Mistress, have a Bed-fellow already; what I have suffered you to o, was onely as a tryal to understand what you intend-Get you gone to your own bed for this night, and I all talk with you farther to morrow. I durft not reply, or daring to flay longer, but betook my felf to my wn Chamber, possest with fear and shame, I noing but toft and tumbled all that night, taking not e least rest.

G 2

th

10

to

di

my

me

Po

niz

me

bea a go

ctio We

pere

on,

enou

acqu

perf

THOUSE

In the morning early I was up, shewing my fell more than ordinarily diligent. But Lord, what a contufion I was in, when I faw my Mistress come into the Shop? I made an hundred pretences to floor behind the Counter, and rectifie difordered Ward So bufie I was with my back towards her that fie could not have formuch as a fight of me. At length the comes up close to me, and turning me about faid, Indeed , you take too much pains , you are too labe rious ; fair and foftly ; there is a great while to nightye: defift a little, I must have a word with you. Hearing this, I prefumed to look in her face, and was over joyed; for from thence I received a most alluring fmile, in stead of a killing frown. This re-armed me with confidence, compelling from me thefe en preffions:

Must respectful Mistress, I do with shame confess of selfin a great errour: but if you will consider that the cause thereof was irresistable; I hope you will in some measure mitigate my crime. My very youthfulness spectry Apology. Tou cannot be ignorant of the fervent but of young blood, which sometimes boyls beyond its bound. Besides the temperature of my body, (being of a Sanguit complexion) did add much such to that fire.

She admired to hear me speak in such a Dialed; but laying aside her wonder, she bid me tell her to whole truth, and what Contract we had concluded I equivocated in my relation, intending to excust the maids forwardness, and that I onely designed a surprize her unawares. This Sophistry of minedle not in the least prevent my Mistresses prying with and quick understanding, from searching out the truth, tracing every meander, finding it out at last

though involved in a labyrinth of obscurities. She told me plainly she knew all, though I endeavoured to conceal it, and defired me, in stead of commands, to withdraw my affectionate thoughts from her, since her resolution was to divorce our persons. Adding moreover, that if I was so amorously inclined, as not content without a Female Object to exercise my passion on, I should elect such a one, whose merit grounded on Beauty, Birth, Wealth, and Power, should command my love, and finally exernize my terrestrial happiness; and so vanisht from me, leaving my cogitations to their operations.

Forty five years had not totally destroyed her beauty, but there was still remaining the ruines of a good face: Her Birth, though from a high extraction, had little influence over me, had not her Wealth (which she had at her own disposal) whispered in my ear more than a common selicity. Her last words lest a deep impression on my imagination, which were not so enigmatically delivered, but that I could easily interpret them advantagiously enough to my purpose. I resolved within my self to acquiesce, leaving this affair to time to bring it to

perfection.

10

ति ति व व



CHAP. XI.

What devices he found out to Cheat his Ma fter; and what ways be had to spendit lavifly, at unseasonable bours, on Wing Wenches, &c.

He time being come again, for the meeting my fnipping Brethren, I went prepared with what I could conveniently carry with me. Seeing me come well fraught, my merchants prefently claps me aboard, resolving not to let my commodiție le long on my hands, our truck was foon agreed on to our mutual contents. Then like true Sons of Bacchu, we trouted the full boles about, withing him the pledged not his fellow, in a dark rainy night on! tyred Jade bare ridged in a dirry lane, with a post Whore behind him, and his own bones rotten, nine Miles from an house, not knowing one flep of his way, nor having one penny in his pocket. This, the like dreadful execration; made us tumbled whole Boles like so many thimbles full. Half a doze of these a piece, were a preludium to our Suppe, which usually was composed of the choisest viand Neither could we eat, without our female Conform

WE

vel to too Ma OW

ble gre

fup

TION tion

whi

bare fan Inc

retu

telie

rich

payi

time

Fam

reful

that

there

tell n

med

with

togat

me, I

thers

corn

hous

treig

whom Wine and Musick waited on. After Supper, we fell again to our old Bacchanalian sport, drinking, dancing, or privately treating our Miftreffer ara venereal Banquer. When we had drank our felves to ebriety, and fatiated our luftful appetites, we betook our selves to our respective habitations, our Masters not dreaming of our night-Revellings. Our . own expences were neither valuable nor comparable to what our Mad-Dames put us to, which were fo great (though they made me rack my invention to supply their pretended necessities) that all my various endeavours could not answer their expectations. I had taken my Gentlewoman a chamber for which I payed three shillings a week, and upon the bare promise of a Whore, that the thould prove conflant to me, I allowed her a weekly pension besides; I never came to receive a private favour but I must return her for it, some special and particular courtelie; as a Scarfe, an Hood, a Ring, a Whisk, or rich Lace for her Smock. If I failed at any time of paying, I should be severely checked, nay, sometimes threatned; at the least denyed my accustomed Familiarity; then she would pretend that she had refused many eminent Matches meerly for my take, that now she saw her self meerly deluded, and therefore would endure it no longer; and would tell my Master all the proceedings. If I had performed the main, and not presented her when I came with some other gratuity, as a work of Supererogation, she would deride my Courtship, telling me, I was an empty fellow, that I bestowed my favours on thers, and that made me fo sparing to ber. And that the corned to be a copartner in my heart, When the hought the had sufficiently nettled me, (fearing to freign my passion too high) then a little compry clapping

計画 88 日記

10

n

ly ine

8.9

d.

clapping me on the cheeks, calling me, Smock-face Rogue; come hither Sirrah, I know what you would have, I'le fave your longing. Such sweetned work foon over-powered my foureness &: notwithfland ing my intended hardness, I could not forber melting in her arms. Nowfince opportunity offered itself so appositly, give me leave to lay open this Subtle Female, on whom a strong ascendency of Mercury and Venus, had bestowed so liberal a Talent for Whoring, and Cheating, that few escaped her circumvention that came into her company. The Relation I shall give of this miracle of Female fubrilty, will be much advantagious to all forts of persons. By this those that are viciously inclined may be advised into a Reformation, before the have occasion for Repentance: And they who de fying all Admonishment, and are resolved to he wicked in spire, may out of an apprehension ofthe enfuing danger and punishment, be deterred into caution, Or.

> Wit . rover She c moth brong deline

1 1 1 1 1

Gran plio

moft cy all

poffe

o w

extra he r A Venu.

Being beil name () and being bout bout verjou of the state (tig it oos to by you ugit verjou 2 mingula



A

Short survey of a cunning

WHORE.

200

W Hen first I made my self acquainted with her, I thought my happiness not inferiour to the Grand Seignors, for although be had in his Seraglio the injoyment of an hundred or more of the most select beauties of the Universe, yet did I faneyall those external glories contracted into one, and possessed my matchless Mistriss. As she was fair, lo well featured, sprightly and young, four dangerous advantages, when they are accompanied with Wit , Dissimulation , Craft and Impudence , with a roverous defire of injoying of what others possest. She could not be ignorant of her trade, fince her mother was a profest Bawd from the time she brought her into the world. Taking notice of her extraordinary handsomness even from the Cradle, he resolved to dedicate her to the service of Venus, not doubting but the bent of her nature would render her very capable of that employ. Being about thirteen years of age, her beauty was o much taken notice of, that her Lovers swarmed bout her. The old Bawd her mother was fooverjoyed to fee so large and goodly a Troop of Cu-

If .

hoid

loat

ppe

bre

ad I

ida

acin

pec

ble

is f

and

nent

and

ence

as v

ofe

nima

t (li)

d w

uch

ew

at a

on.

tenc

the

r,b

er.

211

er.)

e n

ade

ned

Cupids Lanciers, her daughters life-guard, and doubted not now but that the should obtain the planary fruition of her hopes, and therefore enterained them all, yet watching them so narrowly, he none should taste her fruit unless they bought detree at a dear rate. She so well observed her daughters natural polity, that she was well assured her finuations would in a little time command both the hearts and purses of those who courted her. He design proved as fortunate as she could wish, in much as among the many that languished for he, there was one so wealthy, as that he never knew the want of a thousand pound, whose heart was in

flamed by her eyes.

She had now affumed the title of Madam, which one should think belonged to none but who arem bly extracted, however, why should she baulking fince it is an honour costs little or nothing, and foon conferred as spoken. This Gentleman was infinared by the withcrafts of alovely face, de though he knew the profession and practice of the Mother, and the daughters want of honour, he nefty and wealth, yet he refolved upon a marrie within few days without the rediousness of Tre-When there was a firm contract conclude between them before witnesses, the charitable his intended mother in law, came to him, & told him if his fromack was raw & could not flay so long to the meat was ferved up with the usual ceremonia, he should have a bit for a stay, and taste before hand the propolition was not unwelcome to him, where fore he instantly took earnest of the happiness wainly believed would bear him company durant vita. Not long after they had their impun celebrated, and that he might not disparage him

the the Her in as her, the use her in as her

Service Services

で、 は は 本 音

If in the worlds eye, as to his inconfiderable hoice; he bought his wife at his proper charge, new loaths, iplendid enough you may guels, with the ppendixes of gallantry, rings, jewels, &c. and brought her home to his house in much stare. She ad not long lived with him , but the followed the ictates of a luxurious disposition, and a libertine, tring to have her liberty circumscribed or bounded fecially by one so remote to her nature and unfuible in years, wherefore under pretence of vifiting is friend, & that couzen, the fo blinded her old husand by this plaufible excuse, as that shemade her freuent fallies abroad pimp for her defires. Her husand observing her often gaddings and profuse exences, could do no less than suspect more than he as willing to understand, and therefore not onely bidged the liberty she took, but devested her of ofe ornaments he had bestowed upon her, which so simated her to revenge, that the refolved not to ellip the first opportunity. She soon got acquaind with one fuitable to her purpose, a person as uch ingaged in debauchery, as his credit was in eworld, yet so pleasant he appeared in her eyes, as at a little courting made her wholly at his devoon. Hence we may observe the dangerous conseuences of disproportion of age in matching. Surethere can be no agreement between fire and war, between freezing winter and Scorching Sumer. Befides, when a woman comes once to have ean thoughts of her husband (upon any account what er.) She is then in the way to affect any body else. he now not onely flighted, but hated him, which ade her lanch out into all the exceffes that exaspered, & vicious woman-kind can imagine or conon or advantage, neither could the want affiliant or councel, as long as the old experienced has

her mother lived.

This good old Dotard finding himself so abuse that the whole world must needs call his reason question; if he suffered any longer his loose wit to Career thus in Luxury and Wantonness, relaved within himself to call her to a severe accompanient of the within himself to reduce her by kindness, as we as sharpness, and so equally to temper his from with smiles, that she should not tell which of the two ingredients were most powerful in the effecting the cure of his lust-sick wanton.

Returning one evening from her revels about the old Cuckold took her to task; sharply reporting her for her Gaddings, her Tavern meeting with debauched and licentious persons; her land expence in paying the Reckonings where even came, but especially her supplying the necession of suffy younger Brothers, which resupplyed her The old man had so spent his spirits and breath, is schooling his Lecherous Truant, that he was fore to conclude his wormwood Lecture in an excession cough; the inseparable Companion of him and Age. My bucksome Madam searing he was stressing for more of that unpleasing stuff, which had lately offended her ears, lest him half strangled with a Tysick.

In this Interval, a female Neighbour of the came in, a Gentlewoman of that worth, that Virus and Gentility contended in her for priority: How is I pray Sir (faid she) I am much troubled to possion this condition? You lie, you lie, you Whom (faid be) his ears being so furd by Time, that

ould

ould

is W

ng fo

ves;

nuin

eve

trun

hat

hen c

ofpe

ne re

o hea

ioule

o him

ain

efiled

endr

bey n

le for

hfam

nake

ower

Vhy .

ous a

rood

2y, 1

By

b be !

onve

of to

nade ad p

Ap

ould not diffinguish this Gentlewomans voice from is Wifes; neither could he fee, his violent coughng forced down such a corrent of moisture into his res; that his fight was totally drowned : Connuing his railing; See me in this condition? I beeve you would be glad to fee me out ofit, you trumpet, Lump of Lechery, Chear, she Devil, hat shall I call thee? there is no name too bad: And hen cought again so violently, that it was in vain ofpeak to him; but when this violent fit abated. he resolved to say something though her amazment ohear what the neither deferved, nor expected, fould hardly give her permission. At last the spake phim, and reasoned with him, why he should thus ain her honour which was hitherto spotless, unefiled; that her actions had ever been fo far from endring her, what he unworthily represented that hey made her famous, and lookt on as a good examle for her Neighbours to follow and immitate. I. I: famous you mean (said he) and let me alone to take you fuch an example, that you shall have folowers enough to fee you Carted, you Bitch whore. Why, who am I said the Gentlewoman, that you ous abuse me? Am I, (said he) you are Touchfood, Tinder, Salt-peter, Gimpowder, Wildfire, ay, worse then all this, my Wife.

By this the Gentlewoman verily concluded him be mad, and fearing lest his frenzie might be onverted into sury, was thinking to slip from him off as his cough lest him, and his eyes again restoed to him, with the insight of his mistake; which hade him much condemn his fallacious age, that

ad put this trick on him.

家 多字字 医乳 B = 分 B 字 字 B 5

10 = 1

Apologies (as many as this old mans sterile in-

ton

his

ng

her

v fu

im

ence

he n

hort

nifta

ueft

pini

ans

luor

nd t

e in

er tr ing rith

ith:

gree

chav

rest

hing

is h

He

he S

ufin

her :

offe

he c

ppo

awi

vention could frame) were not wanting to end this obfurdicy and errour : Neither was his W without the height of mirth behind the Hanging to hear how much her dotting fool was militaken who had not patience any longer to discourse li Visitant, but obruptly left her in quest of his about fed Wife as he now supposed; imagining from the grand miffake, that what ever before he had eith jeen or heard of his wife, was nothing but thegh nuine product of his own idle and jealous bran After he had made a friet enquiry through the whole house for his wife, he at length foundle out cloiftered in a Garret, into which the haden veyed her felf, coming foftly behind the Hanging wherein the had hid her felf; and the better too lour her intended Villany, hearing her Husban ascend the Stairs; the put her self into a praving posture.

The old man feeing her on her knees, had in ro have broke his neck for hafte, not minding much the diffurbance he should give her (pretent ed) devotion, as the fatisfaction he injoyed to in his mistake confirmed. Being out of breath, discourse was abrupt and broken, neither did know which was most expedient, either first to que fion her, or crave her pardon: at length hethres himfelf at her feet (for indeed he could hardly fland upon his feeble Legs,) and hanging down his Ha (I knew not whether he cried) a falt Rhume gulle through the port-holes of his Head, which looks like scalding Teares; so and so they might be, in by rheir burning heat, any might conclude the of the hair of his Eyelids, and that thereby the line veled skin of his Countenance was parche. It will a long

ken, bir abir this ithis

Service of the servic

res and

He co a h

WAS

ong

long rime ere he could speak, and no wonder, fince his was the fecond time of his Infancy; but ar ngth with much ado, with a look as pittiful as his hetorick, he asked forgiveness. She feemed ftrangefurprized, and not onely wondred at , but rake im for the Irrationality of his Petition. ence of her ignorance in what had past, made him he more eager to discover his ridiculous folly. In hort, he gave her to understand, that fince he was histaken in a thing so palpable, he might very well uestion whether all former reports, and his own evil pinion ofher, might not be polited on the fame ass of falshood. That for the time to come he hould never admit of jealousie within his breast, nd to give a full confirmation to what he protefted; e instantly delivered her his Keys, committing to er crust what he had of greatest value. This cuning Onean would not accept this kind proffer, but ith much preffing, and then fealing his pardon tha kill, an everlafting affection was feemingly greed upon. For two or three months after the rgus his hundred eyes, he could not perceive any hing that might blemish her Reputation or trouble is head.

Her Cire being come to enter and act her part on he Stage of deceit; the appeared and managed her ufines to the purpose. For having given her Moner a Catalogue of those rich things she had in her offession; the never less her daughter till they ad conveyed all away which might be carried in he day time without any notice taken; and at an appointed night getting the Servants to bed; and elivering the Key of the street-door to the old awd her Mother, she played the part of a woman

in general, by lulling her Husband in bed by diffinal lation and flattery, into a fond opinion of her condiality to him, whilft her agent then were leaving him as naked of goods, as he was at that time of Apparel. In the morning the arofe by times, before the old man was flirring, and went instantly to her mother who had provided her lodgings. Then did the change her name to hinder detection, and that he might add to her fecurity; the never went abroad but with her Vizard Mask, and in as many varieties of Suits as there are months in the year, which though but thirteen, yet did the make them sing a

many changes as BOW BELLS.

Not long after the had played this exploit, it was my unhappiness to be acquainted with her; by the ming accidentally to our Shop , where buying for wares, it was so ordered that I must bring them to her Chamber. According to the time appointed waited on her, but found my felf extreamly mills ken in my Chapwoman. For inflead of paying in for my commodity, the would have trucks with Ware for Ware; which I would no ways affent to finding meno he person for her purpose, she dilm me by discharging the debt. This passage did for in my mind, that I could not be at quier nill! purposed a time to visit her and indeed I was some ably prickti on thereunto by those matchless tures, I faw in her incomparable face. My Male riding out of Town I found a very fit opportuni to make my address to her, which I thought wo be the more wellcome by bringing a present w me.

Her memorie was so good that she knew mea gain, and shrewdly guessed at my Errant, and indea was not long in the discovery thereof: There we ne ; fed Mir ven end

e e fin

y fr

end wid

ne n valur

l rea allift civin

te his

w I n rards al of larbe

mith ms

have on th oney eir fid

the S much

two words to a bargain, and fo ftruck up the finels : So much delight I took in her ar chac ne, and the in me , that we interchangably pro-

fed each others constancy of affection.

Mine and my females extravagancies, made me rent as many ways to chear, as we had ways to and what was this way gotten. If I had heard friend fay, they must buy a Gown, I had my cerready for that purpole, If a Suit and Cloak. Draper, and the like : fometimes telling my end. That I was acquainted with one that ald fell me a far cheaper pennyworth than any telle; other times, rhat fuch an one owed me ne moneys, and that this way I could both afure my friend, and hedg in mine own debt. migh I drove a great trade this way, receiving lready cash, yet this would not do alone. As affiftance, I guelded the money-box every day. tiving my part first, before my Master should this, which usually he did every night, putgit into his Till. I could not fleep for thinking I might be incimately acquainted with the and of this same Till. Several projects I made alos, but none suiced my purpose so well, as arbers pair of Curling irons. I got a File from mith, and to work I went with my Curling m, filing them to flip in eafily, and to turn ind. The first Effay I made thereof , had like have put me into an Extasse for joy. I laid them on their edge, opened them wide, I pincht the mey below; holding fast, I turned them on ir fide, and fo drew up the money to the mouth the Scotch : now because there was many times much, that it would not come thorow, with a knife

knife I would flide away piece after piece, till had fitted the money to the narrownels of paffage. I feldom brought up at a time les the three fhillings, a good draught, not ceafing if I had gotten twenty or thirty fhillings at a time or more, according to the quantity of the flock Finding my Engine act according to my defire I could not be content without congratulating of fuccels. My Mafter was feldom at home, when fore I askt my Mittrefs to go out for an hour, or mifing her not to flay beyond my limited times consented, and I overjoyed, pickt up a Ramb or two, and away we went to honeft Ralph. Bei glad to fee us, he planted us in a convenient m There was never a Pint fit for his purpole. scored at the Bar, but he had a Quart-Bottle his Breeches for it. They all wondred to fee fo frollick, but I thought it wisdom to cond the depth of my practice from them.

nid

e h

or

ir,

yo

is b

uic

eat

gre

ot

oat

f G

oth

ard

ver.

utfi

e i

loa

rain

and uts of efor As

After we had drank very smartly, I came hon transgressing but a little beyond my time. My stress was very well pleased, telling me, I han have leave another time, since I was so punsus Those Bottles of Seck we drank, ran perpension my minde; for it was the very slower of Win In the commemoration of my Friends country and the goodness of that Liquor, I gave my contemplative sancy leave to characterize a Bottle

Canary, thus.

till

of cha

time,

ng m

w hen

, PD

mble

Bei

TOO

int b

cele

ce I

once

hou

Ay 1

h

ne:S

THE CHARACTER OF

A Bottle of Canary.

TE is Gentleman I affure you well extracted . I which once lived like a Salamander in the hidft of the flames; and had he not been burnt, chad never proved found. He feems a Prodigy: or that which we live by, decays him; hating ir, as Bacchus hates small Beer. He will lie fill you smother him, and is never so well, as when is breath is stopt. Bury him , and you make him As for his habit, it is ever plain, yet eat: Though Nobly born, he scorns not to wear green Coat, with a badge on it; and you canor injure him worse than to pick a hole in his oat. Though he wears for the most part one fort Carb, yet he is never out of fashion, acceptable othe best of company, not regarding his outand drefs, but valuing his inward worth : Howver, his Suit is made of admirable Stuff, for his utfide never grows barer, and his Linings are le fresher for wearing. So choice he is in his loathing, that he rather chuseth to have his rains knockt out, than to have a rent in his farment. He wears an a la mode Hat, as light and almost as little) as a Shittle-cock, which he uts off to none; but like the Quaker when brought efore a Magistrate, hath it taken off for him,

As for his Pedegree, I know not how to derive i for he hath had in him the best and purest of

the French blood, but will now acknowledge Race onely from the Spaniard, whom he imitted being stately, and standing always upright; tree for the most part on Carpers, and never fine broad but when he is carried, yet full of activity If he runs fast and long, the more winde heges If he chance to fall, which is feldome, for min look to him, he will be excreamly moved, to (contrary to all men) the fuller his belly is, t less hurt he receives : his credit is large, new paying for what he wears, running on the for perpetually; his conditions are a riddle, then in him pure vertue, and notorious vice; the qui teffence of love, and the venome of hatred, He the beginning and the end of a thousand quant in a year, yet a very Coward; for he lufferin to take him by the ear, and never broke anyon pare, but when company was by. He is very ho tious in fociety, and will fpend himfelf freely the last drop, if a Ladies fost and warm hands raife him. He is a brisk Spark, and theme Courtiers adore him; he is smooth in his expre fion, and therefore Ladies delight in him; hi filled with nimble fancies, therefore the Wittin quent him, exhausting his radical moisture, diffil it into Poetical Raptures; for conceits net run faster from the Limbick of their brains, the when this Gentleman adds fuel to the Furno He whets wit, yet duls it; creates new Francis and stupifies. Gives the Orator a fluent tongue, makes him speechless. Gives a Poet feet till cannot go. And as he helps Ministers to prest fo he likewise filenceth more than the Spanill quilition. He hath a great many tricks in his

in

d

Gi.

ea

de

il,

DS :

t

rin

qt

IC !

t

nd

On

N

10

b

av

ng

will make a Faulkner flie high within doors: ikes a Huntiman catch a Fox by the fire-fide. hacever he holds, is made good; and unless you ind him well, much good matter that falls from m, may be loft : for he is often fluent beyond easure. All Tongues court him; and those that ok narrowly unto him, shall find him no dry llow. The truth is, he is too profound for shalw brains to meddle with him : He will pour out aint expressions and hard words fo thick, that e best Scholars are glad at last to give him fomeing to ftop his mouth : Yet hold him up fairly, d you may get all he hath out of him. He is exfively beloved, and relishes all Company, being easant, and full of admirable humours. He is inardly acquainted with the Lord Mayor and dermen, and incorporateth with their Wives ily. His Kiffes are fo sweet, that they lick their safter him; and though his breath be ftrong, tit is not offenfive. He is a true Good-Fellow, inking till he hath no eyes to fee with : Good quor is his Life and Soul, and he is never multy it for want of it. He will drink till he befilled up the very throat, and gape whilft others put it He will bear as much Sack as any man in Engnd of his bulk; yet he will be foon drunk in ompany. But if you will give him leave to vomit, ewill take his Liquor and drink fresh, till all e Company be forced to leave him. Drinking his hourly exercise, seldome lying out of a avern. He is the main Upholder of Club-meengs, without fear of being broke. He picks mens ockets, yet is never ma de more reckoning of than y fuch persons. As for his Estare, I can onely say chis, H 3

dge la nicate, s tread ftirs :

Ctivity. he gen

is, the

there

d. He quand fers on

ery factories

and which herefore expressions and which we have a second second

m ; hei Witsin

ture, i ics net ns, th

Furned

et till

preach anillh

wil

akes

hat

m,

eafu ok f

dlo

wb

uain

he be

ing

nd y

effive

leaf

ard

Ides

aily

ps a

et i

rin

liqu

out f

oth

n. I

lend

Con

he w

the

is b

Tav

ting

poc

by (

the French blood, but will now acknowledge W Race onely from the Spaniard, whom he imitted being flately, and flanding always upright; trai for the most part on Carpers, and never fine broad but when he is carried, yet full of activity If he runs fast and long, the more winde he ren If he chance to fall, which is feldome, for min look to him, he will be excreamly moved, re (contrary to all men) the fuller his belly is, the less hugt he receives: his credit is large, new paying for what he wears, running on the fcom perperually; his conditions are a riddle, there in him pure vertue, and notorious vice; the quie teffence of love, and the venome of hatred, He the beginning and the end of a thousand quant in a year, yet a very Coward; for he fuffers and to take him by the ear, and never broke anyone pare, but when company was by. He is very han tious in fociety, and will spend himself freely the last drop, if a Ladies fost and warm hand il raife him. He is a briek Spark, and therefor Courtiers adore him; he is smooth in his exprefion, and therefore Ladies delight in him; bei filled with nimble fancies, therefore the Witshe quent him, exhausting his radical moisture, w diftil it into Poetical Raptures; for conceits nett run faster from the Limbick of their brains, that when this Gentleman adds fuel to the Furnica He whets wit, yet duls it; creates new Francis, and stupifies. Gives the Orator a fluent tongue, and makes him fpeechlefs. Gives a Poet feet till h cannot go. And as he helps Ministers to preach, fo he likewise filenceth more than the Spanifilm He hath a great many tricks in him quisition.

irs

ivity.

geis

many

ya

neva

Com

ere

quin-He s

rick

ones facely to will

prefbe is

fre-, to ever

hat

ics,

and

1 he

ch,

In-

100

will make a Faulkner flie high within doors: akes a Hunciman catch a Fox by the fire-fide. harever he holds, is made good; and unless you ind him well, much good matter that falls from m, may be loft : for he is often fluent beyond easure. All Tongues court him; and those that ok narrowly unto him, shall find him no dry dlow. The truth is, he is too profound for shalw brains to meddle with him : He will pour out mint expressions and hard words fo thick, that he best Scholars are glad at last to give him someing to stop his mouth: Yet hold him up fairly, nd you may get all he hath out of him. He is exeffively beloved, and relishes all Company, being leafant, and full of admirable humours. He is inardly acquainted with the Lord Mayor and ldermen, and incorporateth with their Wives aily. His Kiffes are fo sweet, that they lick their ps after him; and though his breath be ftrong, et it is not offenfive. He is a true Good-Fellow, rinking cill he hath no eyes to fee with: Good liquor is his Life and Soul, and he is never musty ut for want of it. He will drink till he befilled up othe very throat, and gape whilft others put it a. He will bear as much Sack as any man in Engand of his bulk; yet he will be soon drunk in Company. But if you will give him leave to vomit, he will take his Liquor and drink fresh, till all the Company be forced to leave him. is his hourly exercise, seldome lying out of a Tavern. He is the main Upholder of Club-meetings, without fear of being broke. He picks mens pockets, yet is never made more reckoning of than by fuch persons. As for his Estare, I can onely say this, That all he hath he carries about him; penerally he is reputed rich: What he hath, holds upon courtefie; but what he gives other, held in Capite. What he possesses, is commonly upon Sale; yet more for plenty, than for want and if you can purchase him, you purchase all.

I could never indure Idleness, I was ever action; either writing, or contriving, or putting in execution my contrivances; I thought it bene male agere quam nibil agere : my brains or hand were continually working, and very feldomb effectually. My pen was generally to happy ind coveries, that my wit was much applauded byth most censorious: much respected I was, & my con pany much importuned by the Tankerd bear of Helicon, by which means I fo (welled with prid that I thought my felf little inferior to Apolla called Mercury Pimp, the nine Sifters Whom whom I had frequently layn with, and might what I pleased: the best title I could bestow on Pegel was Hackny-Jade. In the height of this my on nionativenels, my Cooler (our Masters maid)an to me where I was alone; and after many han fetcht fighs, told me fhe found her felf wit childe; which news had like to have deprived of my understanding: but knowing that Vexus never remedies but rather adds to trouble, In resolved to bear it patiently, and fludy some men to preferve her and my Credit. I framed a Lena as from her Father, defiring her to come downing to the Country speedily, if the intended tole him alive; and according as we had laid the Play the thews it her Miftrels, defiring her leave to he her duty to her dying Father. Our Mittress mi Willing

pall pred Sea

illi

pere

he 1

ith

nd l

OW

Aid w

Afcer

nd

o co

ario

he o

Obje

thou Calf

neys

on fb

l we

and

Nex

infif

tine

felf

S

F

min me

me

5 N

18,

only

Vant

ill.

ver in

ttin

etter

and

n bu

n di

y the

COD-

210

orida

0.

מוכ

wha

gol

cam

ean

d de

east

n in

Plos

Chew

mod ngl illingly consented thereunto, as knowing that ere was more than ordinary love between us; he maid had flaid as long as possibly she might ithout discovery, Lacing her felf very streight, nd keeping down her belly with three Busks: but ow the made hafte to rub off : I had provided a lidwife that should be her Bawd too: but this ould not be done without extraordinary coft. fter her Delivery , I found the keeping of her nd the Child very expensive: then did I begin o confider what a vaft charge, and how many arious croubles this momentary lecherous pleaure draws upon a man : how furioully he is upon he onset, and how quickly satisfied, loathing that Object he a little before longed for. Well, I behought my felf how to be rid both of Cow and Calf. I told her I would get together what moneys I could, and so marry her, upon condition the would be willing to travel with me whither I went, which I knew was her onely defire: I informed her of my intention to go for Virginia; and the reasons that induced me thereunto.

First, her disgrace would not be known there: Next, my Master could have no power over me; insisting further on the pleasantness of that Continent, and the plenty of every thing, &c.

She affented to all I propounded, relying her felf folely on me, to dispose of her as I pleased. To palliate my design, I went with her to Gravesend, precending as if I was then going with her beyond Sea, for no other end but to clear my self from her there, knowing that after she had past examination or search of the Block-house, she would meet with no more. Being aboard, I suddenly

H 4 feemed

feemed to have forgot fomething ashore; having well laid my Plot upon the Bafis of a good Sun of money I had diffributed among the Sea-men. with a confiderable present to the Mafter, and telling my Landabris I would return to her inflanly, I got into the Boat; and immediately after the Ship weighed Anchor, and quickly was under Sail. I confess, notwithstanding the Devil hada that time the total possession of me; yet I was much troubled at what I had done so hard-hearteding and cruelly. A flood of tears had so overwhelmed my fight, that I could not discern the Ship if which the was: fo fenfible I was of the wickedness of this Fact, that Dido-like, I could have throm my felf into the Sea after her, had not a good Woman, whose Husband was in the same Ship, prevented me. Observing my tears, Tis probable, Young Man , (faid the) you have lately taken un leave of some dearly beloved Friend; and I guess, h your earnest looking after youd Ship under fail, the person was in ber. I told her it was truth. My His band is in the same Veffel, (said the) and therefore! bave as much cause to grieve as you. Come, be of god comfort, Man, Friends muft part; and it is bettert part bere than at the Gallows. Go along with me, all we will wash down forrow; and with a Glass of men Canary, antidote our bearts against any thing that may disturb them.

With that I lookt intentively in her face, and found it correspondent with a jolly temper. An Eye black and piercing; and Eye-brows black allo, and each as big as a mans thumb comparatively: a figne that never fayls to denote that Womin capable of giving a man the greatest delection.

She

fuit

in L

kin

ble

lead

Wit

war

of h

ful .

to fe

bece

CON

by t

cluc

app

whi

Isi

to C

nie I fo

thir

fear

no.

Del

not

crit you

the

peti tun

goo

2 11

nex

len.

284

aut-

fter

nder

id at

ouch

edly

med

Pi

nes

OWI

2000

hip,

able,

your

, 4

the Fur-

ore I

pood

er to

and

neat that

and

160,

T:

nen

jon.

She

She was every way compleatly handsome, and mitable to the defires of the most curious Critick Love-affaires. I thought it a fhame to deny fo kind a proffer, and a crime in Youth unpardonable not to imbrace that opportunity, that shall lead him by the hand into Venus her Bed-chamber. With that I addrest my felf to her, (and after- : wards undreft together) declaring that the force of her Rherorick, affifted by her external beautiful, and altogether lovely form, had forced me to forget my onely dearly beloved the-friend, and become her Profelyte, her absolutely devoted convert, and would proftrate my will to be guided by hers and her command. With that we concluded to folace our felves at the next Tavern: I applyed my felf to my old way of infinuation: which foon melted her, fo that I faw I might when I steafed framp loves impression on her. Returning to Gravefend, we foon lodged our selves conveniently for our intended purpole: having to done, I fo ordered the matter, that there was not any thing wanting that might please our sences. Yet fearing left her love should cool again, there was no Art forgotten that might ferve to entertain it. Delays in love-affairs are dangerous: Women love not to be too long Tantalized; there is a certain critical time to know their inclination; which if you pun Aually observe, you shall affuredly reap the fruits of your desires; if not, you may perpetually wait, but never enjoy the like opportunity. Wherefore the Iron glowing hot, I thought good to strike: to enliven my spirits, she sent for a noise of Musick, ordering them to play in the next Room. And in the end we began to think of

Tay

refo

wh:

wha

wit

fter

100

ed,

it 17

con

wh

eft.

are

Re

flov

the

ing

The

20101

ber

en

ex

tic

is I

Cr

fae

WI

Pre

Ias

fome repose, agreeing before to lie in two Chim. bers contiguous to each other; which were to cordingly provided. As foon as I thought all the Houshold were in bed, I repaired to my Miftress. who eagerly expected my coming; approaching the bed-fide, the clasped me in her arms : As foon as day broke, I arole, bespeaking a far Capon swaddled with Saffages, and a Quart of Buttered Sack. I got all ready by the time of her rifing: he was extraordinarily well pleased in my doublediligence of ferving her : having applauded my induftrie and care of her, we fell to it, interlining every bit with a Glass of Canary. She told mele would never part whilft the had a penny left, he ving about her some Thirty Pieces of Gold. Wal (faid I) my Dear, fince it is thy resolution, a match; but let me be Steward : Which the agreed unto, delivering into my hands what Gold the had. For two or three hours I thewed my felf very officious in my place; but confidering that when this money was spent, we should not know what to do, I thought it was better for one to want than two; befides, I had lately furfeited on a Medle, and therefore my stomack nauseated the very thoughts thereof. I had feed the Drawer to bring me word just as the Gravefend Barge was going off which accordingly he did, by a private fign concluded betwixt us. I then pretended an exculeto go down, under the notion of providing something novel, which should be conducible to our minh and jollity. I had just fo much time below to write her these lines in stead of a solemn leave taking, leaving them with the Drawer to present her, and fo went aboard the Barge for London. Mades

am.

the

els,

ning

logn

pon

ered

the edi-

in.

e fbe

he-

Wel

tch;

ito,

For

100

this

01 3

han

ler,

rery

ring

off:

on-

eto

ing

rth

THE

ng,

and

48

Madam I'm gone; no monder, for you know, Lovers encounters are but touch and go.

Arriving at Billings-gate, I went fraight to a Tavern, where I had an intereft with the Drawer, resolving there to consult seriously with my self what course to follow, being as yet unresolved what to do. After I had raifed my dulled spirits with a glass or two, I concluded to hazard my Maflers good opinion, nay, & my Mistresses affection too; which though at that present it only smoaked, I might eafily divine, that in process of time it would burft forth into a flame. Being before confined to my Mafters time, I began to confider what an excellent thing Liberty was, equally eftmable with Health; which two, though they are the greatest and most precious gifts (next our. Redemption) the Creator of the world hath beflowed on mankind; yet we poor mortals value them not till we are fensible of their want, by being deprived of them. This is an infallible maxime, That the deprivation of a thing shall be so much the more evil, as the peffeffion thereof is good. Now if Liberry be fuch an excellent & delectable thing when enjoyed, how miserable are those that want it?

Having moneys in my Pocket, I concluded to experiment the enjoyment thereof, and to participate of such delights the nature of soung men is most inclinable to. Now man being a sociable Creature, I thought I should reap but little satisfaction to my self in the expence of my moneys, without an Associate: Wherefore I sent to an Apprentice of my intimate acquaintance contemporary with me, and who had often prompted me

This Lad was his Maften to ramble with him. Casheer, which I knew would much affift my de-I made him acquainted with my intention of trying the world: Though it had been former ly his own motion, yet he feemed at the firft fome. thing startled; but all his doubts I resolved; adding moreover, That to have our wills inflaved to other mens, was a thing insupportable, fince that we were, as well as they, created free Denizent of this world. That fince our great Grand-Father was Emperor of the whole world, we could not ftile our felves less than Princes, and therefore debased our Birth by a voluntary submission to Service and Slavery. I had no great occasion to make use of many Arguments to this purpole; for his own inclination was sufficient to perswadt him. The refult of our discourse was a him to Solution to become two Knights-errant. Fadvild him forthwith to go home and bring with his what Cash he had in his possession; which he redily performed, and indeed more then I could expect, being 200 % the Fates having so decreed to favour this our first bold exploit, as a cryal of what we durft attempt.

CHAP.

HOW

W

lis

ligh

effet

ure

bouf

Wer

very

Bub

igh

Auct

to a

it,

the

spol we ting

> upo on

> loa

de-

ion er-

ne-

ad-

ved

nce

ens her

TOT

ore

to

L to

for

ade

16.

iled

hia

-437

bluc

reed

lof

AP.

CHAP. XII.

How he frequented Bawdy-houses; what exploits be committed in them; the Character of a Bawd, a Whore, a Pimp, and a Trapan; their manner of living; with a Detection of their wicked lives and Conversations.

DEing full fraught with money, we undertook Dour Progress, promising to our selves all delight imaginable, but not confidering what the effect would be. We frequented all places of pleafure, but among the chief we ranked Brothelbouses, which were our Repositories. We feldom were feen in the Streets by day, for fear of discovery; confining our felves close Prisoners to some Bubbing-bouse; at night (like such as closely deighted in deeds of darkness) we would sometimes futter abroad. Our pastime was to hire Coaches to any pretended place, and when we came near it, to make our escape. One time leaping out of the Boot, my Cloak chanced to tangle in the spokes of the Wheel: the Coachman not perceiving we were got out, drove on; by the wheels continually turning, my Garment was so ingaged, that I verily believed my fins had now conferred upon me the just punishment of being excecuted on the wheel, which I could hardly have avoided, had I'not speedily unbuttoned my Cloak : I was louth to bid the Coachman stop, thinking I should have it at last; I ran Lacquy-like a long way, but all my endeavours to thift it, proved ineffectual; Co

n t

olo

en

Sin

cou

held Har

vicl

hat

0.

he S

e d

ain

wn

Soul

Whe

ing

ress

rith

oath

ppe:

ench

ll n

hen

Plagi

nato

reed

t ma

ther

here

be r

piler

ut f

ions

fo that at length I was forced to cry out, But Coachman. The Coachman coming out of his Box. foon perceived the fallacy, and straightways de manded his money for his hire, before he would untangle my Cloak, which I was compelled to give him. Delivering me my Clock, he told me, Ibil paid bim, but be had not paid me for my attendancem him: And faid moreover, That my Cloak would no look like a Livery, unless it were laced; and with the with his whip , lashed me well-favouredly. Another fort of Paftime we used, was to kick the old Water mens Lanthorns about the ffreet; and it maybe fometimes confer a blow or two on their fleen noddles, and then flie for it. We pra difed this for lery fo often, till at length we where met with, and rightly ferved. It was thus : In Paternofin rom, we found a fellow at noddie upon a stall, will his Lanthorn and Candle by him; having firffer zed on that, and thrown it into the Kennel, profecuted our abuse by falling upon him, and beating him. Having fo done, we betook our felte to flight; but here we mistook our mark, thinking him to be an old decrepid Watchman, and one that had little use of his eyes, without those in his Pocket; whereas to our coft, we found him as nimble and as light footed as a Stag, who overtaking us, surprized us; and as he was carrying us before the Constable, we met with the grand Round who, without much examination', committed as Rats to the Counter. The chiefest thing the troubled us, was the apprehension of our Malten knowing where we were. But we resolved u drown that care; we had not been there long before other Rats, Maleand Female, were brough

Box.

de

ould

give

bad

Cen

dut

thet.

other

Ach-

y be

eep

foo

ith.

ofter.

will

A fei

, W.

300

CIVE

king

d one

in his

nim-

und,

edu

t hat

aften

ed to

ong

n to bear us company. Some of the men were all loody, and their Mobs Scarfs and Hoods all ent, and none of them fober : Damming and Sinking were the constant flourishes of their difourfe; calling for drink was the Argument they seld, and roaring in diffracted notes was their larmony. Though I my felf was comparatively ricked, yet I bleffed my God I had not arrived to hat height thefe superlative Villains had attained o. Being in their company, I thought my felf in he Suburbs, or on the confines of Hell. Sin, if it e dreffed up in specious pretences, may be entersined as a Companion; but when it appears in its wn shape, it cannot but strike horror into the foul of any, though desperate, if not flupified. Wherefore me thought I was so far from affociaing my felf with them, that I protest, the leudels of their Actions were so represented to me ith fuch deformity, that I knew not which I outhed most, them or the Prison. I cannot make ppear to the world what they were, nor my reentments, unless I should stuff a page or two with Il manner of horrid Oaths, Execuations, Blafhemies and fuch like foul-infecting & destroying Plague-fores; wherefore I shall onely take leave ro natomize the Place that deteined us from our redon. Then look upon a Prison as in it self, and may be firly termed a temporal Hell. For as the ther is a receptacle for damned Souls, the Gares hereof standing wide open; fo this refuseth be reception of none, though never fo wicked a siscreanc. Though my durance in this place was ut short, yet I could not but take some observaough lons, imploying from thence the faculties of my

n t

blo

ren

Sin

cou

hel

Har wic

ha

he.

be d

ain

Soul

Wh

ing

ness

vith

180

ppe

enci

ill I

her

Plag

mat

reec

t m

othe

her

he i

nisc

but f

ions

fo that at length I was forced to cry out, Bul Coachman. The Coachman coming out of his Box. foon perceived the fallacy, and ftraightways de manded his money for his hire, before he would untangle my Cloak, which I was compelled to give him. Delivering me my Clock, he told me, Ibil paid bim, but be had not paid me for my attendancen bim: And faid moreover, That my Cloak wouldn't look like a Livery, unless it were laced; and with this with his whip, lashed me well-favouredly. Another fort of Pastime we vsed, was to kick the old Water mens Lanthorns about the ffreet; and it maybe fometimes confer a blow or two on their fleen noddles, and then flie for it. We practifed this for lery fo often, till at length we where met with. and rightly ferved. It was thus : In Paternofin. rom, we found a fellow at noddie upon a stell, with his Lanthorn and Candle by him; having firffer zed on that, and thrown it into the Kennel, w profecuted our abuse by falling upon him, and beating him. Having fo done, we betook our felte to flight; but here we mistook our mark, thinking him to be an old decrepid Watchman, and one that had little use of his eyes, without thoseinh Pocket; whereas to our coft, we found him as nimble and as light footed as a Stag, who overtaking us, surprized us; and as he was carrying us before the Constable, we met with the grand Round, who, without much examination', committed if as Rats to the Counter. The chiefeft thing that troubled us, was the apprehension of our Masten knowing where we were. But we resolved to drown that care; we had not been there long! before other Rats, Maleand Female, were brought

Hall

Box

de

ould

give

bad

Ceon

dust

thet,

ther

tch-

y be

eepy

foo-

ith,

ofter.

WII

f fei-

, W

and

110

king

one

n his

nim-

king

fore

ind,

du

that

fen

d 10

ongi

ught

Soul

n to bear us company. Some of the men were all loody, and their Mobs Scarfs and Hoods all ent, and none of them fober : Damming and Sinking were the conftant flourishes of their difourfe; calling for drink was the Argument they held, and roaring in diffracted notes was their Harmony. Though I my felf was comparatively wicked, yet I bleffed my God I had not arrived to hat height thefe superlative Villains had attained o. Being in their company, I thought my felf in he Suburbs, or on the confines of Hell. Sin, if it be dreffed up in specious pretences, may be enterained as a Companion; but when it appears in its own shape, it cannot but strike horror into the foul of any, though desperate, if not stupified. Wherefore me thought I was so far from associaing my felf with them, that I protest, the leudhels of their Actions were so represented to me with fuch deformity, that I knew not which I outhed most, them or the Prison. I cannot make ppear to the world what they were, nor my reentments, unless I should stuff a page or two with Il manner of horrid Oaths, Execuations, Blafhemies and fuch like foul-infecting & deftroying Plague-fores; wherefore I shall onely take leave to natomize the Place that deteined us from our reedom. Then look upon a Prison as in it self, and t may be firly termed a temporal Hell. For as the other is a receptacle for damned Souls, the Gates hereof standing wide open; fo this refuseth he reception of none, though never lo wicked a piscreant. Though my durance in this place was but short, yet I could not but take some observaions, imploying from thence the faculties of my

Soul, to draw up the definition of a Prifon, Helli a very proper denomination for it, fince itist place composed of nothing but disorder and confusion; a Land of darkness, inhabited by calamity, horror, mifery, and confusions a bottomless Picol fraud, violence and ftench. A Prison is the Banif. ment of Courtefie, the Centre of Infamy and Dife paragement, the Destruction of good Wits, the Treasure of Despair, the Fining-Pot of Friendhin a Den of Deceivers, a Forrest of Ravenous Beats, Here you may fee one Weeping, another finging one Sleeping, another wearing; every one varioully imployed; one Eating in a corner, and ano ther Pilling just by him; another Lowling himlelf between both; it may be heretofore a military min, and therefore loath to forget his Art, but rather exercifing it in the killing of his bodily Enemies, bearing the blood on his nail, as the Trophies of his Victory.

li

q

hi

31

It is, to speak most properly, a living Tombor grave to bury men alive in, wherein a man forbil a years experience may learn more Law, then he can in three Terms for an hundred pound.

It is a little Wood of wee, a Map of milery, a place that will learn a young man more villany, if he be apt to take it, in fix months, than at twenty Gaming Ordinaries, Bowling-Allies, or Bawdy houses; and an old man more policy, than if he had been Pupil to Machiavel,

This Place hath more diseases predominant in it than the Pest-house in a Plague-time; and stinks worse than my Lord Mayors Dog-house.

It is a little Common-wealth, although little wealth common there; it is a defart, where defend lies hood-winkt.

The Place is as intricate as Rosamond's Laby-Hellin th, and is fo full of Meanders and Crooked e it isa nings, that it is impossible to find the way out, id concept he be directed by a Silver Clue; and can amity. ver overcome che Minotaur, withour a Goldens Pit of Il to work his own fafety. Thus much in thore : Banithenext day, paying our Fees, and receiving nd Dif ne checks, with good admonitions from the fus. che te, we were discharg'd. This mistortune made ndhip. not a jot more cautious, but affoon as we were Beafts. liberty, we went upon the fent to mother Cr. nging. merly famous for the Good Citizens Wives that le variquented her house; who still rides Admiral of nd anothe rest of her function about the Town. I hope himfelf enext time I go to visit her, the will not get me y min, pt for the pains I take in praifing her. The truth rachet it is, of all the Bawds I know, the merits moft, emies. ring an house fit for the accommodation of the hies of A. As for her walking Ucenfils, they are comfed of refined mercal, alwaies nearly kept; ombo hich , because they are not used upon all fight forball casions, they appear the more delectable to the ben he e. Affoon as we had entred the door, I could ery, a para ruffling of Silks in fundry places; I conceive was their policy, by feeming modesty to fer a uper edge on our appetites. We were conducted t twento a large handsome Room; bottles of Wine ere brought up, both Spanish and French, with Bawdyh meats to rellish the Palate, though we gave no rder for them; but it seems it was the Custome fithe house, a chargeable one: but without a Piece wife. pending you shall know tittle of their practices. blink tlength, up came the old Matron; she seats her delen elf by me, and began to be impudently acquain-

llany

n if be

nant in

Th

ted, chucking me under the chin, calling mehr Son Smock-face. Having well warmed our felve with Wine, and the good Gentlewoman perceiving that our bloods began to heat, Well, faid he I guefs at the intent of your coming bitber, neither ha you go away unfatisfied. Nature will bave its couffe and if in Youth it be fopt, it will but , Torrent-like flow with the greater impetuofity. Come, I fee by you countenances that ye were born fons of mirth and plea Sure; frem then what stock ye came of. If you was Subjects to exercise your parts on, we'll bave m Wine; and when ye are inflamed, ye shall bave their nefet of a Cooler. With that the leaves us; but ano ther of the same Sex, though three degrees differ ent in age, supplied her place. At first view lien ed very well pleased: handsome the was, and ve ry proportionable; but withall so impudent, the I was antidoted against lechery. Ita famine qu limites verecundie femel excefferit, oportet illamif graviter impudentem. If once a woman palsth bounds of Shamefac'dness, the will seldome to till the hath arrived to the heighth of Impudence I must needs deal ingeniously, at the beginning the Needle of my Microcolm was coucht by Love Loadstone: But upon further acquaintance, il might have had a hundred pounds, I could no have meddled with her.

Though the had baited her defires with a million of profittute countenances and enticements, ye I lookt upon her rather a Companion for an Hofpital, and stood more in need of a Chyrurgion acquaintance then mine. My Friend had nibble at the bait; but when I heard them capitulating about the price, I thought the wanted a Fee for

ur selver

percei-

faid the

ther shall s Courfe:

ent-like

and plea

ave men

ve the be

but ano

es differ

w lieum

and ve

nt, the

mina qui illam efe

pals the

ome flor

oudence

ginning by Love

ould no

e Doctor. Well, had she not over-traded, she me her d not broke fo foon; for her trade is oppofice all others : for the did fet up wichout credit, dher too much custome undid her; and so let er go, without either shame, or hope of repennce.

We defired to fee another: 'T is variety that ee by your inchiefly takes delight in : One constant fort of ood, without participating of any other, though you was linna, will cause the stomack to long for the left pots: Neither can the crime be greater in he enjoyment of diverse persons then one alone, rovided Matrimony make nor the a& Legicimate. do not approve of these consequent lines tendgto this purpose; yet give me leave to inferc nem, that you may understand how viciously inded some are in this frothy age.

> Born under some ill Planet, or accurst, Is be that loves one fingle Whore; Who wish one draught can always quench his thirst, Ty'd to one Mistress and na more.

This nauleating thing being removed, up came ne of Venus her chief Darlings; excellent Flesh! nd the her felf the Cook that dreft it, spending noft of her day-time about it, that the might with million hebetter appetite be tatted.

nts, ye reptions in this, I was impatient till I nau enter an Hommated my desires: withdrawing into another rurgion com, to heighten my thoughts, she declared to com, to heighten my thoughts, that as the one was a deceasioned interest. ell extracted, the other had occasioned much Fee fo of and expence. That for her part, the effociate!

with none but perfons of quality, whose long tience and intrestments first procured a fam rity, and in fine, freedom in the exercise of affairs : and fo would have (feemingly) put no upon this score, that it was not usual for he admit of any to her imbraces, but luch whole acquaintance had gained her affection. her a Crown, which the refused with indignate telling me, that the was not yet reduc'd to fo a condition, as to become to poor a Mercen Proflitute. At laft, with much perswasion, Ifal on her an half piece; and fo friving with (the onely feeming averse) I accomplish my And presently in came a sellow, whose very would have enlightned the room, though in darkeft night; for indeed it appeared to meal zing Star, and his Nose (for miraculously he preferved it) was the brushy Tayl. Laying hand on his (word, he looks fiercer then a Sm Doninfulting over an Indian Slave. The bull his body began to heave like an Earth-quake, his mouth . Ætsa-like, belcht our all mann Sulphurous Oaths, which roared to loud, as belly had concained a barrel of Gun-powder the Linftock of his Nofe had fired it. His coun Salutation to me, was, How dereit thou, Sou Whore, prefume in this nature to aithonour me, abusing of my Wife, without the expediation of a mediate annihilation or diffication into Atomes! I bave something here that tame thy insolence; now I am refelved to fet thy blood abroach. With he feemed to make a pass at me: Now I, im ing that he really intended to do what he tended, for the lateguard of my Life, I took

Inclosed, and received his point in the feat; Ifollowing it home, cumbted him down the rs; and not being able to recover my felf, fell him. My Comrade came running down at noise to affilt me; but he feeing me rather teute of my heets then hands, followed my mple, and to built a Sconce, leaving the old adto condole her great loss; for the Reckonwas very confiderable

low because I have often met with these Hesiors Trapanning Villains, I think it will not be hitable to this present Discourse, to insert

ir Character.

long

fam

offe

ut me

or he

role

l off

gnad

co fo l

l fat

my a

very la gh in in meab y he la y ing a Spa e bulke, who

der

Some, in

Vicht imag hep 13

The

The

CHARACTER

OF

Ь

N

CE

ca

21

te

re

ch

th

mi

he

jo

mo

de

h

pu

10

He

tar

tw

her

An HECTOR or TRAPAN

Bawdy-house is his Cloyster, where he con Stancly Says his Mattins. He is an Whom Protector, pretending himself more valiant the any of the antient Heroes, thereby thinkings take off the suspition of a Coward from himself For the opinion of Valour, is a good protection chofe that dare not use it. His frequent drawin his Sword upon any flight occasion, makes their norant Suppose him Valiant; whereas he during do it, but when he is confident no danger enfue thereon. He never frikes any, but fucht is fure will not return his blows. In Company is wonderful exceptious and cholerick, thinking in the fray some booty may be obtained: but wrath never swells higher then when men are lo to give him any occasion : but the onely way pacifie him, is to beat him foundly. The hou you grow, the milder he is, protesting he ains honoured you. The more you abute him, thema he feems to love you : if he chance to be quart fome, you may threaten him into a quiet tempe

Every man is his Mafter that dares beat him; and every one dares, that knows him; and he that deres do this, is the onely man can do much with him. Yet if he knows a Coward, he will purpofely fall out with him, toget Courtefies from him, and lo be bribed into a reconcilement. Yet I cannot fay but that he may fight, (if with great advanage) being fo accustomed to the fight of drawn Swords, which probably may infuse tomething of a conceit into him; which he so magnifies by his own good opinion, that he would have people believe that the Mole-hill of his Prowels is no less then a Mountain. This little he hath he is no Niggard in displaying; resembling some Apotheceries Shops, full of Pors, though little conmined in them. His Estate lies in Contrivances; and though other Landlords have but four Quarter-days, he hath three hundred fixty and odd to receive the fruits of his Stratagems. He is well killed in Cards and Dice, which help him to theat young Gulls newly come to Town; and the reason he usually gives for it, is, A Woodcock must be pluckt ere be be dreft. If that will not do, he carries him to one of his Mistreffes, and so both joyn to plume this Fowl: if there be not ready money to answer expectation, a Bond of confiderable value shall ferve turn, attested by two hill swear anything for half a Crown. No man puts his brain to more use then he; for his life is idaily invention, and each meal a meer stratagem. He hath an excellent memory for his acquaintance; if there ever past but an How do you? between him and another, it shall ferve feven years hence for an embrace, and that for money. Out of

AN

he con

Whore

ne the

king

imfelf

Crions

drawin

s then

lurfine

ger #i

fuch

pany

hinkin

but b

are lo

way

e hou

he mo

Uarre

cempa

Eve

Ev

de hin

fay tage Swc a co

belie then Nigg

carie

taine

and (

ter-d

recei

skille

cheat

the re

must b

he car

joyn

money

derab

hall G

puts h

daily

He har

ance :

tween

lence

The

CHARACTER

OF

An HECTOR or TRAPAN

Bawdy-house is his Cloyster, where he con-A fantly fays his Mattins. He is an Whom Protector, pretending himself more valianthe any of the antient Heroes, thereby thinkings take off the suspition of a Coward from himself For the opinion of Valour, is a good protection chofe that dare not use it. His frequent dram his Sword upon any flight occasion, makes the norant Suppose him Valiant; whereas he during do it, but when he is confident no danger! enfue thereon. He never frikes any , but fuch is fure will not return his blows. In Company is wonderful exceptious and cholerick, thinks in the fray some booty may be obtained : but wrath never fwells higher then when men arela to give him any occasion : but the onely way pacifie him, is to beat him foundly. The hou you grow, the milder he is, protesting he aim honoured you. The more you abule him, them he feems to love you : if he chance to be que fome, you may threaten him into a quiet ten

Every man is his Mafter that dares beat him; and every one dares, that knows him; and he that deres do this, is the onely man can do much with him. Yet if he knows a Coward, he will purpofely fall out with him, toget Courtefies from him, and fo be bribed into a reconcilement. Yet I cannot fay but that he may fight, (if with great advantage) being so accustomed to the fight of drawn Swords, which probably may infuse something of a conceit into him; which he fo magnifies by his own good opinion, that he would have people believe that the Mole-hill of his Prowels is no less then a Mountain. This little he hath he is no Niggard in displaying; refembling some Apothecaries Shops, full of Pors, though little conmined in them. His Estate lies in Contrivances; and though other Landlords have but four Quarter-days, he hath three hundred fixty and odd to receive the fruits of his Stratagems. He is well skilled in Cards and Dice, which help him to theat young Gulls newly come to Town; and the reason he usually gives for it, is, A Woodcook must be pluckt ere be be drest. If that will not do, he carries him to one of his Mistreffes, and so both joyn to plume this Fowl: if there be not ready money to answer expectation, a Bond of confiderable value shall ferve turn, attested by two hill fwear any thing for half a Crown. No man puts his brain to more use then he; for his life is daily invention, and each meal a meer fratagem. he hath an excellent memory for his acquaintance; if there ever past but an How do you? beween him and another, it shall ferve feven years tence for an embrace, and that for money. Out

vert

cels

Lod

ingl

to b

cam

COU

Dev

which

2110

1013

by t

mou

fide.

for I

the

(whi

any)

the befo

Neig

Nofe

com

tron

Me t

infin

Was :

her,

imel to of

the l

B

of his abundance of joy to fee you, he offens pottle of Wine; and in requital of his kindnes, can do no leis then make you pay for it : while you are drawing money, he fumbles in his pockets, (as School-boys with their points, beine about to be whipt) till the Reckoning be pil, and lays, It muft not be fo , yet is eafily perfue ded toit; and then cries, Gentlemen, you fort me to incivility. When his Whores cannot fupply him , he borrows of any that will lend him ought; of this man a shilling, and of anothers much; which some lend him, not out of hopen be repayed, but that he will never trouble then again. If he finds a good look from any, he will haunt him fo long, till he force a good naturen the necessity of a quarrel. He loves his Friends one doth his Cloak that hath but one, and know not how to get another; he will be fure to wat him thread-bare ere be forfake him. him at last as infection; nay, his old Company ons, his Cloaths that have hung upon him fo long at length fall off too. His prayer in the morning is, That his Cheats may take effect that day; not, that he may be drunk before night. fleeps with a Tobacco-pipe in his mouth, and dreams of nothing but Villany. If any milent efcapes him, it was not his fault, for he lays fair for it as he could. He dares not enter into ferious thought, left he hang himfelf; but iffet melancholy feize him, the Drink is, his refuge and Drunkenness cures him. Laftly, he common dies like a Malefactor on the Gallows, or li Hercules with fire in his bones. When hange if begged for an Anatomy, it would fervetom

14

.

ilt

X-

ng

d,

14.

rie

IP-

m

1

10

chi

vill

to

25

1WC

eat

188

三二三二

8

vert Tobacco-smokers from delighting in the excess thereof: for they will find the funnel of his body, I mean his throat, furred and choake up.

Being freed from danger, we rejoyced exceedingly that we thus fo narrowly escaped , resolving to house our selves in the next Bubbing-place we came to, that we might talk freely of this rencounter. A place (pointed out to us by the Devils Finger) foon presented it felf to our Eyes . which we with more than good fpeed entered; and coming into the Kitchin, I was not a little amazed at the fight of a thing fitting in a Chaire by the fire-fide, with a Pipe of Tobacco in its mouth, and a Quartern of Strong-waters by its fide. This Tun of Fleth refembled an Elephant for the bigneffe of her Wafte, had there been the least appearance of a Tooth : A Nose the had (which with all wonder be it spoken that the had any) fo long, as that it was a fic refemblance of the Elephants Probofcis or Trunk. But, as I faid before, her Teeth were faln out; and as loving Neighbours to reconcile them, her Chin and Nose resolved to meet about it. She bids us Welcome as well as the could speak. Go, I think the could not; but opening her mouth, Lord, what frong imaginations my fancy fuggefted to me! Me thought I faw Hell gaping to devour me; and within that bottomless Concave, I could discern infinite numbers of Souls whose damnation she was accessary to; and coming somewhat too near her, I imagined her breath was bituminous, and smelt of Brimstone. She might fiely be compared to old-Coal that hath been well burnt, that with the least spark will re-kindle, and fire any thing

not

and

(1

ply

bel

Tou

Bay

ter

Str

W25

the !

mac

She

afte

We

long

a los

twer

wich

teri

buc

put

ihou

rea(

Shr

pulle

me a

com

then

it,

my b

and

mer e

they

near it. But her fitteft likeness is the Devil, ber Envy running parallel with his. All that the Devil endeavours, is to bring Mankind into the fame ftate with himfelf; and a Bawds aim isto make all fair women like her : now because their youth perhaps will not admit of it fo foon, he hurries them on to it by degrees; by drinking, fmosking, painting, and dayly excess in venery. I lookt about her house very inquisitively, but I could not judge her Moveables (fetting afide her quick Cattle) to be worth an Inventory. Her bedding I doubt me too is infectious, few coming near it, but they are presently taken with aft of the falling-fickness. This old Beldame, being loth to put her throat to the trouble of calling her white Devils about her, had got a White, on which the used several Notes; which Muffal language her Girls understood very well. We called for drink; the old Bawd replyed the would fend for some, though the had it not in the house this was, to be fure of our Moneys. Herein! observed their temperance, not suffering usto have too much measure. Wenches we had plentifully; one more especially I took notice of, w have the Swarthieft skin I have feen English born, on whom an ordinary fellow was very fued, When I faw my opportunity, laskt him, (cm ving his excuse) What Trade be was? Pat at would have it, he answered me, That be was Tanner. I concluded fo, Sir, (faid 1) by you dreffing of that Calves-skin there. This Dull-headed fool apprehended me not, but began to be at gry, telling me, His Trade was a good Trade and I need not undervalue it. I told him, 14

her

be

to

eir she

9:

7.

out ide

er

ng

fit

ng

ng

e,

cal

lá

e:

1

10

11-

to

n,

1.

not, fince there was some analogy between my Trade and bis. Wby what Trade are you? (faid he,) (I may ask you a question, as well as you me.) I replyed, That I was a Cuckold-maker. How can that belike my Profeffion? quoch he. In this, faid 1. You dress the skins, and I trim the Horns. The Bawd at this fell into fuch an extream fit of laughter, that down fell her Pipe, and up came the Strong-waters that the had fwallowed : but that was not all, for having not her retentive faculty, helet flie: furely the was overcharged, which made her recoyl, and fo blew out her breech-pin. She was forced to leave us, and about an hour after returned; how sweet, I cannot tell you. We fell into discourse again : laske her, How long the had liv'd in this boufe? Two years (faid the) alonger time then any boufe I have lived in this twenty years: with that I concluded the was in fee with the Justices Clerk. My stomach being waterifa, I would needs have some Eggs and Bacon : but Lord, what an Agony the hearing thereof put the Bawd in! defiring me to defift, for the thould die at the fight of them. I askt her the reason: 0, said the, it puts me in mind of one Shrove-tuesday especially, on which the Apprentices pulled down my boufe; and fick, fick as I was, pulled me away violently from a Caudle I bad prepared to comfort me : But they gave me one with a Pox to them, and the Devils Dam take the rotten Eggs in it, with which I thought they would have pelted out my brains, after they had dragged me sufficiently. and worried me (as a Mustiff would a Cat) till they mere weary of the sport : fearing I (bould catch cold. they out of pity covered me warm in a Bogg-boufe. But

But the wonst was, after this kind usage, I was to go through a long street before I could come to an acquaintance of mine wherein I could safely secure my felf from the out-rage of these Hell-bounds. All along as I went, a thousand Dogs barkt at me, the street was filled with people looking and laughing at my sad disaster, but none daring to come near me. They say I left so strong a scent behind me, that several of the sind shit ants left their dwellings upon it, and that the strong savour remained in that place above six days. I seemed to pitty her much, promising to visit her often; and so we left her.

CHAP.

go nc. my ng eet ad abe

b. wath that alon richly affed frew under brown with to fit formed bability; and been controlled brown been controlled brown been controlled brown brown been controlled brown brown been controlled brown bro



CHAP. V.

Vhat a Trick be served his Comrade; how himself was Trapan'd; his own Cleaths taken from him; the Band out of pretended pity, invested him with an old peticoat and wastcoat; his admittance into a Boarding-School; his getting many of the Gentle-women with Child; his discovery, and his slight.

Rom one Bawdy-house to another, was our dayly Travel, still finding out some variety that might please us. About the twy light, coming slong by a well-built house, I saw a Gentlewoman richly Attired flanding at the door, who, as I affed by, very civilly faluted me, and fo withdrew her felf. I followed her in, as very well understanding how to interpret such actions. She prought us into a spacious inner-room, and then with much civility and good carriage, invited us oft down. She called to her fervant to bring fome bottles of Wine, resolving to make us pay learly for her excraordinary Favours. By our babits the took us for no less then persons of Quamy; for we had gallantly accounted our felves; and I thought that fortune now had defigued me er chiefest favorite, in throwing this unexpected desling upon me. She caused her Lute to be brought her, to which the fung to harmonically, that

that the Mufick of the Sphears are no more tob compared to it, then a Scotch Bagpipe to an Organ This fo intoxicated my Comrade, with the Wine together (not but that they had a great operation on my felf) that he fell faft alleep, (alis ded drunk.) Glad I was to my very heart of this we cident, fearing he might be a Rival in myintention : and to the intent I might remove il Remora's or Impediments that might hinder my sole enjoyment of this Lady, I consulted with my felf what to do with him : I was not long about it. but freight found out this cunning Plot, which was to fend him home to his Mafter. Loveton Woman is so forceable, that what will it not do! to fum up all, make a man berray his Friend. I made my Apology to the Gentlewoman for his incivility, and requested the favour to have her for vant procure me a Porter; whilft the was goneto execute my defires, I fearcht his Pockets, and took away all his Gold; for we had converted all our money into that metal, which we always midt our Vade mecum. To ingratiate my felf with this Gentlewoman, I acquainted her with my defign; which the heartily laughed at. I farther defired of her, that I might have a Card and a piece of paper. On the Card I wrote a superfcription, and pinned it on his back, directing the thing to is Mafter, living in such a place : with the paper, I wrote a Letter to him to this effect.

> SIR. Lately I found your Goofe upon the way, I took bim up, as one that went aftray. To recompence my pains, I pull'd bis feathers

Ig

it j

ette

eve

erfo

erec

is t

G

e pr otio

edi

tim

e Chi

her

ng

ent g ong

ncte

ould

un

ofely

nd I

ther

infl

bou

uthec nade

capin

ed a

o be

gen.

ine

ead

20-

in-

sil

my

my

it,

101

do!

. 1

in-

eto

and all ade

hid

zn;

d of

and his

et,

Such pretious down will warm me in all weathers. His flesh I love not; it belongs to you: The gibbles though I keep; and so adieu.

I gave the Porter inffructions, that he should it just put him within the doors, and leave the tter, and fo with all fpeed to come away, to event examination : he brought me word he had erformed my order : what discants were made ereon, I shall leave the Reader to imagine. By is time I had gained my Miffress with a shower Gold, which had so far prevailed on her, that eprotested she was wholly and folely at my deotion. I would have had her to have gone imedistely to bed; but she told me, There would time enough before morning to sport in, and that e should be both tired, if we went to bed fo foom. herefore, to divert our felves, we drank and ing together in parts, I my felf having indiffeong till it was time to go to bed, the then conucted me to the Chamber where the intended we ould lie. Though the made what hake the could undress her self, yet me thought she was purosely tedious. I commended before, her Vocal nd Instrumental Musick; but then I esteemed no ther Mufick Sweeter then what the Tag made asinft her Bodice when the was unlacing her felf. bout two a Clock in the Morning, three fellows Whed into our Room; at which I awaked, but lade as little noise as a Perdue. My Mistress caping out of the Bed, they feized on her, gaged and bound her; and then opening the two aves of the Window that was the entrance into the

the Belcony, they came in all halte to the Bed, and in a trice, had rowled up the Bed fo close, that they had like to have fifled me in the middle on't : though they dragged me in the Bed from off the Bediteed, rudely letting me fall on the ground, yet I felt no harm; every part of me was fo well guarded, that in that condition, ! might have bid defiance to a Canon-Bullet. Ber when I heard them talk of flinging the Bed overthe Belcony to their Companions, I thought I hould have died instantly for fear, knowing I musto Whereupon I cryed out a neeeffity go with it. loud as I could, and ftrugling, I got a little plat open, and then I roar'd like Phalarie his Boll They feeming to be furprized with my unexpedie noile, fled, faffning a Rope to the Belcony, m fo flid down into the ftreet. Perceiving they wen all gone, I groped about the Room (for it m very dark) speaking very lowly , Where are you Madam? repeating it often; but much wonden I could not hear her answer me. As I was feet ing round the Room, fretching forth my hands moo I chanced to run one of my hands against her and one of my fingers into her mouth : I though my finger had ftrayed at first , mistaking the place; but fearthing farther, and finding teeth I knew then whereabont I was, and discovered withal a flick in her mouth, keeping it wideoper as Butchers do their Sheep with a Gambrel. Bu having removed this obffacle of her speech, begged me to untie her hands; which having don't the her felf untied her feet ; and with that, would have clasped me in her Arms; but I hu an arfe, being fentible of the flinking condition

11 ive bet 101 15.

dfe e to th a ndi

. 11 cha

ng in r bu . 1

d ga ght lain

us p 11, ich

Arc ats t

Clo inft e lea

rhed ha med

Was ny f pati

ed b dit i ed, ole.

J.le

rom the

me

But

rthe puld

if of

It as ace Bull

ad

dred

feel nds

her

ugh

che eth

erel pen

one Lug

muit

or the fear had put me in. She was very inquibether I had received any barm from the Kogues. I Id her no: Nay, then I care not for my own fi fferdfo freedily went for a candle. As I was think-, leg to Apologize for my naftinefs, up the came th a light, viewing me, and perceiving what a ndition I was in, the kept at a diffance; Sir, faid , my fancy suggetts to me, that you now resemble Nechadnezzar when Metamor phozed inte a beaft, and ng in his own dung when you shall have reassimed rhumanity, I shall presume to approach nearer to . I made my Sirreverence to her, withing they d gagged her breech too fo wide, that her guis ght have a paffage through her poferiours. For were lainly perceived, notwichstanding all her speell, the cauted water to be brought up, with ich I clenfed my felf; and because my shirt had frong a tent of Stercus bumanum, the lent me mock, which prefaged ere long I should wear ats too. Having thifted my felf, I looked for Cloachs, but there was a Non est inventur out inft them, all my fearch could afford me not least comfort : my Mistres feemed much dirbed at my loss; but when I cold her I had loft h a confiderable quantity of Gold, her forrow med to be redoubled, and I am fure her inward was increased. She comforted me with a great ny friendly louing expressions, desiring me to patient, and indeed necessicy forced me toit. I ed her advice what I should do in this maked idition: There is no remedy, (the replyed) you

eri

iv

ufp

im

ny civ

Geff

rie

Gen

ito

nen

o be

ad

uei

and

alle

nd t

ne fo

or b

nwi

serr

efer

houg

yes,

nade

ny o

or or

uffor

, inc

inc(

hat u

muft be content to cloatb your felf in Womans apparel as for mans I have none to furnish you withal. I con fented to it, and prefently the dreft me uping of her Gowns, with all the appurrenances there unto belonging. The flenderness of my body whiteness of skin, beauty, and smoothness of he (having no hairs thereon) added a fuitablenesse my garb. I must ingeniously confess, when loss fulced with a Looking-glass, I thought the tran mutation of Sexes had been verified in me; b when I walked, I found fomething pendulous which eafily perswaded me to the contrary beli of my felf. I thought it folly to tax her form misfortune, knowing how little it would advanta me. The time was come I was to take my leaved her: going to falute her, I committed a foul w fake, indeavouring to pull off my hood in flead my hat, and making a Leg (as the vulgarter it) in stead of a Curchy; but she advising metor Stiffe that mistake for the time to come, we each other adieu. In this difguize I traverfedt freets, it being almost impossible for any todis ver me, my voice being to effeminate, that I confident that would never betray me. As Int I consulted with Resion what was most expedit My invention (as at all times) was now ready afift me; and thus it was. Finding a Bill onad I knocked, defiring to fee what Lodgings ! had; I was very civilly intrested to come in, was shown several Rooms with much respect, my female habit was very gallant, and for need, for it coft me dearer than fo much de of Gold. I pirch'd at last upon a Chamber ordinary well furnished; I never scrupis

nere

ody

fac

elst

COL

LSD

; bi

lous

belie

m re

DIA

aved

ıl m

ead

cer

top

ie b

ed d

dile

i

well

dia

do

s th

n, I

â,

rice, (because they should look on me as a peron of Quality) but agreed to my Landlords own erms. I told him I was lately come out of the Countrey, and that my Trunks were not yet ariv'd, with a great many more fictions to prevent ufpition. At first I intended to take for no longer ime, than I could contrive a way to dispose of ny felf, and procure mans Apparrel; but pereiving how agreeable my Feature, Stature and Gesture were to my Female Weeds, I resolved to rie some projects in them. There was a young Gentleman that lay in the house, and took special otice of me as foon as I entered it, and as he rold nenext day, was overjoyed that I had determined obe a Lodger there. This young Bravo (which ad more money than wit) had prepared a Banmet for me, and requested the favour of me, that and himself might be received into my chamber: alleadged I could not do it in point of honour, nd therefore defired to be excused; but he prest he fo far (getting also his Landlady to intercede or him, that at last (though with much seeming nwillingness) I condescended thereunto. Very serry they were, but I tought it prudence to be eferv'd. My Amorist so gazed on me, that I hought he would have devoured me with his yes, kissing me sometimes, which had like to have ude me disgorge my stomack in his face. For in by opinion, it is very unnatural, nay loathfome, or one man to kifs another, though of late too too affomary I know it is; yet I look on fuch as nfe , inclining to Sodomy, and have had the unhapinels to be acquainted with feveral, who thing hat unnatural action, found it onely the Preludium

on

ern

Cou

iv'

ulp

ime

ny l

Geft

rie l

Geni

otio

nen

obe

ad i

net

and

alle

nd t

te fo

or bi

nwil

herry

eferv

hong

yes,

nade

ny op

oron

ufton

inc

iness

hat o

muft be content to cloatb your felf in Womans apparel as for mans I have none to furnish you withal. Icon fented to it, and prefently the dreft me upinous of her Gowns, with all the appurrenances there unto belonging. The flenderness of my body whiteness of skin, beauty, and smoothness of he (having no hairs thereon) added a fuitableness my garb. I must ingeniously confess, when I con fulted with a Looking-glass, I thought the tran mutation of Sexes had been verified in me; b when I walked, I found fomething pendulor which easily perswaded me to the contrary beli of my felf. I thought it folly to tax her fort misfortune, knowing how little it would advantage me. The time was come I was to take my leaved her: going to falute her, I committed a foul m stake, indeavouring to pull off my hood in stead my hat, and making a Leg (as the vulgar ter it) in stead of a Curchy; but she advising metor chifie that mistake for the time to come, wel each other adieu. In this difguize I traverfedt freets, it being almost impossible for any todie ver me, my voice being to effeminate, that I confident that would never betray me. As Intel I confulted with Resion what was most expedit My invention (as at all times) was now read affift me; and thus it was. Finding a Bill onad I knocked, defiring to fee what Lodgings ! had; I was very civilly incrested to come in, was shown several Rooms with much respect, my female habit was very gallant, and for need, for it cost me dearer than so much of Gold. I pirch'd at last upon a Chamber ordinary well furnished; I never scrupled

ere

dy

is to

con

one

oelie

t m

ntag

req

0

ade

ter

top

e bi

ed d

dife

l m

dy

3

n, a

it it

nice; (because they should look on me as a peron of Quality) but agreed to my Landlords own erms. I told him I was lately come out of the countrey, and that my Trunks were not yet ariv'd, with a great many more fictions to prevent ufpition. At first I intended to take for no longer ime, than I could contrive a way to dispose of ny felf, and procure mans Apparrel; but pereiving how agreeable my Feature, Stature and Gesture were to my Female Weeds, I resolved to rie some projects in them. There was a young Gentleman that lay in the house, and took special orice of me as foon as I entered it, and as he rold nenext day, was overjoyed that I had determined obe a Lodger there. This young Bravo (which ad more money than wit) had prepared a Banmet for me, and requested the favour of me, that and himself might be received into my chamber: alleadged I could not do it in point of honour, nd therefore defired to be excused; but he prest te fo far (getting also his Landlady to intercede or him, that at last (though with much feeming nwillingness) I condescended thereunto. Very herry they were, but I tought it prudence to be eferv'd. My Amorist fo gazed on me, that I hought he would have devoured me with his yes, kissing me sometimes, which had like to have ude me disgorge my stomack in his face. For in by opinion, it is very unnatural, nay loathsome, or one man to kissanother, though of late too too unomary I know it is; yet I look on fuch as ufe , inclining to Sodomy, and have had the unhapinels to be acquainted with feveral, who using hat unnatural action, found it onely the Preludium

W

ere

eir

ia

OU;

uck

ere

nde

ent

m t

tio

hin

wit

Ye

e m

can

afin

on

icho

uai

Co

an .

din

mi

nifit

In

he (

urt

pon

ave

end

chi

M

dium to a more beaftly intention. In three days time we grew fo intimately acquainted, that ath he became impudent. One time as I paft by him he carch'd at me, endeavouring to intrude hi hand where he had no intereft , but he diditi rudely, that I verily thought he had spoiled ac I believe he imagined that he had caught meb the busk, which some Ladies wear very longit hide their rifing bellies. I showed my self me displessed at him for so doing, expressing myn fentment in imbittered words for lo great a Cris Next morning, he courted me to a Reconciliano with a Gold Warch: by that he should have bee well skilled in gaining female affections; forther is nothing prevails on them more than prefer and nothing gains fooner over them a total or quest, than the hopes of enjoying a fair promit Fortune. With much importunity I accepted Peace-offering, condicionally, that he thould veractempt the like offence. Nothing troub me more, then how to dreis my felf when cloaths were off. I durft not lay two things to ther, for fear I should mistake; there were fon baubles, I wished for a Pen and Ink, to write them what places they properly belonged Viewing them on the Table together, they ro fented to my thoughts Babel, or a greater con fion, and nothing but a miracle could prod Order out of them. I had fo improv'd my fell hourly practice, when none was with me, and fervation of others, that I had now the knacke I new modelled my ffeps, my former being large by three quarters; I could advantagion caft my eye, fet my face in a plat-form, and

e bi

it G

-

ne b

ngt

muc

by re

110

atio

bee

the

enti

con

edl

ide

oubl

en

tog

rite

rept

COR

rod

Celf

nde

ko

ng gio

words; my feet were my only Traytors, and erefore I alwaye, kept them close Prisoners, for eir greatnes (like the Devils cloven-foot) prosimed me the contrary Sex I imitated. Well, I ought it high time to be gone, not without ucking my Widgeon. Having a fit opportunity, erebeing none prefent but himfelf and I, I prended disappointment of money, and that my ents were not yet due, and therefore defired m to lend me 10 4 for eight days; at the termition of which time, I should not fail to return him with gratitude. He was much joy'd, that I ould favour him fo far, as to accept his fervice; with that flew like Lightning, fearing he would we fractured his Leg-bone for hafte to bring me emoney, which I received from him thankfully. canfed a Coach to be call'd, pretending I had finessinto the City. My Cully would have waiton me, which I ucterly refused, telling him theut privacy my affairs would prove ineffeul; whereupon he defifted.

Coming into Burchin-Lane, I went to a Salefan, and bought (pretendedly for my Maid) and minary yet handsome Peticoat and Wastcoat, mishing my self with all the Appurtenances re-

wifite for a Servant maid.

In flead of returning to my Lodging, I caused be Coachman to drive me to one of the principal furseries of Venus, Wherstones Park, For I lookt pon it as a matter of small import, to take my ave either of my young Gallant at home, or my andlord, since I had not left the least Mortgage thind me for sleeping.

Mother Cunny (rotell the truth) was the Nick-

or

pa

mo

def

he

ha

(ch

o t

pof

mift

did

ing

eav

face

exti

expe

C

rea

men

thou

men

won

wich

in pa

my

that

conv

hip,

folv

the r

with

nama of that Corpulent Matron, that with much demonstrations of joy received me into her houle neither could the forbear expressing her great line faction, in that her civil and houest deportment was fo generally taken notice of, as that it fould be an inducement to strangers to shelter themfelves under her Tutelage , preferring hermi Guardian or Turrels, before fo many throughly tried, and long experienced antient Gentlews men, both in City and Suburbs. She highly applauded both the Features and Complexion of my Face, not forgetting the right colour of my Hair, which was flaxen : the Statute of my Person infinitely pleased her, which was somewhat of the talleft : In fort , nothing difliked her , but the the faid I lookt as if I had a greater mind to ben, than bus; and to fight, than delight my Amoreia with fmiling infinuations

I had not been long in her house, before a rous ing Damme entred the house, (a conflant vibrant who meeting with my Guardian, was informed that there was a rich treasure discover'dinhe houle, and that none fould attempt to fpringth Mine, till he had made entrance by the first from In short, he was brought into the Chamber when I was, who at first behaved himself indifferent civil, and treated me nobly: But O Heavens how great was my confusion and diffraction, whe firength of Arguments and force of hands would not repel the fury of his luft, and that nothing would ferve his turn but lying with me. Id fended my felf manfully a long time; but feet it was impossible to hold out any longer, andthe I must be discovered, the next assault he made

forced me to cry out: this fo alarumed my Gentleman (concluding this outcry proceeded not from modelty and chafficy, but out of fome trapanning defign) that he drew his fword, and made toward he Stair-cafe, and running down with more hafte han good speed, overturned my kind Governess (that was puffing up the Stairs to my relief) and o both tumbled down together : fear had fo difpossest this huffling fellow of his senses, that he miftook my old Matron for the Bravo he thought did usually attend me, and so without once looking behind him, made his escape into the ffreet, leaving the piece of Antiquity not fo much defaced by time, as by this dismal accident so near extinguishing, that she was half undone in the vast expence of her Strong-waters, to bring her tongue to one fingle motion.

Coming to her felf, you may imagine how I was treated by her; but to be brief, I told her I could not brook such a course of life, wherein all injoyments were attended by ruine and destruction, although habited and cloathed in the seeming ornaments of real pleasure; adding moreover, that I would speedily leave her house, investing my self with a meaner garb, bestowing those I wore on her impart of satisfaction for what she suffered through my means. This proposition so well pleased her; that I had free liberty to do as I thought means

convenient herein.

nuch

oula

latis-

mene

ould

nem-

25 2

ghly

-OWS

ap-

my lair,

1 10-

fthe

that

eat.

retes

011

Exchanging my fine Madamship for plain Joanhip, my equipage being suitable for service, I resolved to apply my self to a Boarding School; and the rather, having observed ic to be more thronged with Beauties, than any other: My address pro-K 4

B

ere

ello

ene

gai

nde

ret

ng (

Gen

0

ay .

hen

id o

TOU

orn

0 6

ove ea

afte

els.

um

A

nati ed

De:

los

0 2

nd sif

OB ath

ID sif

rea

ved as fuccefsful as I could defire, for infente upon my motion , I was received in as a Menila Bur when I came to use the Toolid the house. the Kirchin, I handled them to fourvily, it mid those ceehing Giglets my fellow fervants, etc fplit with laughter. To add to my misfortune, those Variets one time when we had fome meste roaft, on purpose gor our of the way for a while to fee how I could behave my felf; and then Id fpit the meat fo monstroully strange, that coming into the Kitchin, they could not cell at first fiele what those joynts were called at fire. My action had proclaimed my ignorance in all Domeflick & fairs, fothat my Miffres could not but take none of me; the refult was, that I was alcogether unit for her fervice, and that the Tould do no less that difcharge me.

Fearing that my delign was now fruftrated, a my fair hopes of delight annihilated, I could we contain my tears from bedewing my face. If blubber'd eyes wrought fo powerfully with my Miftrefs, that I judged it now the fittel in in broken Accents to mollifie her anger, and fi referve my place in her fervice. Whereupon ltd her a great many formal and plaufible lies, we methodized; that I had all my life time lived! an obscure Village amongst rude and ill-bredpo pie, and therefore knew nothing; that it was !! defire to learn, not fo much valuing wages asd perience, and it was for that intent I had tent red my fervice. The good old Gentlewoman ben much pleased with my freedom, presently orde ed the Maids that without their grinning and gleting, they hould frew me any thing I under

flood not.

Bile

o sid

nade

even

une

atto

bile,

ming

fight

k Al

Otio

unfi than

100

1 1

cimi

tol

edi

pce

15 III

end cin By diligent observing, I gained shortly an indiferent knowledge: Though I lay with one of my ellow servants every night, yet judged it no pruence to discover to her my Sex (though much gainst the hair) till I had by external kindnesses ideared her to me. I went through my business retty handily, giving a general satisfaction, gainng dayly an interest upon the loves of the young sentlewomen.

Othe hine inexpressible petulances that dayly, ay, hourly past between me and some other of hem; and so crasty I was grown, that I persectly idequitering a modest maiden. Sometimes we sould retire three or sour of us into a private orner, yet not so obscure but that we intended to be seen by some man or other we had afore disovered; and then as if affeighted by an unexceed surprize, squeak out, and then with strange afte endeavour to hide our pretended shame sacedass. Thus concurring and suiting my self to their umours, I had all the freedome I could defire.

And now I thought it high time to handle the natter for which I came about; for indeed flesh and blood could hold out no longer. One night perceived my Bedfellow could not in the least sole her eyes, continually sighing and tumbling o and fru, sometimes laying her leg over me, and at other times hugging me within her arms, sif I had been in a press. At first I thought this commotion or perturbation proceeded from Sympathy, as questionless in part it did; for I found apprimentally by my self that my heart did beat is if it would have forced its passage through my reast.

1

03

de

is

9 100

it

u;

len

or h

Cal

era

be y

OW

efte

eep

ie, i

esol

cod

We

oin

ner

liftr Il et

ithe

out

bic

hic

dera

new

Af

adio

hat

ast.

I thought I could do no less then ask thean why the was thus reftlefs. At firft , fighs were h onely answers, till at last (I pressing her mich Poor thing the melted into tears. As foon as he eyes had given over deluging, and that her har would give her leave to speak ; Jone (faid the, to to I called my felf) if thou will keep my feeren I will tell thee my whole heart. Having promite to do that, whereupon she began thus to relate her flory. Our Coachman for feveral years hel shown me more then common respect, and inde though I have concealed that affection I everbe him, yet I could not but now and then give him flight occasions of hope: as the moneths wherein we lived together added to our age, fo did it it true life & vigour to our loves, which increased much and faft, that I could hide mine no longer But herein confilts my milery, that our affection aim at different ends; I fain would marry him he is onely for prefent enjoyment, and finding obstinate, and not in the least yeilding to his rous follicitations, begings to flight me, and of with fuch before my face, that I know will fu render their Maiden-forts upon the first Summon Now Dear Joan, let me tell thee, I can holdouts longer, but am resolved to give him all the oppor tunity of privacy I can invent, upon their motion offered, I will entertain it. I diffwid her from this rath resolution with as much rett as I could utter; inculcating the danger of bei gotren with child, with all its aggravations: having obtained his ends, his love would be to verted into loathing; and he having rejected as his object, none that knew her would the

Cail

re b

ruch'

ty he

fiear

e, for

: rets

miled

relate back

nden r bon

eren t ad

fedf

nger

Aid

him

1g m

300

deop

fur

non utp

ied rada cala cala cala cala cala

res an object that may make an honeft wife ; rwho would marry a whore, but to entail the ox on his progeny? What ever I alleadged, the lued not. Seeing the was full bent , I thought is the critical hour to discover my felt to her. ome, come (faid I) I will quickly put you out of come it with John, and cure this love that formuch troubles u; and fo I did, after which I enjoyned her ence; which I thought the would have done other own interest fakes which the did for a while. came at length to be very much beloved in geeral. It was the custome almost every night for beyoung Gentlewomen to run skittility up and own into one anothers Chambers; and I was for eftered with them, that they would not let me eep. But I had an excellent Guardian in bed with e, that would not let any of them come in to us, folving to monopolize me to her felf. It was cod sport to observe how this Maid always folwed me as my hadow, and whatever I was oing, the would have a hand in it with me. What nendlefs work we made in making the beds ! Our liftress faw her work very much neglected, laying I the blame upon my Bedfellow; and indeed nor whom cause: for her mind was so employed aout thinking on night, that shed did little all days bich my Mittress perceiving, turned her away; hich was no small joy to me, if for no other conderation then her extream fondnels, which I new would betray us both in the end.

After the departure of my Bedfellow, the young adies pittying my loneness in the night, redrest hat solitude by their welcome presence. The first hat came had like to have spoiled all by her

fqeaking,

bil

fo

fe8

efs.

e l

n

pid

die

uc

ppe

the

rol

em

fqueaking, but some of her Associates runningh know what was the matter, she readily told the she thought there was a Mouse in the bed: the satisfied, they departed, and I enjoyned her a I did the other, silence: but alss! all Injunction on Women to keep asceret, are but as so many perswasions to divulge it. Notwithstanding I had so enjoyned her secrecy, yet she made it know to some that she entertained a peculiar respection, intending they should participate with her in what she enjoyed. This discovery did put me to an extream hard task; I should never have undergoe it, had not variety of such sweet smelling sole buds encouraged me.

Thus frequently each night did I repeat
My uncontrouled possions; and for heat,
And active leveliness, I thought that none
Could stand with me incompetition.
Twas then, forgetful wretch, that I a kiss
Did oft prefer before a greater bliss.
What did I care? my carnal joys did swell;
So slighted Heaven, and ne're feared Hell:
But let me benceforth learn to slight those toys,
And set my heart upon Celestial joys.

In the very height of these my jollities, I could not forbear thinking sometimes on my etems condition; but custome and opportunity had absolutely inslaved me, that good thoughts which were but seldom, wrought little good effects upon me. But if my souls welfare would not determ from these soul and wicked acts, yet leve to my present mortall condition, compelled me for

ng to then then then thous nany I but

t for whe

201

ad fi

upot

hile to defift, and by flying those embraces I lateto hotly purfued, thun those complicated mifiefs which were approprinquant, the undeniable Reds of my immoderate and deftructive wantones. My approaching danger was too too visible, el observed that some of the Gentlewomen ben to find ftrange alterations in their bodies, with equent qualms coming over their flomacks. hich made me fick to be gone; and in this manner did plot my escape, My Miftris having a Son uch about my flature, and one time finding a fit portunity, I got a fuit of cloachs of his, with ther perquifits, which I put on , restfuning my roper flape and habit, and fo with flying colours urched off, infulting over the conquest of fo ma-Maiden-heads, leaving the quondam poffeffors hereof to deplore their enfuing mifery, and conemn their own rash folly.

CHAP.

ele

eid

LOT

Ay er l

met ed :

ita ere

fion

ver atte

.,

ronte

16

bus

ef,

itrs

dio

er a

edie

oma

beir

oufe

W

0 mt 77

y A

afin

le T

A

ery

on lotte

**** Sidainstanuent, assurator

CHAP. XIV.

What a Trick be ferved a young man of his Acqua tance, whom he met withal accidentally; bie was pinched with bunger, and what wayer be s vented to kill it.

Made all the speed I could to London, know I the largeness of that Vast City would after conveniency for my concealment. But then closths much troubled me, knowing nothing would betray me fooner than they. Whill! Rudying all imaginable wayes for my prefervation fuch an opportunity presented it felf, that then it was plainly feen the Fates had decreed of to favour my enterprizes. As I faid, walkingth freets, and ruminating what was best to done, met with a young Man of my acquaintance, feeing me, ran and caught me in his Arms, a with very much joy we congratulated each other and fo as it is usual when Friends meet, wen drink together. Over our cups, I began to quire after his condition; He shook his head, " to related to me a fad flory, which in effect s to this purpose in his own words.

Dearest Friend, fince last I fam you, never young Man so unfortunate as my felf, the cause then I can impute to nothing more than felf-conceit, over-much credulity; which by the sequel you will ple understand. For perceiving that my Mistress her me more then a common respect, I concluded that

bigh

be a

0210

OW

affo

CN I

ochi

T

atio

here

of d

ngd

ne,

, 1

othe

D

toi

1 54

1 1

dentertained some private favour for me within breaft , fo that I began to be puft up with conceit; deding my duty, and now despising the Chamberid, who was before the only Saint I made nightly eraizons to; withal, I carried my felf fo imperifly, that my Mafter was not very well affured wheet be durft command or no. My Miftress would setimes beartily laugh , to fee bow ridiculous I cared my felf; which I looked upon a a fingular favour. inaking ber smiles for tokens of ber love, when they ere no other than the apparent Symptomes of ber detion. Observing bow affable and pleasing the was, I ver considered the generality of it, so that my felfattering noddle supposed this carriage particular to e, and thereupon interpreted this ber complacencie rong affection; and by reason the was frequently marry ed jocose, I concluded ber salacious or Lecberous. bus by the falfe lights of misconstruction and easie beef, I was led into Loves Labyrinth; My Mafters afairs was less regarded than my Mistress supposed aft dion. I fine, I judged it absolutely necessary to make er acquainted with my Amorous Pafton, and no exedient better than by Letter. My Mistress (as it is cuomary with Citizens Wives to light the Candle of beir Husbands estates at both ends) bad ber Countryoufe, to which I was fent by my Master, with some bottles Wine, preparatory for a Feast intended for the acommodation of some special Friends: arriving, I found y Mistress bad fent ber Maid to London about some afiness, at which I bless'd my propitious stars, to direct to thit ber in such a fortunate and most desired hour.

After I bad delivered my Miffage, I began to talk ery familiar with my Miffres. the with a smiling nuntenance, ask'd me, What I meant? not in the

187

eã i

cial

oth

e at

beni

this

mre[]

eft ti

reedi

1 th

one g

ceab

le in

\$ 10

e on

r fei

The

d m

terw

with ther

Cup

Lon

I fo

For

0 c

Den

Iw

vio

least checking my prefumption, which made me m arrogant and bold; telling ber , I was her eterni devoted Servant; fhe answered me , I was bonn to be her Servant for a time , and that I mil when commanded, obey her pleafure : to which is word, I added in my thoughts the Epithice Venere supposing the meant not to bave left it out; withth Ireplyed, Miftres, I fould not deem my worthy to be your Servant, if my resolution ha not ingaged me to be fo perpetually; as form affection, it shall dayly anticipate your define you shall not need to lay your commands on me fince my thoughts shall be folely imployed incom triving wayes how we may injoy each other, the mutual fatisfaction of us both. At wo ch wal the fell into an excess of laughter, (which I judge the effects of joy) and then asked me, Whether I w Mad? I answered, No, unless too much love hi made me fo; Dearest Miffres, read but this Pe per, and I hope that will better inform you.

Here he stope, pulling out of his pocker acque thereof, which was to my best remembrance

this purpose.

Dearest Mistrels,

Requestly revolving in my thoughts the condition I now am in, Despair stands ready to seize me, in the consideration and knowledge of your commissions. Nature, draws me out of its ruinating Jaws. What reflect again on the disparity of our Fortunes, and it is your Indentured Vosful that thus prostrates bits section at your feet, Licar one blast of your just indication will suddainly sosperack all my hopes. Its

my error is overmuch confidence, for which I ma) ed ruine, which commonly attends raft Attempts 5 cially daring to fail in the narrow Seas , without other Pilet than blind Love; and if I fould arear my defired Port , I cannot deliver my Goods bout fealing Custome. But waving all difficulises this Nature , confider that Love muft needs bemeffential, that is not drawn from any other ineft than reciprecat enjoyment; and it muft needs be seeding frong and eminent too, that will force its ribrough the greatest bazards. Signifie my Pardon one gracious fmile, for what I have fo boldly (yet ceably) discovered , and I shall efteem my condition le inferior to what is Celiftial; which is no bappito me, without the auspitious beams of your favour ne on me. And fo subscribe my felf according as r fentence shall be , eitber the

CH

ben l

safe

Most happy, or most miserable.

The Verses that were annext to the Letter, he done he got a Rimer to compose for him, which terwards he found stoln out of several Authors; ine out of one, and a half out of another, and with the course thred of his brain botch'd to ther; which were these:

Cupid did wound my beart; I bid the grief
Long time, but durst not seek for your relief;
I found the smart increased on that score,
For wounds, if not well search'd, but rankle more.
O cure me quickly then, or else I die;
Deny not, since there's none but you and I.

I withdrew as foon as I had delivered my Paper, ving her leave to read in private, what my Love had

H

di

fu

01

ic s

de

re

thi e 0

igh

en

fa

for

ter

th

wly

gt

uife

cep

rce

mi

his

11:,

IS U

ree

Le

DOE

fs i

be

Drn

had distated. About a quarter of an hour after called me to her, affuring me in a day ort should receive an answer to the purpose; and absconding her displeasure, the fent me with expedition home again. After the expiration three dayes, the came home to her City-honfer night the pretended some indisposition of both and defired to lie by her felf; which hearing thought my joy would prove a Traytor to my poled happinels; the takes an occasion to telli About twelve at night I might come to ber Beden ber, the door whereof she would leave open form purpofe. In the mean time, the thewed my Mi the Letter, acquainting him with the whole finels. According to the time appointed, I ente the Chamber in my fhirt; approaching the Be I began to pour out my Amorous Expressions as I had one leg upon the Bed-fide, ready to a the Bed, where I thought my Mistress had tended my pleasure, I thought the Devil waited on my Posteriors, correcting me for making more hafte. The first lash was secon with three or four more in an inflant, w made me caper up and down fo nimbly about Room, that for my life I could not find thed at laft I did; speed was now the onely Guard I had left, and fo without psufing long upon I made but one ftep of the first pair of Stairs top to the bottom, which had liked to havels me; before I could recover my felf, my Mafter with me again , which put freih expedition me; and to farting up, I leapt down will

pext pair, and tumbled down the reft. By

time he had loft the cord of his Whip, and les

frer

or to

cion

ule:

ang

oy i

l-di

TH

Ma

ole

ente

e Be

ns

0 (1

nadi

ril I

for

con

100

e do

ard

pon rs fi

e las

fter

on i

alfe

fett

he might fpoil me with the flick, defifted, ding me go to bed, left I thould catch cold affo great a heat , and fo with two or three partblows I got into my chamber, where I fell os deep consultation with my felf, the result it was this; I rook my curtains and theees, and dehem together, and then faftned one end reof to the Window; after this I went out of Window, and fo flid: by that time I was hin en half flory of the ground, the knot of e of the Gurtains flipt, fo that falling from that ight, I thought that every bone in my body had en absolutely broken. Knowing it was no wayes erolie there and cry God belp me, I railed my fas well as I could, but I had not walked far, fore I found my felf in no condition of going; berefore I resolved to lie under the next Stall. the Devil would have it, I found a Coblers Stall wly broke open that very night: never questiongthe place, I crept in, and notwithflanding my uife by the fall, and whipping besides, I fell fait kep, so soundly, that I awaked not, till I was reed to it with an horse-pox. For the Cobler ming to work early in the morning (according his cultome) found his door broken open; with at, he made an hideous noise, crying out, He is undone; for the day before he had laid out ree shillings four pence, which was all his stock Leather; all which was stoln, with many old boes, nay his very working implements; doubtis it was done by one of his own Fraternity, that ed informed himself of his late great purchase. he Cobler entring his Stall , found me in one orner faft alleep. He took no other course to a-

G

0

1

de

h

e (

gt

et

fa

for

er

th

w

gt

uif

ee

rce

mi

bi

a:,

SL

ree

Le

poe

ls i

d

be

rn

146

had dictated. About a quarter of an hour afier called me to her, affuring me in a day ort thould receive an answer to the purpose; and absconding her displeasure, the sent me with expedition home again. After the expiration three dayes, the came home to her City-houles night the pretended some indisposition of bo thought my joy would prove a Traytor to my posed happines; the takes an occasion to tell About twelve at night I might come to ber Bedd ber, the door whereof she would leave open form purpofe. In the mean time, the thewed my Mi the Letter, acquainting him with the whole finess. According to the time appointed, I ente the Chamber in my thirt; approaching the B I began to pour out my Amorous Expressions as I had one leg upon the Bed-fide, ready to a the Bed, where I thought my Miftress had tended my pleasure, I thought the Devil waited on my Posteriors, correcting me for making more hafte. The first lash was secon with three or four more in an inflant, made me caper up and down fo nimbly about Room, that for my life I could not find thed at last 1 did; speed was now the onely Gund I had left, and fo without paufing long upon I made but one flep of the first pair of Stains top to the bottom, which had liked to havele me; before I could recover my felf, my Mafter with me again , which put fresh expedition me; and to farting up, I leapt down bill next pair, and tumbled down the reft. Bi time he had loft the cord of his Whip, and

ife

0110

with

ation

oule:

f bot

ring.

my

tell

d-ch

0F

Ma

ente

ne Bi

onsi

tod

had

vil

for

200

DOUL

hed

uard

irs for

ve las

after

ion

half

l fell

he might spoil me with the flick, defifted, ding me go to bed, left I thould catch cold affo great a heat , and fo with two or three partblows I got into my chamber, where I tell os deep consultation with my felf, the refult twas this; I rook my curtains and theets, and them together, and then faftned one end reof to the Window; after this I went out of Window, and fo flid : by that time I was hin on half flory of the ground, the knot of of the Gurtains flipt, fo that falling from that ght, I thought that every bone in my body had en absolutely broken. Knowing it was no wayes erolie there and cry God belp me, I railed my fas well as I could, but I had not walked far, fore I found my felf in no condition of going; erefore I resolved to lie under the next Stall. the Devil would have it, I found a Coblers Stall wly broke open that very night: never questionthe place, I crept in, and notwithfranding my uise by the fall, and whipping besides, I fell fait rep, fo foundly, that I awaked not, till I was reed to it with an horse-pox. For the Cobler ming to work early in the morning (according his custome) found his door broken open; with at, he made an hideous noise, crying out, He is undone; for the day before he had laid out ree shillings four pence, which was all his stock Leather; all which was foln, with many old poes, nay his very working implements; doubtis it was done by one of his own Fraternity, that d informed himself of his late great purchase. be Cobler entring his Scall , found me in one rner fast alleep. He took no other course to a-

che

pe.

fr

.

eir

ī.

eX(

ou

00

tle

ha

bel

ng

tele

ory

rea

e

y i

pen

om

ลก

ny

h

Th Nit

> ue ho

148 wake me, than dragging me by the heels on my Den, into the Screet, erying out, The had got one of the Rogues, and without any adoe, fell upon me, buffering me with his firt, a treading me underneath his feet, making him both my Judge and Executioner: Thus youlee mischief attends the others heels. I begged his a pittiful manner to let me alone, and I we confess to him all I knew, defiring him togor me to the next Ale-house, which accordingly did. I vowed to him I was no ways acceffary to wrong, informing him as much as I thoughton venient of my fufferings, flewing him where plight I was in; relating, it was my Mafters crud that was the cause of all this, and no other fault mine, then flaying the last night out a littless long. The Cobler feemed to commiferate my fery, asking me forgiveness for what he hadde and fo we parted. Since, by the kindnels of age

fould fo happily meer. After this we drank very (martly, but, I for not all this while my defign on him. Afterthe had pitied him, and lamented his fad misforum I thought it high time to put my Plot in eur tion : in order thereunto, I demanded what de rence he would take between my Hat and his, Cloak and mine; there being fmall matter of vantage in the exchange, we agreed to go to him cap. In fine, There was not any thing about the wearing cloaths but we interchanged : fcarcel I un-cased my felf, & put on my Friends cloth but in came one that had dogged me, attend

natured Widow (where I lie) I have recovered

hurts and ftrength, and now am overjoyed

hind

high

Work

300

gly

y to

he co

vol.

crud

fault

clem

m7 a

dos

a 900

reds

exid

di

is,

hand

t us a ce h

achi

the Confiable, with a Warrant to feize me, who y knew by no other token but my Boardingfreffes Sons garments I had ftolen for my ef-. They forthwith laid hold on my Companion, nding them on him) celling him, He (bould ferely fuffer for the wrong be did bis Miftress , in the wie of ber boufe. Full of horror and amazement. beseeched them not to carry him before his freis, knowing how much he had offended her, would have no mercy on him; this confirmed eir belief, that they had found out the Offenr. The more he intreated, the more deaf and exorable were they; and whilft they were bufied, out their mistaken Criminal-Prisoner, I took occasion to give them the flip, knowing that a de further discourle would redifie their Error. hat they did with him I know not, neither durft beso inquisitive to understand : wherefore, leang him to the mercy of fuch, as would fnew but ttle to him, I shall proceed forwards in my own ory. My flock was now very small; how to inreafeit, I knew nor. My invention was daily on e Rack, to find our expedient wayes to supply y necessary expence. But my money being all ent, my belly began to grumble out infufferable omplaints against me, seeming to charge me with ant of ingenuity and industry, fince I injoyed ly liberty; for want that man cannor, which ants not that. Alas, what hould I do? I uled hat means I could, having no better experience. There was not a Billiard- Table, Boards-End, or Nine-Pin-yard, that I did not daily visit, frewenting fuch as had the greatest refort : in a hort time I learned the art of Spunging fo perfeetly, L2

e i

gai

ut

Wa

12

rue

ime

erii

an

eck

bat

nı

fit

ha

eek

hat

ru

ers

00

be f

ill

nd

o te

eck

igb

mle

Su

иШ

reg

Foit

by

fedly, that I had the Title of Spunge-MafterGm conferred upon me. In those places l'learned take Tobacco, which was the chiefest part of food; living in a manner by Smoak, as the melion by Air. I fed to lightly, that I durfing abroad in a high wind; neither durft fight. one fingle ftroak should have hazarded my diffe tion; continual drinking had so washed me, my body was transparent, you might have within me (without diffection) the motion the heart; you could have observed but little to my liver, it long fince had loft its ufeing conveyance of the blood, for my ftomack hade thing therein contained to supply it; like an la a Court-Kitchin out of Term-time. In fhort, in peared like a walking Skeleten. I had feverall gestions within me to proffer my felf againto Mafter; but the fhame to be feen in that con tion, deterred me; wherefore, I resolved to ther it out a little longer, and try whether for would once more be favourable to me. My clo were indifferent good, which could not but cure me credit, if I would make experiment. means whereof I had gotten an handiome lodg chamber. It was a publick house of entertainm to that here I thought I hould have meat, di and lodging for chalk, and chalk for nothing called freely for what was in the house, which readily brought me; but when the fervantit held with what celerity, (Hocus like) and clean conveyance, I had disposed of what was belo me, they verily believed in one week I woulden a dearth in the house if I flaid; wherefore, of the fervants acquainted her Miftress with the

roed

rt of

the C

nor

ht.l

diffs

e, n

ve for

tion

iecle

in

rade

n la

t, is

2 6

101

con

0

on

loat

t pr

nt. I

dni

2

h es

21

e had observed , alleadging farther invectively gainst me, That I looked like one of those lean cafts which have nothing given them to feed on, ut vertuous and honest Women; that she believed was the Genius of fome hunger-flarved wretch . rafhaddow without a Substance, (which was very rue as to my pocket.) When I thought it was mero go to Bed , I call'd for a candle , not matering whether I called for a Reckoning. But my andlady did; for faid the , Sir, It is our custome to ecken with our Lodgers every night what they have bat day, and once a week to discharge their loaging. ntruth I did intend to have discharged my self fit before the week had been out. I knew nor that at prefent to answer her, but I was feldom to eek in such cases. I defired her to be content for hat night, on the morrow I would have my frunks brought to her house, making it my Quarers for some time; and that the should find me a oon Companion , drinking freely : I believe fo , be faid, you will be bere for some time, or may be you ill make this your Refuge or Sancivary for one night; nd then you fay you will drink freely too, give me leave tell you, you meant at free cost. Sir, give me my eckoning now, or you shall bave no lodging here this ight. Doyou suspect me Landlady, faid 1? Refect ou, faid the, (miffaking the word) for what grounds, mless I knew you better? and yet I doubt I shall know ou too well. That's a good one indeed, respect a skinull of Bones; a bag of Chesmen; a bundle of small eggot-sticks. Why, thou Haberdasher of small wares, lost thou think I will respect thee otherways than for by moneys? unless I spould be so mad as to fall in love ith Famine. Come, give me my reckoning first, and I Mall

res bi

hev

y (

WE

at

ofic

hey

nge

arn

is

or f

D PI

blv

hey

hei

hei

ay i

ip t

om t ha

our

ny

n in

11

lo

nua

le he

deg

diff

M CI

shall talk with you in another Dialett; if not, Ifel fet my Currs at thee (the Tapiter and Hoftler) the Shall worry thy gibb'd Catfhip. Hearing her lay lo, thinking the passage had been clear, I betook a felf to flight; but running thorow the Entry, in my belly directly against the Tapsters leg , thatle over the bench on which he flept. I ran fofien ly, that I shoved his head so violently against board rais'd at the end of the bench, that Im his neck double; the knock likewise had like have turn'd that little brains he had within li head. As for my own part, I thought that his for had run quite into my belly, and that pulling out he had left his shooe behind. Before Ito rife, I had three or four about me, which I though would have limbed me, as boys falling our their cocks on Sbrove-Tuesday. At that time would have spared them one limb, provided in would have contented them. But there was n mercy to be had at their hands, especially fhrill note of their Miftreffes perpetually mon Tongue, founding a charge in their ears. Be tyred with me, they would be revenged of cloaths. They would have ftript me (I think the naked) for my Reckoning, but that one faid, bis Cloak Suffice; at which, another pulled for oully at it, that miraculoully, without rental that thin transparent garment , he got it all the cape. In this condition I was brought being my new Landlady ; I asked her what was to po Sirrab (faid fhe) more then thou baft in thy Pund (2 s. 4 d.) As well as I could fpeak, I demand how it came to be fo much. Why, (faid the) the for Beef 1 8. for Bread 4 d. fix pipes of Tobacco,

10,

In

acla

erg

Ad

mai ke t

in b

s for

COL

OUE

01

ime d the

35 1

Bei

of a

t fa

in tur

ntin

befor

respots of Ale; all this thou badit in lefs then balf bour. I would not contradict her , though I newit was near an hour; I defired her to keep Clock for the reckoning, but durft not threaten er for her abuse. Being about Hay- making time. walked out into the Fields, retolving to fpend at night in contemplation. I had now time to ofder the damage I fuftained in this skirmifh : ey had carried away all my Ribbands with their ngers, otherwise my cloaths received the least arm. My Nofe refembled a black pudding before is boyled, and my Eyes were fled into my head or fear of fuch melancholy meat. My Cheeks were puft up with swelling pride, that they were reolved to close up the portals of my Opticks, that hey might not be eye-witnesses of the height of heir ambition. My Ears were fo maulled with heir fl-fly Hammers, that I heard a peal within ny head for joy, I suppose, that my eyes had taken p their relidence with my brains. At laft I felt omething about my thoulders; at first I thought thad been the weight of the blows, but feeling, ound it a part of my friend that fill hung about ny neck, and would not leave me; which put me n minde of that faithful Cloak that would never cave its Mafter, although his Mafter had attempted il ways imaginable to leave it. It must needs fay, loved my Cloak so well, as that it grieved me much to be compelled to part with it. It had been fervant to fervants, ever fince the fetting up of he firft Billiard-table, whence it deriv'd its Pedegree. Being deprived of its imployment, and disposses of its antient habitation, its heart-strings rere ready to break, and being not able to take a nap nap for grief, turned changeling. The young man I had it of, told me, that from the fifteenth successively, it was descended to him; but they were unworthy to him, that having had his best days, would turn him off in his extream old age. I have him so fresh in my memory, that I cannot but condole his loss.

Clock, if I may fo call thee, though thou art Thus ravill'd from me, don't abruptly part. Then didit not take diftafte, and fo art gon. Caufe once I cali'd thee a meer banger on. 'Imas but in jest; for bad I now my will , I'de bav: thee for to bang about me ftil. Now I may tax thee juftly, for I fee That now th' art nothing elfe but levitie; Nay when I had thee , fearcely did I know Sometimes whether I had thee on or no. Thou wert fo thin, and light, that some have thought Thee made of that fame web Abrachne wrought, And fay th'art ufeleft now , unlefs men put Thee like a Cooweb to a finger cut. I love thee still, for better and for worse; He that divorc'd us, let bim bave my curfe. Sure'swas a red Nos'd fellow, for I know, He coming near, it was but touch and go. But let bim keep thee, for thou'lt uf less be To bim ; thick cloaths fuit best with knavery.

Day appearing, I got me a flick out of a hedge, and so walked in Querpo into the City. I walked up and down, but met with none of my acquaintance on whom I might fasten on as a bur. Noon approaching, my belly began to Chime, I thought

man fucwere eys, have

ugbt

ge, dup nce

ght all

all the mest in East-cheap would not lay that foirit hunger had raifed within me. Coming by a bakers shop, I pretended to be ignorant of the City, & as I was asking him the way to fuch a place, not caring what, I happily fecured a penny loaf, which I carried off undiscovered; I thought it not good to cumber my pocket with it, wherefore at two bits I gave it my belly to carry. Surely at that time I had an Offriches flomack; every thing I put into my mouth, paffed through me like Quickfilver. Going a little farther, I came to an Ordinary, where I faw two fitting in a lower Room expeding their meat: I fate me down in the next little box to them. Immediately there was brought to them powdred Beef and Turnips; the young Man that ferved them, came to me, demanding what I would have, I bid him let me alone, and not speak too loud, for those two which were next me, were my very good friends, and I would flarile them by and by with my unexpected appearance; at which he left me. Finding my opportunity, I flipt my hands through a whole, in the form of an heart, which was in the partition that divided us, and laying hold on the Turnips, Ispake aloud, You hoggs, are ye at the Roots ! I will make one among you infantly, and so brought out my handful; having devoured them in a trice, prefented my felf to their view, and fare down with them : Gentlemen , faid I , excufe my frollick , I am in a merry bumour to day. They concluded what I said to be a truth, and bad me welcome. Nay, faid I, meat will come infantly as a supply; and foit had need, for we made a clear board immediately. Seeing this, they called the boy, taxing him for

in

gi

to

m

ti

ti

S

fi

A

b

b

C

floth, that he did not bring my meat. Sir, faid he, the Gentleman did not order me to bring any; at which they frown'd, and began to charge me with incivility. What are ye angry, faid 1? To which they replied Affirmatively: If so, I answered, (laying my hand upon a full pot of Ale) I value your anger no more than the drinking this Pot, which I wallowed at two gulps, and so bid them farewel; leaving them to call for another Ordinary.



CHAP. XV.

How be had like to bave been transported, being taken up by Kid-napper, vulgarly called a Spirit.

Taking satisfied my stomach, I walked along with much more courage then before; which had been to little purpose, had I not had a stick in my hand: For there was hardly a dog in the street (which I went through) that gave me not his grinning Salutation, and would when my back was turned (knowing else I would never have suffered their humility) have kist my very beels, had not my stick prevented their Snearing Dog-ships mouths. I have wondred often why Doggs will bark so incessantly at the sight of a Tinker, Pedlar, Tom-a-Bedlam, nay, any suspicious sellow, till I found it my self by experience, that by natural instinct they know and hate the scent

bis

38

ich

d,

lue

rich

el ;

ken

ong

ich

the

not

ave

els ,

02-

ggs

fel-

hat ent of of a Rogue. My course of life appeared so idle (by my lazy stalking and gaping this way and that , tometimes flanding fill and feriously viewing what deferved not a minutes observance) that the Beadle took hold on me, relling me it was great pitty that fuch a lufty young Man should want imployment, and therefore would help me to fome : but understanding from him that it must be in Bridewel, my legga failed me, shewing thereby how unwilling they were to be accessary to the punishment which would be inflicted on my back: at leng h by pitiful looks, and many intreaties, I got clear of him, but fell immediately foul with an evil Spirit, or a Seducer of Perfons to the Indies. Well may he be called a Spirit, fince his nature is like the Devils, to seduce any ne meets withal, whom he can perswade with allurements and deluding falfities to his purpose.

After he had asked me many impertinent quefions, he invited me to drink with him; I ingeniously told him I had not a penny, otherwise his motion would be acceptable to me. At which he cast up his eyes to Heaven, and laying his hands on his breast, Alas poor young Man, said he, what pitty it is such a fellow as thou art shoulds want money; which argues thou art both destitute of friends, and an imployment also. Well, I'le say no more for the present, but before we part i'le study some way or other for thy advantage, which I shall do meetly out of commisseration to the miserableness of thy condition, as also out of respect to thy Father, whom I am consident I have heretofore known, by the resemblance thou bearest him in thy Countenance. I could but smile to my self to hear how this Rascal dissembled; not discovering my thoughts, I willingly went with him to drink, resolving to see what the event would be; after he had paused a while, Well, said he, I have found it.

There is a Merchant an intimate friend of mine that wants a Store-house-keeper; Now if you can caft accompts ever fo indifferently, you shall find entertainment from him, and 40 1. per annum for encouragement. I told him that I joyfully accepted his kind proffer, and that I should refer my felf to be disposed of as he should think fit. With that he imbraced me, faying, within two days I should go aboard the Ship where the Merchant was, who would go along with me to Virginia (where he pretended the Merchants Plantation lay) in the mean time, you shall go along with me to my house, where you shall be, and shall receive from me what your necessities require. I had heard before, how feveral had been ferved in this kind, fo that being forewarned, I was fore armed: premonitus, premunitus. He carried me away presently to Wapping, and housed me, To the intent he might oblige me to be his, he behaved himself extraordinary friendly; and that be might let me fee that be made no diffinction between me and his other friends, he brought me'into a Room where half a score were all taking Tobacco: the place was so narrow wherein they were, that they had no more space left, than what was for the standing of a small table. Methought their mouths together resembled a fact

Couns of Chimneys, being in a manner totally obscured hear by the smoak that came from them; for there vering was little discernable but smoak, and the glowdrink, ing coals of their pipes. Certainly the smell of after this Room would have out-done Affa Fatida, or burned Feathers in the Cure of Ladies troubled I have with the Fits of the Mother. As to the fight. the place resembled Hell, so did it likewise as to fmine is feent; compounded of the perfume of flinking ou can Tobacco and Tarpawlin. So that I concluded Il find the refemblance most proper. GHHAM

> Is Hell damn'd fouls, fire, Smoak, and frink appear. Then this is Hell, for those four things were bere.

Iwas feated between two, left I hould give

them to flip.

yfully

drefer nk fit.

ntwo Mer-

O Vir-

anta-

along

, and

quire.

n fer-

Was

arried

d me.

s, be

dehar

action

oughe

king

chey

chan

Me.

0

Azck

After I had been there a he while, the Cloud of their smoak was somewhat diffipated, so that I could difcern two more in my own condemnation : but alas poor Sheep, they ne're confidered where they were going, it was enough for them tobe freed from a feven years Apprenticethip, under the Tyranny of a rigid Mafter (as they judged it, coming but lately from fucking the breaks of a too indulgent Mother) and not weighing (as I know not how they should) the flavery they must undergo for five years, amongst Bruces in foreign parts, little inferior to thes which they luffer who are Gally flaves. There was little discourse amongit them , but the pleasantness of the soyl of that Continent we were defigned for, (out of a defign to make us swallow their gilded Pills of Ruine) & the temperature of the Air, the plenty of Fowl and Fish of all forts; the little labour that is performed or expected having so little trouble in it, that it rather may be accounted a pastime than any thing of punishment; and then to sweeten us on the farther, they insisted on the pliane loving natures of the Women there; all which they used as baits to catch us filly Gudgeons. As for my own part, I said but little but what tended to the approbation of what they said.

For all my aim (as I related before) was to underftand the drift of this Rogue, and then endeavour to get what I could from him. By this time Supper was talkt of by our Mafters; fo choice they were in their dyet, that they could not agree what to have. At last one stands up, and proclaiming filence, faid, that a Dish of Bruis was the most Princely Dift of any. And to tell you truly, by his looks, I thought he had been begot juft as his Mother had pur a Sop into her mouth, of that Stomach-murdering ftuff, the greafe running about her chops, which pleafing her fancy, Aruck so deep an impression in the imagination upon her conception, that the face of that thing the brought forth, looke much like a Toast soaking in a Cooks Dripping pan.

That he might perswade the rest this way to indugle his appetite, he added farther, that it was a Dish would not be expensive, and soon ready. My Landlady to back him on, said, she had some skimmings of the pot, which she had been collecting these three moneths, some whereof she que-

flioned

e

0

fioned not but to procure, and let her alone to order it fo, that we should fay we never had a

better Difh aboard in our lives.

Another contradicting him, preferred a bowl of Peafe-portage before the cheifeft meat whatever, that he could never look into the pot and fee them boyl round, but that his heart leapt within him , and kept time with their motion. My mafter (that was their Senior) scorned to be controlled in his fancy; and therefore politively determined to have some Poor John, Swearing that the Great Mogul did eat nothing else thrice a week, and that Atabalipa (that Indian King whom Contex conquered) caused a sacrifice every day to be made of them to his Idol, commanding them tobe laid on an Altar made of some coals of fire, then the fat of some beaft rubbed thereon, (because they had no Butter) and so presented to the Idol, afterwards to the King, which he did ent with inexpressible fatisfaction. Order was given that his delicate fare should be provided. Though they did beat it most unmercifully, yet it would not mild, resolving rather to be broken in peices, then to become unlike its Masters heart, or shew any thing of a tender nature. There was one allotted me for my proportion, which I used as they had done, laying it on the coals a little while, and fo committing it to my teeths disposal, I never found till now that my teeth could be thus thamefully baffled. They made several affaults upon it to little purpose. My teeth at length fearing a total conquest, desperately and inragedly seiz'd on the hinnestand weakest part, and holding it as fast as Wice, at last in the conflict overpowred one (mall

o unn enchis noice noc

orts;

ected

may

mith-

her,

fthe

its to

ert, I

ation

and ruis tell been

her the pleson in

that ookt Drip-

ay to (Was ady. Come

leaqueoned

small fleak, but not being able to flay the swift backward motion of my head, the hinder pan thereof (the seat of Memory) flew so violently a gainst the wall, that I not only instantly forgo what I was doing, where I was, but the painther I sustained by the knock: Strong-water they pour ed down my Throat to revive me, but there we nothing did sooner fetch me then a small fleak of the Poor John, which sticking in my Throat had well nigh choaked me, which caused a strugling and summoned the spirits together to oppose what

might be destructive to Nature.

Now did I really imagine my felf at Sea, where for want of provision, I was forced to feed or Cordage, or the Ship fides. Had this poor creatur been ground small, I might have made as hard shift to have swallowed it, as those Sea-men di the Sam-duft of deal boards coming from Norway and deflirute of other food. That night I flept bu little, neither could I. had I swallowed Opin for that purpole, for the innumerable quantit of Buggs (as some call them) that had invaded w body; being weary (as I suppose) of inhabiting any longer the dry manfion of that old rotten Be fled on which I lay. In the morning I found the raines of a Looking-glass in the window, which took up to discover what knots or nodes those we I felt orespreading my face. The fight where ftruck into me a Pannick fear, verily believing had been infeded with the spotted Feaver.

I began to curse the bed and sheets, imaginis the Contagion proceeded from them; to be said fied herein, I drew aside at the beds feet the Cu tain (that is to say, part of a Tilt) pinned there

t

ti

S

keep the wind off, which otherwise would have fanned us to death, coming in fo furioufly through the Port-cullife of the window : (for glass there was little). At first fight I questioned whether I was not lately rifen from the Dead, fince there was visibly before my Eyes, the black Cloath that covered my Herfe. Had not we gone to bed without a Candle over-night, I should sooner have chosen bulk than this bed to lye on. It might have been good Quere, whether those sheets had ever been washe since their weaving, and continually fince imployed by Whores and Bawds, fuccessively, to sweat out their Contagious humours, and matter

proceeding from their ulcerated Bodie.

My pretended friend perceiving my amazement, bid me be of good courage, for those marks in my face, were only occasioned by a stinging fort of. Vermine, who seldome meddle with such as are accustomed to them, only giving their welcome to fuch as were New-comers, I took thefe fufferings as patiently as I could; but thinking it was an ill coming for me to either of them; and it should not be long before I would take my farewel. We had scarce breakfasted, before a Messenger came into the room, and with much feeming respect pretended to deliver a Message to my friend. gheffed it was to inform him how the Tyde ferved, and so it proved. My friend told me we must be gone instantly, for the Merchant attended my coming: Wherefore we presently went down to the flaires to take Boat: by the way he told me, that he would go with me in the same Ship, and take as much care of me as he would of his own Son, whom I understood afterwards he had too

M 2

there ket

e (wife

r part

ntly a. forga

nthes

pour re wa

leak of

at had

igling

ewha

where

eed or

reatun

hard

en di

Jorman

epr bu

Opini

uantig

ded m

abitin

en Bei

ind t

which

ofe we

where

ieving

aginii

be fatt

he Cu

fure, above a year fince ftoln away, and fold him as a flave. One while I thought to have ran for it, another time I thought to have cryed out, a Spirit, a Spirit, but that the thought of the Water-men, being his Accomplices, deterred me. I was at my wits end, not knowing what to do. Coming into the Boat, being now defticute of all relief, I asked him according to his former pretence, whether he refolved to go to Sea with me? yes, replyed he. Iquestion, Sir, (faid 1) whether you ever told a truth in your life, but I am refolved you shall now; and with that I flung my felf with him over-board. Those which were in the Boat, immediately endeavoured at our rifing to pull us up into the Boat : Bat I clapping my hands unfortunately on the fide of the Boar on which they within leaned, overturned it upon me. The first thought this accident produced in me, was that a Whale had swallowed me, and that I was in the dark concave of his belly : or that Death had arrefted me, and clapped me up a close prisoner for my fins, in Hell's deep and black Dungeon. But by the industry and expedition of many Water-men, eye-witneffes of this paffage, (which had like to have proved Tragical) the Boat was recovered, and I the first person taken up and fet on fore.

Multorum manibus grande levatur enus:

'Many hands make light work. I ne'er flaid to fee what was become of my good Friend, (a Pox take him) but with what speed I could, attended with a great number of little booping Owlets (I mean

In the young fry of Scullars) I secured my eliftrom this Anthropopola, or Man-seller: A chanteble Woman seeing me in this pickle, (for it Salt water, which my Sous'd guts may testifie they please, in their grumbling manner of thing) told me that she would entertain me tall morrow. This was the greatest Cordial could be applied to this cross; and without many Complements, I thanked her for her great love. Now because the saw what condition I was in, she imadiately put me to bed.

M 3

CHAP.

l to Pox

the

ken

fold

1 for

1, 1

Wa-

me.

do.

fall

pre-

me?

her

Te-

e in fing my ron pond in and or ip a lack

ded (1

ean

fure, above a year fince ftoln away, and fold him as a flave. One while I thought to have ran for it, another time I thought to have cryed out, a Spirit, a Spirit, but that the thought of the Water-men, being his Accomplices, deterred me, I was at my wits end, not knowing what to do. Coming into the Boat, being now defficute of all relief, lasked him according to his former prerence, whether he resolved to go to Sea with me? yes, replyed he. Iquestion, Sir, (faid I) whether you ever told a truth in your life, but I am refolved you shall now; and with that I flung my Those which were in felf with him over-board. the Boat, immediately endeavoured at our riling to pull us up into the Boat : But I clapping my hands unfortunately on the fide of the Boat on which they within leaned, overturned it upon me. The first thought this accident produced in me, was that a Whale had swallowed me, and that I was in the dark concave of his belly : or that Death had arrested me, and clapped me up a close prisoner for my fins, in Hell's deep and black Dungeon. But by the industry and expedition of many Water-men, eye-witneffes of this paffage, (which had like to have proved Tragical) the Boat was recovered, and I the first person taken up and fet on fore.

Multorum manibus grande levatur enus:

'Many hands make light work. I ne'er staid to fee what was become of my good Friend, (a Pox take him) but with what speed I could, attended with a great number of little booping Owless (I mean

The English Rogue.

mean the young fry of Scullars) I secured my self from this Anthropopola, or Man-seller: A charitable Woman seeing me in this pickle, (for it was Salt water, which my Sous'd guts may testifie if they please, in their grumbling manner of seaking) told me that she would entertain me till to morrow. This was the greatest Cordial could be applied to this cross; and without many Complements, I thanked her for her great love. Now because she saw what condition I was in, the immediately put me to bed.

Ma

CHAP.

to ox led

blo2 i

an for

ut, a

Wa-

d me.

o do.

ofall

pre-

me?

ether

n re-

g my
re in
iting
g my
re on
upon
d in
and
cor
up a
lack
n of
the

1)

an

CHAP. XXVI.

How under the pretence of begging, be stole a Cloak, and with that went to a Gaming Ordinary; what a bold Adventure be made there, and the success thereof.

Parting from this good Woman, I began to think that the Art of stealing might be reckoned amongst the liberal Sciences; for though it may be called an Handicrast, yet it cannot be looked on as Mechanick. This is the Art, the right Practice whereof is the true Philosopher's stone, the Elizer of life; with which many turn Possen into Medicine, coarse cloath into cloath of Gold, hunger into sulness and satiety, convert rags into Sattins; and all this done by a quick wit, and slight of hand.

The Antiquity and Dignity of this Profession, I shall relate elsewhere, and shall proceed on in

my Adventures.

The Evening or Twi-light being come, Ichanced to look in at a door, and perceiving none at hand, I went in boldly, refolving if I met any to beg an Almes of them, having before premeditated what I had to fay, viz, that I was a poor diffressed young Gentleman, my Father, Mother, nay, all my Relations I knew, being dead, and that not knowing what to do, was forced (under the Covert of the night) to befeech the assistance of charitable minded persons. But in my way sound none that should occasion my using this form.

I found in the Parlor a good Camlet-cloak, which I made bold to put on, and fo very gravely walked out of the house; but coming to the door, you must think there was Wild fire in my breech , that haltned me out of the ffreet. Being gotten a Bow-shot off I thought my felf indifferent secure, to that I flackned my pace, but could not (if my Life lay on it) for bear looking this way, that way, fometimes over one shoulder, sometimes over the other: thinking of what dangerous consequence this might prove, I refoved to walk more confidently, and not let my eyes discover any thing of fear, by reason of guilt. This loose garment had fo of a fudden Metamorphofed those thoughts I had of my felf but a little before, my eye being continually on my Cloak, I could not conceit my felf less then the best of the young Templers, that walk the Streets to show themselves: coming into Bell-yard, I observed several Gallants go into an House, and others to come out, which put me to the curiofity of enquiring, what, or whole Houle it was: Who cold me it was a Gaming Ordinary. Nay, then (thought 1) it is as free for me to enter as others; and to went in. I looked on a while, but my fingers itched to be at it. Why, thought I, have I not adventured a Gael, a Whipping, or an Hanging, and shall I now fear a Kicking, a Pumping, or a Bog-boufe? These considerations made me refolutely take up the Box, and I threw a Main, which was 7: a great deal of money was prefently fet me, I knew it was but to little purpole to baulk them, so that confidently I threw at all, which I nicked with eleven, and so continued holding seven hands together. Perceiving I had got a confiderable M 4

what

n to recgh it or be ight one,

old, rags and

9 OH

on, n in

ane at y to edi-

her, and ider

ence

fiderable quantity of money, and fearing I might loofe that which I had fo boldly adventured for, I thanked my propitious Stars and the Gentlemen, who had rather lofe their money than fufped any that hath the Garb of one well Extracted; and fo bad them good night. A priviledge too many Sharking Ubiquitarians life without interruption. being most commonly in Fee with the Waiters and Box-keepers, who will be fure to speak in the behalf of fuch confident Cheats, if they lofe, pretending great knowledge of them, that they are men of repute, civil and responsible; which frequently to prevails upon a Mouth, that 'he bath not a word to fay more. Questionless Ordinaries were first impartially founded, interdicting all play but which was upon the Square; but fince, by the connivance of the Box-keepers, when the Table grows thin , and few at it , let the stranger beware : for the Box-keeper shall walk off, pretending some speedy disparch of a business concerning the House of Office, &c. willt your Antagonift shall put the change upon you, or make use of his own fack in-a-box, and then had you 5001. (would you fet like a Gamester) he will have it to a penny in a short while : with whom the Waiter goes fnips. If at any time fuch they know want an High flyer, &c. they know how and when to supply him.

Full fraught with this good fortune, and soladen I was ready to fink, I resolved to moor my Vessel in the next Harbour. The Landlord whence I came, was very loath to entertain me, his lodger having served him a scurvy trick the night before, conveying out of the window, the Furniture of a

mcor

room that cost him 40 l. besides a great silver Tankerd, which the Gentleman would have silled with stale Beer and Sugar, to stand by his bed-side all night, pretending it was his custome. But I deside him to lay up a parcel of money for me till the next morning, quite put out the eye of his Jealouse. I shewed my self that night very exceeding noble, concealing my success at play, that he might conclude the greatness of my expence proceeded from the nobleness of my nature, having a good estate to back it. I was conducted to bed with many Ceremonies, and abundance of respect. Sleep I could not, for thinking how to dispose of my self.

I had experimented the various exigences and extremities an unfetled condition is accompanied withall; and knowing how fecurely I could purloin from my Matter, if I would moderate my theft, I concluded to supplicate my Matter by a Letter for my reception into his service, not forgetting my Mittreffes quondam kindnesses. If my Matter should result to re-entertain me, I had by me what might supply my necessities, till I had re-considered how to improve my stock, or bestow my self. Not to delay time, the next day I wrote him this

Letter.

night

for.

men,

tany

nd fo

nany

ion,

sand

be-

pre-

are

fre-

hath

ries

all

ce,

the

ger

pre-

on-

e of

ol.

01

ter

an ip-

a-

er e, fa I Aving seriouser considered the greatness of my folly in running from so good a Master, (whom I may more rightly intitle Father) with tears I beg mercy from Heaven, and forgiveness from you. Mitigatemy offence by revolving in your mind the fewness of my years, which makes me (as it doth most others) prone to rambling fancies: look then favourably on my long absence from you, as a meer exiliency, a youthful elapse, which maturity of age may rectifie. If you can forgive my follies, I will study to forget them, and daily endeavour the propagation of my fidelity in the remainder of my time. By the Bearer bereof you may signific your pleasure.

Sir , I am

Your cordially penitent Servant, &c.

With much joy my Mafter read this Letter, and hastened the Bearer away to bring me to him. Having converted my filver into Gold, sowing it in my Collar and Wastband, and putting my self into a Garb convenient for his fight, I went to him.

H

CHAP. XXVII.

l may

mercy

ate my

of my

prone

y long

W CAR

and

t the may

tent

and Ha-

t in

felf

01 1

His Master sheweth him more kindness than formerly s the ill requital be made him, by Cuckolding him: an accident that fel out thereupon, which produced two remarkable stories, deduced from the strength of Imagination.

M's Master upon my reception, told me he M had freely torgiven me, and if that I would hencetorward endeavour the prosecution of a more regular course of life, he would forget too my past follies. I promised him more then the strictett Zelot ever yet did, and begged him pardon aforehand, if he found a defect in performance.

As my expressions gave my Master much content, so my return (I perceived by my Mistresses eyes) gave her the greatest satisfaction. My Master began to doat on me again, seeing I dayly trebled my diligence, and so active I was in every thing that concerned his affairs, that it was hard for any to anticipate me in my intention.

This gained so much upon his facile good Nature; that I had liberty to wear my Hat, and sit at Table with him, neither would he command me any thing servile. I had (as formerly) the same sollicitations from my Brother Snippers; but searing least one time or another I might be snapt by the timerous nature of some, who, if once taxt, will confess, not only as to themselves, but likewise detect the whole knot of a Brother-hood; I resolved to have no more to do with them, but would

like

Th

he

col

ter

Ve

of

lo

.fp

1

like

would faip securely by my felf, knowing, that in any fecret defign, if many are concerned, their bufinels cannot be long kept private. Wherein by the way, I cannot but commend the craft and policy (though I absolutely disclaim the actions) of modern Padders, whose providence inftructed them to rob fingly, by which means their booty came to them intire without diffribution, or if apprehended (as it was very rare) they knew how to make a better plea for themselves in · Court of Judicature. I now kept close to my bufiness, not harbouring the least comptation to any extravagancy, and had fequefired my felf from what might render me publickly notorious, and only studied by what means I might raise my Fortune, intending to build my future effate upon the raines of other men: having nothing of mine own but my late purchase at play, my only way was (as I thought by fome's fuccefs therein) to make the world believe I was really reformed, and fo create to my felf a credit, whereas I was only a Devil converted to an Angel of light, or a Woolf in Sheeps-cloaths. Now did I begin to sant religiously, and not omit one Sabbath wherein I did not take Sermon-Notes, judging this religious clock to be the best expedient, to screw my felf farther into my Miltreffes favour, who doted on Morning Exercises, and monethly Fasts, If my Master had forgot to do the duty of the day, I would with much respect put him in mind of the negled, deficing that I might repeat what had been delivered. As they looked upon my conversion more miraculous then that of St. Paul, fo they gave me the greatest incouragement, least like weak Women , I might prove a back-flider. There were few private meetings my Miftress heard of , but , by the leave of my Mafter , I must conduct her to them, which were as many portents of our private meetings afterwards, where

Venus should appoint.

that

ned,

here-

craft

the

ence

eans ribu-

they

es in

my

n to felf

ous,

my

pon

ine way

to ed,

was

or a

ant

ein

re-

eW

ho

fts,

y,

ot

at

ny

ul,

aft

ike

I am forry that I am fo uncharitable as to fay that the z'al of her Spirit was not fo hot as that of her fl th: every day I had some remark of her love, which I received with much submiffive respeas, pretending I understood not her meaning. which added but fewel to the blazing flame of love within her. I could not be ignorant , that fince he began to court me, the would profecute it to the end. Her courtship me-thought was very preposterous; she might have first received the charge from me, and by that means the would have found me prepared, whereas otherwise the might

have been deceived in her expectation.

My Miltriss gave me so many opportunities. and fignified her defires by so many tokens and dumb expressions, that I began to condemn my fears, which rendred me unworthy of her favours. The belieger deferves not the honour of possessing that City, whose Gates are freely opened to him, yet dares not enter. Whilit I was thus ruminating, my Mistris came to the Countinghouse were I was writing; and leaning upon my thoulder, asked me what I was doing: I cold her nothing, but writing. Nothing, I believe faid the, nor never will do any thing, but draw up blanks : and fo abruptly left me. She knew the quickness of my apprehension, and so left the interpretation hereof to my own construction.

Not

. Not long after , (thinking her words had le a deep impression , as they did) and withall con cluding I would give her the fence of them. when I had an opportunity; She informs m Mafter that the had a great defire to vifit a Gentle woman she had not feen a long time, and re quefted that her man Thomas (for that was my name) might wait on her : to which he affented Though I led ber, yet I wondered were the let me, through one freet into another till wears rived at the waterfide. She bid me call for a pain of Oars, which I accordingly did. The Water men were very inquifitive according to their cuftome, to know whither we intended. Well. well, faid the, put off, and then it will be time enough for you to understand. Said she, Row us up to Fox-hall. I for my part was somewhat amazed, yet I partly gueffed what the drove at. I kept at a diffance, thewing her the refped of a fervant; which the taking notice of, laughed, faying, Come Cuz, why doft not fit neerer? to which I replyed as familiarly (for by this time I had much improved the flock of my confidence) I were best to fit a little neerer you, fince I shall be the best expedient to ballance the Boat even, or trim it, for you are but light on your This expression I doubt netled her, for presently thereupon she shot a peircing dart from her eye (which I fancied to have penetrated my very foul) How now Cuz, faid the, I thought you had a better opinion of me; I understandthe Riddle, Your expression may be very dark to some, however I have too much light in it. 1 would have made an Apology for my felf, but

had let

allcon

them.

rms m

Gentle

and re

was my

ffented.

the led

We'ar-

r a pair

Water

eir cu-

Well.

e time

, Row

newhat

drove

refped

ughed,

eerer?

y this

y con-

you,

ce the

on your

, for

from

ed my

ought

ndche

rk to

ic. 1

that

that the hindred me by whifpering me in the ear, to this effect, that if the was light, there was no other cause but my felf, and that if I abused her love any longer, the would fit the beavier on my skirts. Landing , we went ftreight to Spring-Garden; by the way the told me, I must lay afide all formality, and for the better carrying on the delign we went upon, the would have me as afore affume the title of Cuz. We were conducted into an obscure bower, I suppose one of Lives Chappels of ease, where, without a Clem, is would be hard for any to find us. There was not any thing wanting that might delight the Appetite, which with much freedom we enjoyed toge her.

Now, said my Mistres, I shall take off the veil of my modefty, and discover to thee the very naked fecrets of my heart. The first time that ever I law thee, I had more then a common respect to thee, and there was not a time fince, wherein I had the fight of thee, but that it added new fewel to the flame of my aff. ction: I used all possible means to smother or blaft it in the bud, but could not : I summoned my reason to confute my passion, and notwithstanding I alledged that there was a disproportion in our age, and unfuitableness as to our condition, and lastly how great a fain it would be to my religious profession; yet Love gor the Victory over thefe, and would have been too frong for ten times as many; the reft the supplyed with kiffes, which were infinite.

Having gained a little breath, and the again having lent me the use and disposal of my own mouth, I returned to this her amorous Ocation,

fome-

fomething suitable to it by way of retaliation;
Protesting with invocations, that since she had
so compleated my happiness by her love, I would
perish before I would be guilty of the least abuse
therein.

That had it not been for the fense of my un. worthiness, and fear of hazarding her love, and so gained her displeasure, no other difficulty should have deterred me from declaring, and discovering what she had prevented me in; adding, that where the quinteffence of all loves contracted into one body, it could not equallize mine. Come, faid fhe, let us leave off talking in fuch idle phrases, let future conftancy make apparent the reallity of our affections, and let us not loofe any time wherein we may mutually enjoy each other. It is but a folly for me now to mince the matter, or by my coldness endeavour to recongeal that water where the ice is too visibly broken and thaw'd. Yet let not your prudence be questioned, or reason forfeited, in making any unhandsome advantage of this my freedom. But above all, blaft not my reputation by the unfavory breath of any oftentatious boafting of a Gentlewomans favouts, nor let not my love cause any flighting or difrespett in you to your Matter; neither let it fo puffe you up with pride, as to contemn your fellow-fervants. In company, fhew much more reverence to methan formerly. In privace, when none fees us but our felves, be as familiar and free as actions can demontrate. Be constant to me alone, for true love will not admit of plurality. Be fecret and filent,

ation 4

would

abufe

ny un-

e, and

ficulty

and

s con-

allize

alking

make nd let

rually

OJ WO

a vour

ifibly

dence

g any

But

e un-

of a

love

your

with

In

than

t our

love

ent,

and

and follow not the common practife of vain-glonous Fools, that in requital of those favours they hive received in private of fome credulous Female, will make their braggs of them in publick. As if it were not enough for them to rob them of their Chaftities, but muft likewise murther their Repuutions. Have a special care you flight me nor, (as some squeamish or curious Stomacks use feeding too long on one fort of Food, though never fo delicious) for a Womans love despised, will curn into extreme hatred, and will be ever reftless cill milice and revenge have confulted with Invention, how to be more then even with the flighting Injurer. She propounded more Articles, which I hiveforgot now, but I remember I fealed them without a witness. We made an end of our buffness for that time, with much expedition, to the intent the rediousness of our flaying might nor be suspected by the ignorant Cuckold at home: I have reason now for so calling him.

Coming home, I applyed my self to the business of the Shop as before, enjoyning my eyes a severe penance, not so much as to look towards that Object they so dearly loved. According to my usual time I went to Bed, but sleep I could not, for thinking on what I had done. About one a clock I was much startled, to hear something come into my chamber; but before I could give my eyes the liberty for a discovery, my Mistress had gotten within the sheers, and not daring to speak, because my Master lay in the next room, most commonly by himself, and her chamber was the next to that, (and in a Trundle-bed underneath my Mistress's bed lay the Maid.) Neer upon day-break

my fweet Bed-fellow left me,at an unhappy time, for then was my Mafter awake, which might have ruined us both, which had fo faln our, had he been refolute or couragious ; but on the contrary, exceeding timerous, but more especially, childilly afraid of the supposed walking of spirits: For hearing the boards crack twice or thrice, with the weight of her body; besides, by the help of Starlight, perceiving something to move all in white, he forunk underneath the cloaths, not daring to put out his head; now did his imagination works Strongly almost as his Breech, Suggesting strange and ridiculous things to his fancy. But I shall give him leave to tell his own story. A little after it was day, being almost stifled for want of fresh Air, & choal'd with the flink that was in the Bed, he boldly and valiantly put his head out of the coverlid, & after he had thrice exorcis'd the Devil . or the suppofed evil Spirit, with avoid Satan, repeating as often that Scriptural Sentence, Refift the Divil and he will flye from thee: He called out as loud as he might for me to come to him. I leapt out of Bed, and ran to him, asking him what was the matter: 0 Thomas, faid he, light a Candle quickly; I running in hafte to light the Candle, fell (by miffaking the fich flep) down the flairs, which made a terrible noise:my Master hearing me, cry'd out, (faying, 0 God, what will become of me?) thinking the Devil indeed had mistook me for himself, and that he was horfing me on his back to carry me away; mit that he fell to prayer fo fervently loud, that up flarts, the Mifrels, and the Maids, running know what was the matter : fear had to possesse himsthat he could not be perfwaded, but that the were some of the Devilish crew.

time,

have

e been

y, ex-

dilly

hear-

h the

Star-

white,

ing to

ork as

ze and

ehim

s day,

loak'd

ly and

c aftet

uppo-

otten

and be

might

and

er: 0

mning

ng the

errible

ing, O

Devil

he was

; with

at up

ing (

feffet

at the

At first they thought him to be fallen mad; but finding out the cause of this distraction, with much adomy Mistress made him sensible of his mistake. Being fully assured, that they were not (yet) damned Spirits, he relates what he had seen, in this manner: My Mistress afterwards told me, that had it not been for laughing, which so busied her, that her sense of smelling for that time had lest her, the could never have endured to hear him out, for that notorious stink, which came from the Bed, when he stirred ever so little.

I wonder'd, said he, that contrary to my usual custom, I awak'd about four a clock, whereas I used to sleep soundly, thou knowest till eight. I hearkned, at first I perceived onely the boards at track, but presently after I heard chains rattle, and the stools slung about the room, the bed, and I init; danced up and down, as if a School Bag-pipe had been plaid upon by a Northern Wisch, and the Devil the while had Danced with me, and the Bed a Morrice, (supplying the Bellows with wind.) Sometimes they pull'd me out of Bed, and laid me onthe cold floor, and then tost me in again like a Dig in a Blanket.

Hearing no noise, I setempted to peep out; but scarcely had mine eyes recovered the top of the Bed-cloths, when I saw standing by me, a composition of meer bones; with a shrowd thrown over his shoulders, like an Irish Brachin, or a Scatch Pladd, with a light Taper in one hand (I knewnor what use he could make of it, for there were onely boles in his head instead of eyes) and an Hours glass in the other: he grinn'd at me with his treeth, (for he had no lips) and shaking his chains less me,

N:

which

After this, it was a long time before he would be perswaded to lie in that Chamber again, which made me curse his strong conceit, for by this means he would lie with his wife, which interrupted our sweet venereal passime. As for my part, so believed he would never have return'd to his own chamber again, for he trembled when he pass through it in the day time; and if alone, he would so thunder down the stairs (fear giving wings to his feet) as if (Vulcan-like) he had been sent by

Jupiter bead-long in a meffage.

Another accident (hapning not long after) cur'd him in part of his ridiculous belief, grounded on nothing elfe but fancy : In the Sellar, on a certain beam that went crofs , there were great quantity of Tenter-hooks placed there, fome to hang men on others of a smaller fort for other uses. Our Cal being somewhat ravenous, was following the fcent, and had gotten upon the Beamsher foremol feet flipping, the was ftrangely caught by the tall and not able to recover her felf : Being terriby pained by the hook, the made a most hideout noise, which made our Dog fall a howling. This krange din firft approached my Mafters ears, whi awaking my Mistres, asked her now whether the would believe her own ears. At first she confetto me, the knew not what to think , her confcience being yet tender (which having no long sime accu flomed to have as with ken out eration on)hin-

c would n, which by this terruppart, his own he pat e would rings to

fent by

r)cur'd ded on certain uantie ig men Dur Cu ng the oremol he tail erribh

hideou . This rs, who her fo nifefto

(cience e accu fomed somed her felf to fin, was not hardned and fear'da p) put her in mind of what the had lacely come mitted, fo that the had like to have concluded hat it was Satan was fent to buffer her: But the having a martial spirit, and not easily daunted hehearkned further, and then jude'd that Thiexes had broken into the house.

My Mafter all this while was breathing his laft at both ends, whileft my Miftress leap'd out of Bed, and ame to my Chamber door, bidding me in all hafte orife, for there were Thieves in the house. I confels I had no great mind to be kill'd, and therefore Iwas in no great hafte to rife, Cometimes buttoning my Doublet, and anon unbuttoning it again: perceiving that I delaid, the came again, taking me with Cowardife, and meannels of Spirit, which put new life into me, making me resolve to adventure my life, rather then hazard the lofs of, her good opinion.

Finding my Mistress in her smock, I chought it shame for me to have any cloaths on; and for mked as I was, we march'd on. Coming to the Stairhead, my fancy croubled me a little too, for the noise had so amaz'd me, that I would fain have my Mistress to go first: the could not forbeare laughing, to observe how complemental and ceremonious at that time I was. Having scattered my fear by resolution, How do I abuse my self, said I,

and with that boldly went on.

By this time a light was produced, and then those Bug-bear thoughts which darkness possesfeth the fancy withal, began to vanish. There was not a hole big enough to contain a man, but what I prob'd. Descending the Cellar-stairs, I there

N 3

plainly

plainly law the Original cause of our fear and distraction, hanging by the tail. I called my Mistress to the fight, and now the Maids too would be Spectators, understanding the danger to be overpast.

Well, the general vote was, that the Cat should be carried up stairs to our Master, and shew him the wound in bis Tail, for evidence to prove his guilt in

being seduced by fanty.

He hearing some come up, thought we were all destroyed, and that they were coming up to dispatch him too: Wherefore he cryed out, Saveny Life, and take all I have. His wife (not to encrease his perplexity) bid him quiet himself, there was no harm, nor any like to be done; and withat so convinced him of his folly, both past and present, that he had not a word to say in his own defence; he enjoyning us all silence, we were dimised.

The next night, to shew how much he was she red from his former temper and belief, he didly in his Chamber aforesaid, supposedly haunted, and that same night with much joy, my Millest

and I renewed our pleafures.

ecies at the offer how comes several and ceies wondered and ceies.

PART in that bouds were one con and and by this time a story one was a second and the part of the contract of

on a hole bigen and to contain a man, but to I to be probled airs, I the

N3 EM

what marmer I disputt preat bonness or men

ney, but know how to by mounton;

on of their defires, that is, t

r and ny Miwould be o-

should im the wile in

ere all to diftve my create was no to cont, that

s eltedid lye unted, liftrefs

e; he

d ass

CHAP. XVIII WY ... Ales

How his Mistres's supplyed him with money, even to superfluity; what ways he had to spend it. He is tempted to destruction by Correctors (alias) Clippers and Coyners (alias) Mutter-men.

I Found my Estate to encrease abundantly, for I was half sharer my self with my Master; my Mistress she put in for one roo, which I had likewise; so that the good man received but the fourth. I had been (since my return) very sparing in my expence, having laid up my money securely: But now finding out another rich Mine, I thought I hould be too rich, unless I contrived ways to draw out as well as put in.

In the first place, I thought good to buy a brace of good Geldings, for by that means I could meet whom I pleas'd, though a dozen or fixteen miles diffince, and so by the quickness of return come home undiscovered: If occasion should serve, they might very well serve for the High Pad. These I bought, and where they stood; I had sour or sive several suits, either to Ride withal, (using variety that I might pass incognito) or to wear when I did intend to appear splendicty to peculiar friends; and then the Prodigal himself did not spend his mony more profusely than my self.

N 4

184 The English Rogne : Or,

I judge it unnecessary to relate how, and in what manner I disburst great sums, since there are few that are addicted to pleasure, and have money, but know how to lay it out to the satisfaction of their desires, that is, to please all their senses. My Mistress seldom saw a piece of Gold in her Husbands hands, or some large and great piece of Silver, but she would be begging it of him, for no other intent but to give it mis which she took delight in, withal, knowing that frequent presents very much ingage the affection.

My Master seldom denyed her, (for, like 1 Cuckold he dored on his Wife) but if he dide he would take per, and would not eat, have the tore head bound down with a crofs-cloath, look pith fully, and the like. If he askt her what the ailed, or what the was croubled at, the would fay, at nothing more then your unkindness, and then wen bitterly : for like a right Hyp crite the had tearing command. The Detard would melt coo, sometimes the great Calf civing and fobbing, like a Childe that hath loft his Bread and Butter: Thento make his attonement, he muft procure ber two a three pieces; if he hath them not in the houle otherwife it shall cost him as much more wealth on the Doctor, of whom the would often pretend to take Physick, but it should be onely rich Corde als, frengthning Tellies, with fuch like Provocation to Venery.

For my own part, I was not idle in the mean time, laying up like the careful Bee for Winter. We returned great fums of money every day, which an acquaintance of mine knew very well; and in here are no ve mohisfactll their f Gold

d great ig it of it me; nowing the at-

like a lide for the part non weep tears at the control weep tears at the lide hen to wo or house

Corde Cations mean inter.

wealth

retend

day, well; and he being daily in the company of a fellow, who was both Coyner and Clipper, it seems a decayed Goldsmith, undone by the study of Chymistry, but now lived by some particular part thereof, as the transmutation of Metal, or so forth.

This man he informs that he know a young Calheer, that he thought he could work to their purpole, who was very well qualified for it. An appointed time for meeting was agreed upon between them, which was made known to me; I thought of no other delign but to be merry. Being met, we drank fliffly, but ever and anon the franger would befrech me to favour him with my future acquaintance, that he should think himfelf. very happy, if I would admit him into a familiarity. I could do no less then promise so much, and to laying afide ceremonies, we entered into a very familiar discourse. But for that night there was nothing propounded, neither was it thought convenient : feveral times we met, (not without great expence) to that now we were grown intimately acquainted. Our discourse hapned on a time to be about Chymiltry, I was forced to be mute, as not understanding any thing thereof; yet I could not but admire to hear any new friend relate what admirable Rarities he could perform in that my fterious Art, and thereupon shew'd me a piece of Gold, demanding my opinion, what I thought of it? I told him I could judge no less, but that it was what it feem'd to be; he smilingly reply'd, No wonder that this should deceive you, fince it will do the like to the most critical Goldsmith about the Town: No doubt, faid he, you have heard of the PhilotoPhilosopher's Stone, and what vaft Effates fome have mit-fpent in the fearch thereof, how ineffection al the labour of fuch bath been, the miferablenes of their condition makes apparent. Others & not a few have presended they have obtain'd the maflery thereof, for no other intent then to delude fome wealthy credulous person, making some ris diculous experiments to confirm his belief, and at laftextrad him tothe very lees of his Effare. 1 shall not deludingly pretend to any thing, but what I will perform, which your own eyes shall atteff. Hereupon, he shew'd me various pieces, both Gold and Silver, which are the effects (faid he) of my own labour and pains, imployed in an Art I have found out by the curious fearch and indultry of my brain, with which I can convert Copper into that Metal which current money is composed of, either of which, according to the Tindure I stall give ic. And to be plainer with you, out of that great love I have born ever fince I first faw you, & that my actions shall make it apparent, fee her this piece, according to the term of Art given, itis called a black Dog, with Queen Elizabeths Head thereon, which is only Pewter double washed. This here is a George plateroon, being all copper within, and only a thin Place about it. Another called Compositum, which is a mixt Metal, and will both touch and cut, but will not indure the fiery tell. He gave me the fight likewife of pieces of eight, balf pieces, and quarter pieces. Then again (faid he) our own Coyn we usually call English Cloth, the other Spanifo ; the prices whereof are leveral, according to their goodness and finenels : The bell you may have for 15 /b. the yard, i.e. five thillings

s fome

bleness

& not

he ma-

delude

me ri-

and at

I .sis

t what

acceft, Gold

of my

I have

itry of

ed of.

I (hall

f that

W YOU,

e here

n,icis

Head

1. This

ichin,

called

both

reft.

eight,

d he)

, the

Lac-

e belt

lings

in

in the pound profit; the worfer for eight, ten or

Now to the intent that I may compleat your happiness here, if enjoyment of Wealth will do it, I would advise you to take some of every fort, and so mingle it with the rest of your good cash, proportionably to the sum. Let me add one thing more, if any large money comes to your hand, lay it aside for me, which after I have corrected a little (for broad brimd Hats are not now in fashion) I will return it, allowing you 18 pence per pound interest.

Igave him all this while great attention, without the least interruption; but he here making a stop. I thought he expected my replication; which was to this effect, That I thankt him cordially for his respects, which I beleeved were real, having used that freedom with me, that I did not in the least question the greatness of profit that would redound by the acceptance of his proffer; but it being a matter of the greatest consequence & highest concern, I defired I might have fome time for confideration This answer made him look blank, fearing least I made a demur only to betray him, fo that I saw by his countenance, he wisht he had been more sparing in his expressions. I must needs confess, I trembled all the time I was in his company, wherefore I made all the haft I could to be gone, giving him to understand, that, after ferious consultation with my self, I would fend him an answer by my friend, and so I took my leave of him. The whole night following I fpent in weighing his Proposals in the ballance of profit and preservation: I quickly sound that Life's preservation tion outweigh'd allother interest, and that honour , riches , and pleasure , would avail little to that man that was riding Post to the Gallows. Befides, how could I expect to escape better then others, who were frequently made wretchedfpe-Etacles of rath imprudence and folly, who, having forfeired the Kings high and just displeasure, did usually berray their own felves to the Severity of the Law in that cafe; which hath as little Commiferation on fuch as on the worst of Offendon't Though I had committed feveral things that might come within the verge of an Indiament, yet I always thunned fuch actions as bore the inferiotion in their front, Memento mori. To be as good as my promile, I fent my Chimift thefe confequent Lines.

SIR.

You feemingly do proffer fair, but know, Hanging attends such kindnesses you show. The bope of profit tempts me; loss of life O'repowers perswasions, and so ends the Strife. Had I two Lives, my deeds should make it known How little I would care to bazard one : But baving folely one, I will not try It's loss; as yet I have no mind to die. Should we proceed then, and be taken in it; Dearb and damnation feize us in a minute. Ceafe then, and let your fancy's fait with mine. We'l plot no Treason, but to get good Wine: That being had, let each man's face declare To Indian Mines are not fo rich at ours are. If we want Coyn, the best way, I suppose, Is to transmute the Metal of my Nofe.

hen oed spehaving
re, did
rity of
Comndows
s that
ent, yet
nscrips good
equent

9:019

1100)

Inever receiv'd any answer to what I wrote, neither did I ever fee my new friend after, which was according to my own defire, but I heard of his fad deftiny, whereof I should have participated, had I lifted my felf in that Mettle-fimulating Regiment. Some found out operating in the obscureft thickers of woods; others were detected clipping in dark Concaves on Black-beath, and their Ringleader discovered in his own house, in a deep Vault befitting his purpole; who, though he had timely notice to remove his tools, yet, by his Seizersthey were found hid in a Chimny-mantletree, hollowed to that intent, with a flutter at the end. After the dismal catastrophe of these Hazardous fools, I had like to have been put to a great trouble, though not in the least guilty of the accusation : and thus it was; an indigent Hanger-on. having taken notice of my being once or twice in the company of the chief of those lately executed, came to me one Evening, and requested some private discourse: consented: being together (laying afide several Formalities that ushered in his discourse)he told me, that I was taken notice of as a notorious disperser of Counterfeit money, and that there was a warrant out to spprehend me, &, that out of pure love to a man fo young and fairly promifing as my felf, he thought himself bound in duty to preferve if he could, by giving timely notice to thun that, which, if neglected might prove deftructive. I immediately faw the Rogue peep through the Vizard of difficulation, and therefore instead of giving thanks I gave him a blow over both the eyes, to the intent he should

190 The English Rogne : Or,

not see how I would beat him, which was in such a manner, that he could not see himself for three days afterward. This fellow I understood to be a Dunner for the Prisoners of their confederates abroad; and if they would not continually let down their milk, impeach them, and were often condemn'd.

CHAR

s in such
or three
to be a
crates acrates a-

CHAP. XIX.

Hebreaketh his Master (by the help of bis Mistress) and so sets up for himself with that money he had unlawfully gotten in his Apprentiship, and credit besides: what a trick he served his Master at last: bis Master and Mistress soon after by d.

Ducto proceed, now I had ferved my time, and Dwas accordingly made free; but follicited by my Mafter to flay fome longer time as a Journeyman, which I consented to, knowing it could not be long : for we had so purloined from him, that it was impossible for him to subsist any longer. His Creditors visited him dayly, sothat now his whole time was taken up in fludying fair promifing words to fatisfie them for the prefent, and tell them when they should come again. My Master perceiving the danger he was in, would; neither flir abroad, no, not so much as come into the Shop. He now franding upon the brow of a very high Hill, and being forced to descend, Irefolved to lave him the labour, and fo threw him down headlong.

By this time I had conveyed away a sufficient quantity of his Goods, intending them for my own ule; and stowed them in a Warehouse which I

had

had lately taken privately for my purpofe. My Mafter one night told me his intended defign, that he was refolv'd to pack up all his Goods , and to give ther in what moneys he could, and fo rake his wife with him for Ireland. I thought I should have dy'd at first when I heard him talk of carrying his wife with him, and could not forbear dropping fome tears; which he perceiving, his trickled down his Cheeks to bear mine company. Well now, fail he, I fee thou loveft me too, as well as thou haf hicherto proved faithful. But the dearest friends must part (& with that he wept again like a child) however my comfort is, I hope we shall see each other in Heaven. I thought with my felf, I had no ther fee him in the Counter. And from that minute I contriv'd how I might effect it: For at this time I should never have been able to have brook a feparation between my Miltress and felf, especially at fo great distance. She and I often coulded what to do; Sometimes we were in the mind w take what money the old fool had; and fo runs way together, with many stratagems which we propounded; but were rejected as no ways expedient nor convenient. At last I resolved on this;thu .the flould acquaint her felf of the exact time and way he intended to go, and fo inform the there of.I receiv'd information in a short time after,the before break of day, at fuch a time he wouldte -Horse at Islugton , and so for Westebester. I imme diately fent away word to one of his chiefelt Co ditors, making known to him the fum and for france of every thing, and, that if ever he er preted to receive what was due to him, he multi fuch a time have Officers ready to way-lay him

Coun-

My Main order to his arrest, which was punctually done
in that he
according to what instructions I sent him in a seriter, without a name subscribed thereunto. He had
not been long in custody, before I was sent for, to
advise with him what was best to be done in this
his wife
his great extremity and perplexity. I could do
no less then seemingly condole his missortunes, lown his and withal seemed to be very active as to his assi-ow, said shance, running up and down to his Creditors to hou has bring them to a compliance; but he had been t friends better to have fent some person else as sollicitor in a child his business, for by my means I made his wound incurable. Seeing there was no remedy but pati-ently to endure his inevitable imprisonment, he that mi- got an Horse (as some men term it) alias a Duce

fee each had ra-

ould tak

ratthit facise, and so remov'd himself to Ludgate, where a brook he had not been long e're he dy'd for grief.

In the mean time my Mistress had secured what outside he had, which I enjoy'd. I had now an House and mind to Shop of mine own, very well furnisht; but withal lwas grown so deboist and profusively lavish, that which we I seldom was at home but at right, & then in bed expedit with my Mistress, who was very importunate with this; thus me to marry her: I confess I loved her introly time and as my Mistress, or Whore, but I hated her as my her there Wise, knowing very well that if she would be an fter, the shore to me, and have an Husband, she would te fo to another when I was in the formers place. limme She now found her self with Child; whereupefest Cre on (taking upon ber my duty) she dayly prest me and so so save her Credit. But I delay'd, putting her off er he er continually with specious presences, which her e must love & facileness easily swallow'd. The time of her delivery approaching, I went down into the

Country with her; and because it was at hand, flay'd to lee the event : Within a fhort while fell in labour (now because we were known w no other then Man and Wife,) when her thron came upon ber , the would not let me fir out the room. Her pain growing incolerable, thech led me haftily to her, and getting my hand with in hers , Farewel, faid the, I die for thee; the unkindnessin not performing thy promise, in not returning love an (werable to mine, bathin timely yielded my days : with that the ground and then using her former expressions, cryed on Love my memory however, fince I die forthe She uttered not one word afterwards being good as her word: The good women looke fram ly on me, every one passing their verdict, and concluding her none of my Wife. The first Chin ans under the great Perfecution suffered not in so years fo many feveral ways, as I did in five how by the peoples Tongues- I must needs fay , Im it very much to heart that Report, which mi Richard the Second alive fo often after hen dead, should kill me as often whilft alive; defini them at last to wave their Censures (whichthe exprest publickly) I intreated them with all Rhetorick I could produce to indeavour them ving of my Wife, which if past recovery, to means to preferve the Child. In a fhort timeth rold me that was dead likewife. At first I how much grief, which was unfeigned, being not much afflicted for the loss of her as affected those words she uttered when she breathed best I was too confcious of my own guilt, and the forethey made the deeper impression in my Soul.

t hand !

While he

mown fe

er throw

fir out

e , the cal

and with

s thy ld

nile an hathu

grosan

ryed on

e forth , beine

kt firang

t , and

irft Chris

not in s

five hon ay , I to

aich mi er hen e ; defini w bich th rich alla

r the m

1 V . 101

cime th

ff I thom

eing not fected # ed heri

and the

n my w

But all these perturbations of mind I diffipated with a glass or two of Canary, which was the common antidote l us'd against care, forrow, and vexacion, &c. I now provided things necessary for her Funeral, which were not vulgars which I might. he better do having made my felther Executor before, taking all the had into my custody. In mew morist of her and her fidelity , I wrote this Epis aph on her Tomb-stone.

Women they fay will lye, but now I fee Tisfalfe, to th' lost the frake the truth to me. Parewel faid fbe, I thought my grief s'have hid, die for love of thee, --- and fo the did. Here with ber lies ber Child, that Strove in vain To untomb it felf, to be intomb'd again. surrest my babe, thy cares with life are gone, Thou'lt rife again, though now a fetting Sun. bough wonders cease, thy Mothers death doth prove bey may revive, for the did die for love.

CHAP. XX.

lucredit becomes suspected by bis exorbitant manner of living in Drinking, Whoring, Gaming, &c. He thinks to fameder up that crack by Marriage; be w deceived both in Perfon and Portion.

Eturning to my own Habitation, I found Chat my fo long absence had raised a jestous ein my Neighbours breafts, that 4 was ruft aways which

which rested not there, but spread like a Canker, so that this flying report came to some of my Creditors ears, which made them both impatient and importunate with me for their moneys; I wondered whence proceeded their unexpected halle. Some that would not be put off with promifes, ! was forced to pay; from others I obtained a little longer forbearance, which gave me but liberty to profecute my former courses. If I was at the Tavern, I was either drunk, ingaged in a quarrel, & fo involv'd in blood; or elfe at play, if notate Bawdy house, which places I could not refrain from frequenting, though I kept one of my own at bome. For I would not entertain a Maid , but whet was more then ordinarily handsom, whom I commonly vitiated either by presents, or promiseif I got them with child. When I was weary of one,! payd her off with some additions to her wages, & entertain'd another, who would in a short time be wrought upon as well as her predeceffors, being ambicious to lie with her Mafter, and vainly ho ping that to be the first step to her preferment, thinking of nothing but presently marrying, and fo be Miftress. In three years that I lived as a Mi I had nine illegitimates, which I knew, four where of were begotten of my Maids, which put me to! vaft expence. Two of the Mothers would have forced me to have married them, or allowed then competent maintenance (for they were fubil cunning baggages) had I not by a wile got then

aboard a Veffel bound for Virginia, and never heard of them fince. Befides two or three terzible Claps, which coft me a confiderable fumin their cure. This diftemper, as it caused a confump

3:00

nker fo

Credi-

nt and

won-

hafte.

nifes, l

a little

erty to

he Ta-

rel,&

ot at s

refrain

OWN At

t what

com-

milesif

f one,I

ges, &

ime be

Beint

aly ho-

ment,

s a Mr.

where

ne to 1

d bave

d them

- Lubtil

e them

never

ee ter-

fum in

m unt-

tion

tion in my Pocket, so it impaired my wonted frength, and almost spoiled my natural Talent.

I now began to be fenfible of my folly, and fo resolved to take up in time, and redeem by degrees my loft credic by a temperate fober life; but that I found I had wasted my felf extreamly, by which means I became less capable of reading what I had before done, and my mind in a manner fatiated, I question whether I should have had now fuch penitent thoughts. For a while I kept my Shop diligently and constantly; I would not drink with any but at home; my fudden alteration made people admire, and the suddenness of my reformation was the common discourse of all my Neighbours: The Parlon of our Parish hearing of my strange alteration, came to me, which I admired at; for before, he that had the least care or respect of his Reputation, would avoid all occasions of being feen in my company, left they might be suspected extravagant and deboift.

Pares cum paribus facilime congregantur. Birds of a Feather will flock together.

The shortness of his hair declar'd him a member of the Circumcision, but his triple cap, or three caps on his head, shew'd, though he hated the very name of Rome or Babylon, yet he lov'd formerly a whore in private, though common. His Cloak was fac'd down with zeal before, and his Band appear'd but as a broad bem, to shew that a bem, with two or three formal spits, or a feigned Cough, was the usual supply of his discourse, when he had thrash himself in his Cloak out of breath in the Pulpit. His looks resembled the bleer-ey'd Printing at Geneva (and his

face like that fort of ragged paper on which they work off their impressions. After he had fer his side into a Platform, he delivered himself. I hall not relate exactly his own canting words, or what he borrowed from Scripture, being fenfible. non eff tutum ludere cam facris : but give you the Subflance, which was first a reproof for my extravagancies : fecondly, fome general inftrictions, (wicke out of a common-place Book) for my furare practice : and luftly, fome encouragement drawn from various motives to proceed (without looking back) roward a good life : on which three points he ran divisions Brangely, till Dinnersting and then his flowerk peritioned him to thut his mouth, left it should be deprived of its appetiteby deceiving in too much air. 13318 33 and you to an

In this feeming firstness of dife I lived two of three months, and now some began to have the grant ble thoughts of my Soul; 80 that I might regain my runnings out by future differee 80 industry.

I had several Matches offered me, which I say, but liked them not; for I had always been a general lover, and could not now come to particulars. But last it was my misfortune to see one; whom was wisht to; and which se first light robbed me ar once; both of my selfand good company. Poline my I was pleasing and affable, desirous and helical of good society, but never lived rill now an Anchorize on earth. Neither did I ever till now see up mine eyes to one particular sace, giving them free liberty to wander. But now at last sell from my primitive liberty, losing it rotally, by docage on a Creature, and that a Woman too: a just judgment on me for my mani-

fold

ch they fer his felf. I rds, or en fible. ou the extra-Stions,

my fuemrents ithout hi hree et ime

but his ticeby

two or e chareguin fley. I faw, gene-

ulars. hom i ed me

s and HOW MOM iving left t

elly, man 1801-

fold

fold fins, to throw this thing in my way for me brought forth at fix moneths miner . 18 sldmuh or Now began our domefielt Givil Ware, of the

was carried on with fach, fery berryeon there was hardly an threeffl in the Kirchin that

could red in quiet y will que had out ean coullife, whileling how state offer before we were

How be was married, and what kind of thing bis Macunitionfe two much be forcioty) when

ber. But now ber to coe work due a seenah T Made firid enquiry after the condition of my intended Wifes Parents, and found by report they were very wealthy. In a fhort time we had conference together about the Portion, and my Effate, and therein we were all farisfied. My Courthip was very Noble, yet not prodigal, for fear of giving offence; and in a little while we were married. By her looks I thought her fo modell, that an unchaffe chought durft not encer into her head, fince all immodest expressions the banihed from her ears, and and bis! well red

The first night I thought to have had the first take, but my expenience rold me the Tarrises had been there before. This Aruck me into an amazement, that there thould appear fuch Virginwhiteness, & the extract of innoceace in her face, yet beguilty of a crime to notorious. Much perplext I was, but durft not went my felf, what was more then bare suspicion. In one half years time what I intended to conceal could be hid no longer, being brought to bed three months before her time; and yet the Bawd her Midwife would make

me

me believe this was ufunl; and that Children

brought forth at fix moneths might live.

Now began our domestick Civil Wars, which was carried on with fuch fury between us, that there was hardly an Ucenfil in the Kitchin that could reft in quiet for flying about our ears continually. My Wife acted the Silent Woman to the life, whilest in a fingle state; for before we were married all her answers were very short, comprehended within the two Monofyllables of I, and No;and those two must be forcibly extracted from her. But now her tongue wagg'din a perpetul motion, and her voice fo shrill and loud, that it would be heard diffinctly, though a piece of Ordnance were discharged near her at the sametime, or flanding at the Bell-room-door whileft the Bells were ringing. Frequent were her complaint to her Father and Mother, which slienated their affection from me, fo that their only fludy was how to be rid of me. Her forgeries (to excuse her own Devilry) had so infligated them, that they fought my ruine by all wayes imaginable. Be fides, they laid an Imbargo on the rest of my Wives portion unpaid; adviting her withal to fecure what the could, for her own felf-prefermvacion. She followed their instructions so exactly, that in a short rime I found my felf in a very de clining condition, yet knew not the cause till it was too late, conveying away both my goods and money, some whereof went to supply the necelfities of her Stallion. Course was

I was all along jealous of this, though I could not conclude beraltogether fo culpable. But my doubts and fears which of all are the (harpest pal-

fions,

bildren

which s, that in that contito the

omprel, and d from petual that it

Ordtime, ft the

y was ther they

Bef my al to

aly,

and eccf-

my pa[-

ons,

fions, could not turn this diffemper into a difease (although they looks through false Opticks, making things appear like evening shadows, disproportionable to the truth, and strangely longer then the true substance) till knowledge hereof (confirmed me by the witnesses of my eyes) had banish bare suspicions.

Which was thus, One night I caused my self to be brought home by a Porter as dead drunk; my Wife received me in that condition (I perceived by peeping out of my eye-lids) with much facisfiction, and was immediately carried up to bed; with much difficulty they undreft me, precending my felf afleep all this while, and fo they left me.lt. feems by the flory that my Wife prefently fent away the Maid (which was her Pimp) to her friend to come at fuch an hour. About nine of the clock the Maid was posted to bedjand about ten I heard one small knock at the door : he needed not to knockthere any longer, for there was one below that was ready to receive him. When I judg'd they were incircled in each others arms, (which I undeflood by hearkning at the bottom of the stairs, and thereby knew where about they were) I ran in upon them with my Sword (which I had prepared ready) & thinking to have run them through the body, intending to make a passage for their Souls escape, I past my Sword through the fleshy pert of both their thighs. At which they made a most hideous outcry, fo that the Maid came running down, & a Watchman that flood just at my door hearing the noise, knocke at the door, to know what was the matter; the Maid apprehending the danger, let him in, who by the help of his Candle, never faw fo ftrange a fight; for I had so pin'd them together, that they could not fir. As well as they could speak, they both begg'd their pardon for their lives only, which I granted, as look

ing on my revenge fomewhat facisfied.

My Gentleman I dilmift, but as for his Miftrels I was forced to fend for a Chyrurgeon, whole wound needed no probing, but tenting, for it was through and through. There was no concealing of what was done; wherefore in the morning carly I acquainted her Parents with what had happen'd last night. Infifting further, that fince the hadinflead of purring off handlomly the Chain of Mitrimony rudely broke it, it should be her own demage; neither would I beat the coft of a visitation to repair the breach. To which I added that had! deny'd her things requilite or necessary, or nor performed duly my duty the might have had fone presence for her flighting me, and look upon me only as a falle Crow for up in a Garden, token others from the fouit it cannot cafte it lelf. But fince it was otherwise, and that the had nothing to object against me, but onely sometimes curbing her igordinare defires ; I wish chem to fave me the labour of having the Law to tear ber fromme, but that they would remove her elfewhere.

They reply'd but little, hastning to their daughters and fearing worle mischief might ensue, they instantly conveyed her into the Country. She had not remained there long, before the was cured, and not enduring to be confined to folimeinely, repaired again to the City, where now the live, as such do that keeps Civet-Cats; but I hear he is very refer to to all but such the lenows the may intrust her self with.

As well heir paras lock.

Mistress whole or it was accaling

ng early
appen'd
had inof Maown dafacation
ac had I

or nor adfome pon me co keep

if. But bing to unbing we me

iaughc, they

cured, cincb, lives,

e may There there never yet was Woman made,

Nor shall, but to be curst;
sed ob! that I (fond I) should first in additional of any Lover

This Truth at my own charge to other Fools discover. Lethat have promis'd to your felves

Propriety in Loves

know womens bearts like straws do move,

And what we call

ther Sympathy, is but love to jet in general.

All Mankind are alike to them;

And though we Iron find

That never with the Loadstone joun'd.

That never with the Loadstone joyn do "Tis not the Irons fault,"
It is because the Loadstone y t was never brought.

If where a gentle Bee bath fullen
And luboured to his power,

A new fucceeds not to that flower,
But paffeth by,

Tis to be thought the Gallans elsewhere Touds bis

For field she flowers ready stand; sivbs ro no in One buzzes round about, i was 1, hold with nogu

One lights, one tasts, gets in, gets out. (them.

All always use them,

Till all their sweets are gone, and all again resuse.

However, I must confess my own faults, as well as condemn others, which was, I was too inquisive after that which the more I knew, would the more disturb me. Of all things the less we know, the better. Gudiosity in this reinders a manastridiculous a Coxcomb, as that Cuckold Sin John Suckling

Suckling mentioneth, who made diligent enquire whether he was made to in a bed, or on a Coath, and whether his dury-officiating Cavalier pulled

off his Spurs first or not, &c.

Well, it was my hard face to Marry thus like one doom'd to priton, who expecting to lie in spinvate room, is confined to the Hole. Had I married the best, I believe I should have found my selfin the Stocks,' Tis ftrange that I of all men should be deceiv'd by this thing that was like a box bearing drugs not fuitable to the infeription. Had not my passion hung in my eyes, when I lookt into her difposition and carriage, I might have easily underflood that her behavior in the presence of me wi only like action on a publike Stage, and that the evil of her natural inclinations were hid from me under the vail of filence and feeming modelly. And indeed my pallace was bed-ridden, and is scarce sensible of sauce, much less of meat. But fince I have had fuch ill lock in marriage, which tome vainly and falfly account a merry-age, I full in the ensuing Discourse give you some infinction or advice as Land-marks. For having fplic upon this Rock, I may the better be a Pylottonother that would fail this way.

CHAP. XXII.

Some Observations concerning Love and Women; stated out of the choicest Commentators on their mature, together with his own experimental restections.

L Ove 'tis confest is a Natural distemper, a kind offmall Pox; most have either had it, or is to exped

w hich

enquiry a Coach r pulled

in a primarried my felfin hould be bearing not my her difunderme was

r hat the rom me nodefty. and fo . But which e, I shall instru-

ot toa-

en; feeir nalions.

kind ris to xpe&

spedit, and the fooner the better. Surely I was never well cur'd on't, or elfe I had not thus fallen nto a Relaps. Want of knowledge mifguided me thet, and to I fell into a Quagmire; but I knew not what possest me to ride afterward into another on purpole. Love-feeds when it grows up to Matrimony is good for nothing, like some Fruittrees which must be transpanted before they will bring forth any thing. And when Love in this naure doth feed, the encreafethereof is diffatisfaction forrow and vexation multiplyed. This aforementioned is not truely love but luft; for I cannot believe that that noble passion can bethe ruine of ins subject; neither would I have it disparaged by fo unworthy an object as a woman. If there be Love, it should be to Heaven, a male-friend, relations, or our Countries preservation, and not tos Female-piece of imperfection. And yet nothing will ferve the turn, but monopolizing it by Marriage, because we would make it furely our own, and nevertheless our own till then. For if the be young, the is like an Hawk upon her wing; and if he be handsome, the is the more subject to go out at check. Faulkners that can but feldom fpring right game, should still have something to take them down. The lure to which all stoop in this World, is either garnisht with profit or pleasure, and when you cannot throw her the one, you must be content to flew out the other. Confider again that woman (besides the trouble) is a Rent-charge which though the curiofity of man hath often inclosed, yet he cannot for his life stop so well one gep, but it will lie open for any stragler, by

which means it feldom improves or become feuitful. And why hould a woman be denvedib liberty of breaking a pane in her own window or not admitted the freedom of regress to berom falliport, letting in whom the effects as friends If you will not give them the permission, you mist be forc'd to wink when they take it, or do work crofs them, and they will endeavour the notine ving a crofs in your Pocket. Take it which wer you will, Marriage is the dearest way of curing love. Faring with fuch, as it doth with those for the most part that at great charges walking grounds and plant, who cheaper might have en en Mellons elsewhere, then Cucumbers in their own Garden. Befides, it is a grofs piece of igne rance to be bound up to love for an age, when the cause of love may perith for a month and thenthe effect will follow. If it be natures plant in the feet that doth induce you; those beautiful flowers of redand white, a difeafe will quickly wither, if no, ravishing time will deflower the choicest beauty. But the ill consequents of Marriage are moreto be confidered, which are commonly drawn from the evil inclinations of that Sex. Eve by flumbling at the Serpents Collicitations caft her Husbandout of Paradice; nor are her Daughters furer of foot, being foundred by the heat of luft and pride It were fomething if Marriage could answer theatpectation of all the books the cure of; for infleted of quenching the hot coals of concupifcence, itaggravates the simple fin of Fornication, makingst Sprout into Adultery. What might be faid more as to this Subject, I shall refer the Reader to the

Writings

become enyedth window berom friends you mul o work not in nich way f curing hole for wallsin ave eat im cheir of ignohen the henche he face wers of s if not eauty. moreto n from mbling andout f foot de le he esinflead e,italkingst d more co the

itings

Writings of that ingenious Gentleman Mr. Frantis Sherne. If any more (like boys ftript and ftand fivering about the brink) are ready to leap inco love Whirl-pit, and fo endanger the lofs of themselves, let them first look upon Love to be an idle fancy, and Wedlock of a dangerous confequence. If I could perswade you from loving one: would think the other then would be difregarded. but fome to their cofts can fpeak the contrary An defirst place, marry none but whom you love : for he that marries where he doth not love, will bye where he did not marry. If you are prone to love one particular person, some are of opinion that travel is an excellent remedy : For absence doth in a kind remove the cause, removing the obich Others think that frequent vifits (whereas the rating of them indears the affection) may by a furprizal discover some defects, which though they cure not absolutely, yet they qualife the vehement heat of an amorous Feavor; and as neer as can be, let it be unfeafonably, either when the is in fickness or disorder, by that a man may know he is but mortal, and but a woman; the last would be enough to a wife man for an Antidote. Enterinto discourse with her of things she daily hers not, and it will confirm the cure Neither will it be amifs to contrive your felf into the company of variety, especially such beauties which are generally cry'd up; and if you can, tafte them all, (but now I think on't, it is no mutter, one is fufficient for a surfeit) for this Malady is better remedy'd this way, then by abilinence: good jovial company will much conduct to the cure.

But

But, I like not the prescription of Marriage fince it is the last and most dangerous receipts like a kind of live Pigeons apply'd to the foaling the feet, which remedy to fay truth, is worfethen the disease : Were it possible for a Woman tobe conftant to one, fomething might be faid, but ! never yet tried any which did not very much her their displeasures when offered some kindnessbur never found any to refuse them, if opportunity & privacy of place admitted their reception; which hath made me often in my own thoughts quellion my mothers honefly and fidelity to my Father.

What I now utter, is not derived from preje dice to that Sex, grounded on my own Wifes difloyalty; but experience tells me this, which mot paft fixteen very well underftand, that therear few Women, let them pretend what they pleafe, but will yeild to the temptations of the flesh, and fo much the fooner, by how much the professent fome new light, which is Ignis fatuus that leads them into the Quagmires of all forts of erroneous Tenents. With this dark Lanthorn-Light they dazle the eyes of fuch as would pry into their aions, whiles behind in the dark they fenfusly facisfie themselves undiscovered.

Experience dictates what I here express; for I have had converfe with feveral of these Religious precenders, that in the very act would very much inveigh against Adultery with their tongues, whilftheir Bloods willingly confented to the commiffion of that fin, and then immediately after

feem extremely penfive.

They will make it their daily discourse, speak-

arriage

receipt

foals of

rie then

an tobe

. but f

ich they

nefs, but

rtunity

nswhich

question

ather.

n preje

ifes difch mot here are pleafe,

th, and ofessenh

at leads

ht they

their a-

nfually

fs ; for

eligious

y much

ongues,

e com-

y after

Speak-

ngagainst such whose natural inclinations have prompted them to unlawful satisfaction of their usts, and yet they themselves are at the same time hudying how they may secretly and securely accomplish the same thing.

To conclude, Woman in general is the very exract of inconstancy, and therefore it is but a vain
hing for any to think she can absolutely love one
man. Such who are found constant to their Huslands preferring their welfare before the indulging of their own by-respects, ought to be looke
on no less then Miracles of their Sex, by such
who are acquainted generally with Female dispoirions and actions:

CHAP XXIII.

He cheats his Creditors by knavish breaking, and runs away for Ireland. He is Shipporackt on the Isle of Man.

Whilst my Credit was good, I thought good to make use of it, lest that failing, I should want an opportunity to march off with slying Colours. To raise my repute amongst my Neighbours (whom I knew would spread abroad what they had seen) I caus'd a Porter (whom I could intrust) to carry out privately an hundred pound, and a little while after to come with a trusty friend of mine with that, and five or six hundred pound bags more on his back, openly carrying them. Upon my receipt hereof, I presently tumbled the Money

Money out of the bag (which had really money in it) on the Counter, purposely making a gran noise: having told it over (my friend standing by the while) I put it up; and precending to layth afide and take another, I took up the fame again fo doing till I had told it over five or fix time then writing in publike view a Receipt, with much civility and respect I dismist my Gentleman, Au thus did I thrice in a months time; fo that by this means without suspition I conveyed away a gra quantity of my Goods, which people though had fold, & therefore thought me to have agra trade. Report bereby rendred me a man of w dealing, to that now I had goods dayly offer me, some whereof I received, promifing tother payment at three moneths, others at fix; where as I intended they should fray till her had be rwelve Apostles for her Jury. What Wares Moneys I could take up , I did , not mattering what rate. To some of the more wary fort been feft a Judgment for their fecurity. I needed not have spoken in the Singular number, for I delle ded four with my Judgments. What commodite I had, I converted into money by a bill of Sale and fo went away , leaving my Creditors tolk out a Scacute of Bankrupt if they fo pleased; which I valued not, if once out of their reach. Tom chiefest Creditor I fent these lines, to the intel he should not tax me with incivility for going! way, and not fending him word.

Credit doth strengthen such whose Trades are mul But too much Credit, Sir, did make me break, Credit to finking Trades-men is a prop;

But bad you kept your Wares, I'de kept my Shop. Pray do not blame me, Sir, because I how Away to pay those many debts you owe : Which you may do, if you'l advised be, Which is in fort, prepare to follow me. Believe me, faithful Sir, in what I fara I went before, but to hew you the way : But if you will not, don't lament your loss. For in your Money I do bear the crofs. Grief will diftratt you, and deftroy your wit; Good Sir, preferve it, for y'ave paid for it.

I rid post for Holy-bead night and day, fothat I mived there in a very fort time : going to difmount, I tumbled off, neither could I rife again; ontinual and unaccustomed riding had almost illocated every bone in my body, notwithstanding it was swathed forthat purpose. The next by I made a shift to walk abroad to view the Raities of the Town, but found nothing rare but undsome Women, Civility, and good Drink. In wo days time we fet Sail: we had not ran above hree Leagues before the Sky darkned; the Wind blew hard at a South-East, and the Waves rose nountain-high: In an hours time we were forced ocur our Masts by the board, and lightning the ship as much as we could, let herdrive. Every nan fell to his Prayers, expeding every moment going when they should be swallowed up by the Sea. As or my part, I now thought divine vengeance had wertaken me, and would reckon with me for all ny Rogueries; I looke on my felf as Jonas, & was much troubled that others should suffer for my hiquities. About three a Clock in the morning

are per reak.

money in

g a great

inding by

o lay that

me again

ax times

with much

man. And

at by this

y a great

hough

ve a great n of wal

v offer'd

gtothen

; where

had be

Waresor

tering 4

re Lcon

ed not

or I delu

moditio

of Sale

ors tolu

d; which

he inten

Tom

ning we heard a hideous noise occasioned by the beating of the Sea against the Rocks, which was ecchoed by the loud and lamentable cries of the Seamen, who now knew there was no hope for it. Now could I pray heartily, that had never pray'd in my life before; but my Devotion was foon spoiled, for the Ship struck in between two Rocks. I lookt out, and methought the dashing of the waves looke perfectly like flashes of Fire. the fluck a little while, which gave five of us on portunity to leap out upon a Rock : we were no fooner there, before a wave fetcht her off, bu brought her on again, and split her all to piece. We five in the mean time riding aftride on a Rock behind one another, like fo many Criminals on Woodden-borfe. Sometimes a wave would frike clear over us, which indangered our washing of. Sometimes we thought to let go our hold, as looking upon our prefervation to be impossible; and withal imagining that the tide was coming in. At laft the hindmost could hold no longer, but crying Lord bave mercy on my Soul, committed himselfto the merciles Sea. Immediately came a tumbling Sea and washt off the next; now did I expet this every wave would prove my Executioner. But it was not decreed (I suppose) that I shouldbe drown'd. Day broke, fo that we could discern we were not a Coits cast from the Shore, and thatthe Sea was ebbing. We waited not above an hour before we crawled to Shore, for go we could not, our joynts were so benum'd by the cold. up the Beach, and could difcern a little way diffant a small Cottage; thither we repaired with much difficulty, and were kindly entertained, pittyed

d by the

hich was

es of the

e for us.

r pray'd

Rocks.
of the
Here
of us op-

off, but

o pieces.

a Rock

als on a

ld frike

as look-

le ; and

g in. At

t crying,

melfto

umbling

pea thu

er. But

houldbe

Cern We

thatthe

an hour

uld not,

Wegot

y diftant

ch much

pittyed,

210

med informed where we were. We stay'd about a week in this life of Man, without one farthing expence. For the Inhabitants are generally very civil and courteous, and especially to Strangers. From thence we imbarkt for Dublin.

CHAP. XXIV.

His Arrival into Ireland: be changeth bis Name: what trick be ferv'd his first Landlady; all his Money being spent, and those Goods and Coyn likewise Shipmrackt which he expected to follow him.

TTE landed at a place called Ringfend about V a mile from Dublin. I was askt whether I would have a Coach. Where are there any, faid 1? (for I lookt about me, and could fee nothing like a Coach) the fellow looks upon me to be a very ignorant person, because I understood not what be meant, and angerly spake thus : By my Goffips band, thou can't not fee very much well, arra look bere is one by thine own fide. It was a great while before I could cell what language he spoke, he did so tone his words; neither could I understand him, till one standing by interpreted him. As for his Ringsend-Coach, as he call'd it, it was Wheel-barrow fashion, only it had two Wheels not much bigger then a large Cheshire Cheese: the Horse that drew this Princely-pygmy-Charior, I at first miltook for an over-grown Masty; but viewing him narrowly, found him the extract (by his shape) of

P

a Scotch-Hobby ; well, up I mounted , but could not invent a name for the manner of my riding, for I was neither coacht nor carted, but I fancyed my felf(and that juftly)as I was riding to be fome notorious Malefactor drawn on a Sledge to the place of execution, which afterwards experimentally I found Dublin to be: many of its Inhabitants call this City Divlin, quaft Divels Inn, & very properly it is by them fo termed; for there is hardly a City in the world that entertains such variety of Devils Imps as that doth. If any knavilly break murder, rob, or are defirous of Polygamy, they ftraightway repair thither, making that place, or the Kingdom in general, their Azylum, or Sandaary. My first care was to plant my felf conveniently; the next day I fent for a Barber to shave all my hair off, ordering him to bring me a Periwiggof an absolute contrary colour to my own hair; to the intent, that if I should meet with any of my former acquaintance, they might not know me, whereby I should prevent their sending notice to any where I was. The truth of it is, in this difquize I hardly knew my felf. The greatest difficulty ! found, was to make my felf familiar with my fide cions name. At first when my Landlady called me by that name, I either ftar'd her in the face, or looks behind me, (not answering thereunto)thinking the had spoke to some man else: but had I not pretended to be thick of hearing, and fo that way apologizing for my filence, my delign might have been marr'd. I daily met with feveral I knew, but would not take the least cognizance of them.

In this manner I spent a moneth, but all this while no tidings of my Goods and Money; that

which

which I had brought with me was all confumed. My Landlady (as it is customary there, having as little truft or faith as they have Religion) called! upon me for what I owed her. For a little white ft foother mouth, by telling her lhad a confiderable; quantity of Goods and Mony too coming, which lexpeded by every fair wind. A little while after ! heard the Ship in which they were was cast aways Now did I absolutely conclude Gods just judgement attended my fraud and knavery. My loss to did not in the least discover to any; knowing ! hould reap at first only some pitty, and afterwards be undervalued & and difrespected. My Hoftes again, was very importunare with me to have her Reckoning : I endeavoured to put her off, fayings I expedied daily Bills of Exchange; but the would not believe me; for I perceived that the had been often cheated with fuch delufions.

Now did I not know what to do: I thought good torry another way; the being a Widdow, I. fancyed I could work upon her Female frailty : I uled all means polible to get her alone; which I did but feldom, and then did I make use of all my Rhetorick to perswade her into a belief, how dearly I loved her; the replyed little, but would laugh at me till the held her fides again. I verily believe the understood my drift, which I might argue from her expressions. Sometimes she would fay, Come, come, away with thefe love-fooleries, and pay me what you owe. Then would I tell her all I enjoyed, and my felf too, were properly here, and that the might cake them when the pleased into her possession. No, no, she would fay, my youthfull days are past, and it is time for me to look

P 4

Heaven-

n.
all this
; that
which

ut could

riding,

fancyed

be fome

e to the

bicants

ery pro-

s hardly

ricty of

break,

, they

ace, or

Sandu-

enient-

all my

wiggof

ir; to

y of my

ow me,

rice to

licquize

culty l

y ficti-

led me

ce, or

chin-

d I not

at way

t have

w, but

Heavenwards; wherefore let fall your fuit, &c. Since words would no ways prevail, I refolved to try fomething elfe, knowing how difficult it is for a Woman when in bed to refuse a Venereal proffer. To that purpose one night I came fofth into her Chamber, and groping with my hand for her face, I caught a man by the Beard: at which he awaked, and thinking the Devil was come to trin him, or rob him of his Wah-balls, would have cryed our aloud, but that fear had so lockt up his voice, that his highest note was little louder then whispering; I could but just hear him fay, Inthe name of ___ what art ? I am , faid I, (and then the wak'd too) no Ghoft, but a living witness of your leachery, to that intent I came hitherto be fully satisfied of what I have a long time sufpected. As for you Madam, your youthful days are past, but your lust will endure for ever. If this be your way to Heaven, why were you fo uncharitable as not to let me go along with you? As for your part, Sir, I believe that you are traveling that way too; for if I mistake not, you lately came out of Purgatory.

To be short, they both intreated me to be selent, and retire to my own lodging, and that in the morning they would treat with me to my full sense faction. This was what I aimed at, though brought about otherwise then intended. Early they both came to me: the pious Gentlewoman being very tender of her credit, would forgive me my Debt, if I would not blemish her reputation by my report; her Gallant gave me ten pieces to bind the bargain: having gotten a discharge under her hand, I sealed our contract with an Oath and

faith-

, e.c.

refolved

ule ie is

enercal

e fofely

and for which he to trim ald have

t up his der then In the

witness

itherto

me ful-

If this

nchari.

As for

ngthat

me out

o be fi-

t in the

full 6.

chough

Early

nan be-

ive me

cion by

under

th and

faith-

faithful promise never to divulge their shame. The Gentleman (though his estate much exceeded hers) out of spight, I think, or vexation, to be so caught, incontinently married her, though all former sollicitations (which I understood were many) proved inessexual.

CHAP. XXV.

He is driven to extreme necessity; be describes what it is to be indigent, by what he suffered in that condition.

This ten pound I received from my old leacherous Dotard, made its Exit almost assoon as its entrance into my Pocket: by that sum I thought to have purchased Mountains in Ireland (and indeed there is too great plenty of them there,) by gaming; but experience told me afterwards that my design was hazardous, and so it proved, for I met with a person that bubbled me at Hazard, not leaving me a penny, and ingaged besides for my proportion of the Reckoning. My Gamester dealt too hardly with me, yet it was but just, for I intended to show him as little savour, if compell'd to lye at my mercy, which I verily thought would be, having various Utensils about me to that purpose, but I was overmatcht.

Ithought my self secure, for I could top,
By which I've forc'd some Cits to leave their shop.
I palm'd, and put the change upon them too;

The English Rogue: Or,

218

I only studyed bow I might undo.

But now I'm met with, 'tis but just I see,

That be which others cheats, should cheated be.

I returned to my Lodging, (which was noneof the best) with what anxiety and percurbation of mind I shall give any looser leave to imagine, whilft the remembrance thereof enforceth meto speak; and I hope the Reader will give me that liberty, fince the Proverb intaileth on the loofer that priviledge. I acquainted my Landlord with my misfortune, who feem'd very much to condole me for the present, but it was afterwards the occafion of his not crediting me. From hence I will advife all to speak as little as they can of ills that beride them; but we cannot discourse too much of the good that happens to us. Perceiving my Landlord grew cold, my spirit was too high to be any longer beholding to him but for my Lodging; wherefore I seldom came home till night. Neither would I make known my condition to any that knew me. Sometimes I should meet with some in the fireet, who would ask me to drink with them! my usual answer was, I came from it but even now: infilling farther, that fuch a Gentleman, with two or three more besides my felf had drank so much, and that I admired at my felf, for being fo fober; whereas to deal ingeniously, I had not drank one drop that day. Another feeing me would ask me whether I would dine with him at the Ordinary? then would I pretend that my Lord --- Gentleman over-perswaded me to dine with him, and that we had fuch variety, that I doubted my flomack had received some detriment chere. thereby; and therefore beg'd an excuse; whereas a dry crust taken out of my Leather Cupboard was all the varieties the Gentleman-Ufher of my tomack, my throat I mean, had taken cognizance of that day. So hard it was too, that I would look this way, and that way, not daring to commit it to he engine of my Chops, unless there was none near me within a furlong; for had there been any near me, they would have fworn I was eating Walnuts hells and all. Now did I learn to drink Water, which necessity made me to commend as the most foveraign liquor, and most fuitable to the body of man; otherwise Adam in Paradice would not have been without a cup of Ale.

Every morning I offer'd up my Devotions either to St. Patrick, of St. 7 ames, each of which have two excellent Wells dedicated to the honour of their Saintships. Thither did I repair constantly twice or thrice a day : after I had offered up the fumes of smake (most commonly of none of the best Tobacco) I kneeled, not using the common way of drinking out of the chained iron dift, but with greater adoration fuckt it as it came through the conveyance. After a walk to Kilmanum (about amile from Dublin) or fome other place to prepare my flomack, I return's to Chrift-Church, frequently dining there with Sir Richard Strang-bom: Reflecting on his Cheer, and the Liquor of chose two Saints, I cannot but tell you my thoughts of both.

Sir Richard Scrang-bow keeps an honfe where Wine And Bread some sup on, but few seldom dine. Ask yet an bungry Rambler , and be'll fay, (Though

chere.

noneof ation of magine, h me to that lie loofer ord with condole

he occa-

will adthat bemuch of y Landbe any egaigbo; Neither my that

some in h chem: en now: vich two much, g (0 fo-

ned not ing me, ich him

that my to dine , that I

triment

(Though not one bit came near his mouth that day)
He plentifully din'd with him, so let him still
Till he bath found his empty belly fill,
Where I ne're could, which made me hate in fine
Sir Richard Strang-bows Feasts, St. Patricks Vin.

I fasted so long, I had now almost forgot how to eat : for if cafually I came where meat was, I often made a proffer to convey fomething to my mouth, but my lips understood not my meaning: for having been fo long unaccustomed to their duty, knew not how to perform their gaping office. It was impossible at this time for the greatest fright to have made me foul my breeches, because I feldom used any thing that might cause excrements. And therefore I wondred to hear any enquire for an house of Office, fince I had now left off going to fool. Once in five days I thought! flood in need of evacuating; but I was mistaken, for by discharging a blast of wind (whose tury scattered small stones underneath me) I foundit only a fit of the Cholick. I shall deal plainly, should I have found a propenfity, I would have been very unwilling to let any thing go out, fince fo little pat into my belly. Some Moveables I had left, which I was forced to dispose of, to keep the passage of my guts open, which would frequently grumble against my stomach for detaining too long what was received, challenging a propriety therein. thought it good policy not to buy any Belly-timber of a quick concoction, because it should they the longer within me. To this purpose I lookt on old Cheese to be food convenient; knowing that though it will difgest any thing else, yet it cannot difget

lay)

ot how

was, I

to my

ning;

eirdu-

office.

reates

ecaule

excre-

ny en-

ow left

ought

staken,

e tury

ound it

Chould

n very

tle pat

which

Tage of

umble

g what

rein.

y-tim-

ld ftay

okt on

ig that

annot

difget

difgeftit felf; and as it closeth up the mouth of the stomack, so by its respective quality it locks up faft the Postern of the Micro-cosm. Fleshagain(if I got any) I would (wallow by whole-fale, fearing left by chewing it, my ftomack would too fuddenly give it a paffport to my Hypo-gaftrium; by which means it would be immediately ready again, nay refless in the craving more. I seldom flept for the gnawing of my flomack, & the anguish of my guts, and for want of those fumes which proceeding from Meat ascended into the head, and so the causers of seep. If I chanced to nod at any time, I dreamed of nothing but eating, my fancy feeding that while as voraciously as an hunger-starved hound on a shoulder of Mutton. I was driven to that pass, I could not juftly tell whether I was alive or not. Sometimes I was of the opinion that I dyed in our Ship-wrack on the Ife of Man, and that I was now a Soul in Purgatory.

Immediately after my arrival in this place, the Itch and Bunniah, or Flux, (the two grand Epidemical distempers of Ireland) gave me their well-come into their Country, attended by a great number of six-sooted Gent. clad in a gray livery, with one single list down the back; who all promised to stick to me & be my bosome-friends, neither would they for sake me as long as life lasted. But they like the rest of the best and sairest promising friends lest me, when fortune committed me prisoner to the merciles cruel hands of that accursed Goaler, Poverty. I was grown so lean, that the Mungril Scotch and Irish Gentleman the Itch, sinding not sless and Irish Gentleman the Irish Gentleman the Irish Gentleman the Itch, sinding not sless and Irish Gentleman the I

fland

ftaid with me as long as any thing was left in my belly, but finding no substance from my Guts, took his leave also, unkindly carrying away all that was within me. Their retinue perceiving they were like to feed on hard meat, there being little left but bones, whose teeth were incapable of fall-ning thereon, resolv'd to follow after; some making more then ordinary haste, broke their nech off the Cape of my Cloak, missing their some the threads thereof being spun out by time as sine as those of Arachnes working.

To conclude, I was a meer walking Skeleton, my skin only serv'd as a mantle for my bones. But for wind, my belly would have contradicted an approved Philosophical Axiome, proving a Va-

синт.

One time passing by the Castle-gate, a Souldier fir'd his Musquet, and I protest methought my belly sounded like a Drum at the report. Should I relate every particular wherein the malevolencie of Fortune afflicted me, I should much tire the Reader, as well as perplex my self with remembrance; wherefore I shall desist, and give you leave to imagine the deplorableues of his condition, who hath neither Monies, Friends, nor Gredit, and in a place where he is neither acquainted with the people, nor their Language.

CHAP. XXVI.

He falling accidentally into a strange house, endeavours to build a Sconce, but is frustrated of his intent. The old Hostess pities him at first, and relieves him, and continually after seeds him for her own peculiar Diet; further insisting on the misery be then endured.

T Was by this time grown to feeble by fasting, or by the manner of my feeding, which was either Cheefe or hard Eggs, (there being great plenty) that I could hardly go; and so light I was by continual smoking, that I questioned often whether I was not a meer fume my felf; fearing fill when I walkt abroad, to be extracted by the Sun for an exhalation. Fortune so favour'd me one day, that Hound a Groat, which put me into an extafie of joy. I know not what Magical power there was in that valt fum of four pence, for in an inftant, not knowing by what means, I found my felfin a Viaualling-house, so speedy was my conveyance, as if Ihad been riding some Damon through the air. I call'd for some meat, but my voice sounded so hollow, as if I had spoken in a vault. Some said, it was the Eccho of some person speaking in the next house: others of the wiser fort believed me to be some Spearum, or Apparition; and that the Devil had affum'd a body speaking in that mortuum cadaver.

CHAP.

y Guts, way all ing they

of fall-

ir necks

ooting,

e as fine

eton, my

But for

ouldier

she my

evolen-

tirethe

emem-

dition,

Credit, ed with

ver. The truth of it is, 'twas fomething hardto determine, whether I spake or no, but that they might perceive my lips to open. There was a Physician in the house at that time, who looking on me narrowly openly proclaim'd that I wasthe workmanship of some Mortal, who having first gotten the Skeleton, or bones of a Man, hadarificially skin'd them over, and that German Clock work caus'd my motion. I would have laught heartily at their ridiculous apprehensions, but that I had forgot how. I had fome Gall left in me fill, which made me fart up in as great a rage as my feeble body was able to declare, intending to demonstrate to them how grofly they were mist. ken; but perceiving me to approach, they all fled but Mr. Doctor, whom fame retain'd, otherwife by a fit of an Ague (which just then posses him)! knew he would willingly have been gone too. Speak (faid he tremblingly) what art ? I was some what puzled at his question, for I knew not well what I was : I am a living man, faid I. Why the thou wouldft bave floft, faid he. After feveral dis courses to this purpose, I at length made him partly believe that I was no fuch thing he imgined. And yet he would be asking me still a many impertinent questions, as whether I could feet and his reason was, because he could discern no eves. Whether I was born without eyes, or lol them fince accidentally, &c. I was forced total him at laft that it was the Country difeafe that had reduced me to this condition. Hearing me fay fo, he pitied me much, and told me he would fetch instantly something that should do me much good. I thankt him, and away went Mr. Dodor.

hardto

was a

ooking

wasthe

ng first

Clock-

laught

is, but

c in me

ding to

milte-

all fled

aer Wile

him) [

e coo.

s Come-

ot well

by thes

al dif-

le him

e ima-

a ma

Id fees

or lot

totel

Ce that

ing me

would

e much

octor.

The good Woman over-hearing our discourse drew neer then considertly, and demanded what I would have? I told her, any thing which was estable, as far as a groat would go. She brought me some hot Meat, and setting it before me, went for some drink, but before she could return I had swallowed it all: she fetcht me more, which went the same way with as much celerity. But like Quick-silver it wrought quite through me, not saying a quarter of an hour.

The manner whereof was thus: About to pay my Reckoning, my Groat got into a piece of paper; I fumbled a great while in my pocket, but found it not, which put me even to my wits ends. At laft drawing out some papers, and shaking them my Groat dropt; perceiving its fall might be dangerous, there being many holes in the Floor, I catche after it; notwithftanding it fell upon the very brink of an hole; what with haft to recover in, and the fright the danger put me into, Idiccharged my felf of every bit I had eaten. was no body could fay, I had fouled my Breeches, orthat I ftunk; which I made appear to my Landlady by showing her what I had evacuated, but little differing from what I had eaten a quarter of an hour before. The good old woman perswaded me frongly to eat it again; for faid the, it cannot be much the worfe for just passing through you's and I will fry it if you pleafe. I thought I should now have dyed with laughter at her ftrange proposition; but the woman star'd upon me, not knowing whether Fgrin'dor laught. Well, well, faid heat laft, if you will not eat fuch good victuals; fome body else shall. I offer'd her my Groat, which she refus'd, telling me there was as much more to pay; I told her that was all the moneys I hadebout me, and that I would pay her the rest the next day.

But the for ber part thought it was unjust, To listen to the arguments of trust.

And therefore told me plainly the would have her Reckoning. I bid her flay a while: then affoon as the had turned her back I attempted to march off, but my frength failing me, I wanted swiftness and fo was brought back. I made her acquainted with my condition how miferable it was ; I need ed not many arguments to perfuade any into the belief, for my person was the true Emblemed mifery. She gave a ferious attention to what lespreft, and at last melted into tears, commiserating my misfortunes; the caus'd inflantly a bed tobe warm'd, where being laid, she ordered a Cavde to be made, & in fine thew'd a world of kindness to me, not imagining what the aim'd at. She would not let me fir out of my Bed but whilft it was me king for above a week; at the conclusion of which I began to recover a little colour in my cheeks, & grew indifferent frong; the gave me moneys in my Pocket, & told me I must walk into the fields with ber. I bleft my felf , and that Angel that directed my feet to the finding that loft groat which was the occasion of my restitution to a condition of living again. By this time I imagined what my old Gentlewoman expected: wherefore, in the first place! acknow.

d have affoon march fenels ainted needtothat eme of c lexrating d to be awdle ndness would 25 mawhich eks, & in my ls with rected vasche living

Gen-

place I

know.

which

ore to

had a-

eft che

acknowledged how much I was obliged to her marchlels civilities, and that it was impossible for me to return her answerable farisfaction. Rowling her pretty Piggs-eyes to and fro in her head, I require (faid fhe) nothing but your Love. If it must needs be fo(thought I) there is no way better then to let fancy form her beautiful, and so by the force ofimagination I shall injoy as much pleasure as if. lying with Venus, though in Conjunction with this Succubus. We us'd not many ceremonies, (like puling-whining Lovers, that are always faying Grace, but never fall to) but taking the convenience of a Dirch underneath a bushy-topt hedge we conferred notes. Had any feen us in this posture, they would have concluded old Winter metamorphosed into an old Woman lying in a Dike, and that Flora was converted into a young man, and both in an unnatural Conjunction. Or that youthful Phabus had contracted his rays to court a lump of Ice, but with hame was forced to defiff; finding his powerful endeavours ineffectual in the production of a thaw. Whenever I wanted a small sum, a kiss or two, or the saying floved her, extracted so much as supplied my present occasions; if I wanted a sum contiderable, why then a quarter of an hours difcourle in privace effected my defires. Moftchat knew me wondred what politick stratagems I us'd that I fo fuddenly wound my felf out of that Labyrinth of all force of miseries, & that I appeared bothin feature and garb fo excentrick to my former condition. I had as many pretences to blind he world as there were various suspicions of pragmatick 0 2

matick persons. In short, I was now very well apparell'd, well furnisht with moneys , I kept my Horse, nay my Whore too; this I made use of for what the was, the other for what the had, So feemingly happy was the present flate of my life, that I deem'd it impossibly unalterable by any decree of fate.

CHAP. XXVII.

He makes a Ramble into the Country , takes fone Observations as be travelleth; and is soundly beaten for attempting to board a small Irith Pin-MACE.

Began now to be somewhat weary of the City, and therefore resolved to refresh my felf with the Country Air. I acquainted my Patronels therewich; who with much regret condescended, conditionally two days should be the utmost time

of my absence.

That morning I fet forth, there was fuch folemn leave taken between us, as if my voyage had been intended for the Indies. About to amount, the retrived my intentions, clasping me in her arms; ! should rather have chosen the imbraces of a he-Bear, as thinking her breath far (weeter; and truly I have often wondred at my recovery in fo impure and unwholfom air. Being on Horfe-back the fo bathed her Cheeks with tears (wanting no moisture, derived from an everlatting spring of humours distilling from her head)that you would

of for · So life, y de-

y well

pt my

fome undly h Pin-

City, with ones ded, teime

lemn been he remsil a fhe-; and in fo -back

ng no ng of would

have

have fworn the was the representation of the Pigwoman in Ben's Bartholomem-fair. Had not her wain Flood-gates drowned her eyes, I think the would have stood looking after me that way I rid till my return. Well, there is no fool like the old doring fool: And were lagain to love for interest, I would choose such a person. Your young skittish things that onely mind their pleasures, think they have done a man a courtefie that merits reward, if they admit him into their private familiarity, becaute they find fond man fo passionate and impatient in the profecution of his desires : And then again, having variety of Courtiers, they are too lenfible, that if one will not meddle with the bair, afecond will nibble ac it fo long till he is caught with the hook. Whereas a woman fricken in years, and having loft her beautiful allurements is difreguided & looke on as no fit subject for love to treat on; not but the may have as youthful defires as any; and if that way inclin'd, none so prone as she. For knowing the hath nothing but her wealth to attract withal, the will freely part with it for her self-latisfaction; and that the may not loofe her Stallion, constantly encourage him even to the exhaulting of what the hath. Moreover, finding the man to answer her expectations, the studies all ways imaginable how to pleafe him in every thing, that he may please her in that one thing.

But to my purpose: coming to Balle-more-Euface, a little beyond the Town, (which is in the County of Wicklow) there is a small River in the Summer-time not above knee-deep; I perceived a young woman about to cross it; drawing to the water, she stood not on the nicetics of modely, but pulled up her Cloaths to the wast. The sight hereof stopt me, and as near as I could opposite to her. She minded me not, but came straight over to me, and at about three yards distance let down her Coats. I observed so many excellencies that my blood began to boyl, and my slesh was all of slame. For her hair which naturally curled, and was plaited, was of a bright slaven, each hairin

the Sun glittered like a thred of Gold.

Here take notice by the way, that the Maids for the most part, Winter & Summer, go without any coverings on their head, which they wash all over every night; the meaner fort affoon as married wear Kerchers. She had an Angelical countenance, onely somewhat brownish by the Suns frequent kiffing of it; I know not whether I may adjudge that a deformity. The skin of her body might vye with Snow for whiteness, &c. I dismounted, & addreft my felf to her in English; she answered mein her own language, the understood me not : Then did I make use of that little Irif I had learned, which were some fragments of lecherous expressions, to which the replied, but I understood her not. To be brief, I fo far prevailed that I got her into a small Wood, in which the thick & spreading tops of the trees feemed to lay their heads together in confpiracy to keep not only the Suns entry, but also the curious fearch of any mortals eye. She permitted me to kifs, dally, lay my hands on her thigh, oc. which were the only Preludiums of what thould foljow. But herein / mistook, for their dispositions are much different from the English. We use to fay

deffy, e fight file to it over down s that ll of a d, and hairin ids for It any over ance, quent judge er vye & admein n did which 18,10 To be [mall fthe nipio the icted

ould ions fe to

fay

far, that where we gain over any woman the liberty to use the hand, we cannot fail of doing what we most defire: whereas quite contrary they will without the least opposition permit the first, but with the greatest difficulty admit of the last. For affoon as the faw me ready to engage, the cryed out incessantly , Whillallalloo ; and presently ! could hear this ululation ecchoed. I had just recovered my Horse, when two or three fellows. came running to me, the one with a Flail, the reft with long Poles. The first faluration / received was from the Flail, which failed but little of doing my bulinels: the next my Horses Crupper received; the poor beaft being civilly bred, could do no less then return them a Congee with his leg, which made one of them fall on his knees to his Malter, as if he had been Monarch of that Soil. Thefe two Rogues flood Hiffly to me, insomuch that I knew not what course to cake. The Villains were so minible, that one of them was continually before me hindring my flight, whilft the other drub'd me forward. I bethought my felf of a Piftol I had in my Pocket charged without a bullet; I drew it, prefented, and precended I would fire if they defitted not, for thele stupid fellows apprehended not the danger : perceiving how stupidly senseles they were, fir'd it full in the face of him that fronted me, who verily believ'd he had been fhor, & fo out of conceit (for they are naturally very timerous) fell down as dead; the other feeing that, ran away asswift as lightning, whereby I had leave to ride on, which I did (you may think) with no ordinary speed. Lovers may talk of their sufferings by their Mistress Q.4

Mistres frowns, or obdurateness, but let any one judge of mine by the blows I received; fighing is nothing to fighting, and a few tears are not to come in competition with dry basting. Poxon them they made me out of conceit with love for fix weeks after. I never thought of enjoying a woman fince; but the remembrance of those three Bog-trotters converted the hot sit of my amorous Fever into a cold one.

A little way from Baltinglass I took up my quarters for that night. The Inn I lay in was one flory high about the height of an extraordinary Pigfty, and there was one Chinney in it too, more then there is to be found in one of an 100 fuch Hovils. The good man well-com'd me after his fashion, but I think an Anthropophagus or Indian Man-eater would have done it as civily. I bid him fet up my Horse by figns, (for that was the language we converst in) but alass there was no other Stable but what was at the end of our Kitchin; our Dining-room, Bed-chamber, Pigfty, Pantry and Buttery, being all one, without diffinction or feparation. Some few Wattles (as they call them) were placed above, that was our Hay-loft. The onely door of our Inn was a large hurdle, much likes theep-pen. The Bannettee or good wife of the houle, could speak a little broken English. I askt her what I should have for Supper? Thou shalt have a Supper faid the for St. Patrick a gra. I ftaid an half hour expecting when the would lay down fomething to the fire, but instead thereof she brings me int Wooden Platter a great many Leeks, in the bortom whereof was a good quantity of Bay-falt, and withal

y one ings not to OX OR ve for vinga thofe my 3-

quare thory egfty. then OVIE. n, but eater p my ge we table r Di-But--ile) Were onely ikea oule, what upper

hour ig to III & botand

thal

ed with Ink. Seeft sou tere, Chreeft bimfelf nor St. Patrick did ever eat better ting. I could not forbear (miling, which put herinto a great paffion: For if a man ears not what they fet before him, they think themselves highly affronted. Because I would please them (not knowing but that I might find as bad (awce here) I pretended to ear, conveying it into my Boots. After Supper I askt them for a clean Pipe; the woman brought me one about an inch long, telling me it was very clean, for her Hurband had not smoakt in it above ten times. I judged it to be the ruines of the first Pipe that was made, which was conveyed from one of that famility to another, condicionally they should constantly smoke init without burning it. They offered me some inuff too; which is one of the greatest kindnesses they can either show or be shown. I called for some drink, (to try whether that corresponded with the reft) and fo it did, for there was no swallowing . it without chewing. Finding but little fatisfaction I defired to go to Bed. That I should instantly, they faid, but I wondred where they intended to lay me. In a little while in came a lufty wench with a bundle of rushes on her head, my bed it seemed by the sequel, which she spreading on the ground, covered them with a Caddow or Rugg. Here I muft lye or no where, patience was my onely comfort; wherefore stripping my self to my drawers and Stockins, I laid my felf down. About two hours after came in two Cows, three or four Piggs, some Ducks and Geefe, (which they brought not in before, out of civility to me.) All their family being within within doors; the good Man, his Wife, and two Doughters, stripping themselves stark naked, by down altogether by my side, which seem'd somewhat strange to me. I could hardly forbear the two young ones, but that my late missortune was

lo fresh in my memory.

I could not fleep all that night, wherefore ve ry early I discharged my Reckoning, and sole forward for Dublin with all the expedition I could, not liking the Country-entertainment. I would not ride the same way back as I came, to avoid my bone-breakers; but it had been as well; for coming to a River that I must fourd, I askt a fellow which was the fafest place: he pretended no know. ledge of what I faid, wherefore making figns to him, he answer'd me again with his hand, dired. ing me to fuch a place; at the first step my Horse and I plunged over head and ears; and had not my Horse been ftrong, we had both perished. With much difficulty we got up the bank on the other fide, and looking behind me, the villain was e'n almost out of fight. Such causeles revenge the frequencly exercile towards the English, natural hating us with a perfect antiparty. I returneds length to my old Hoftefs, refolving when next! undertook fuch a journey, I would fleer by the compais of other mens experience.

col

me

get

on

ha

10

10

pl

be

VC

B

th

U

ed lay

fome
ar the

ne was

ore ve

fo fet

could,

id my

com.

ellon

now.

ns to

ired.

Horle

d not

Wich

other

e'nt

the

ed a

ext

the

AP.

CHAP. XXVIII.

The manner of his stealing an Hogshead of French Wine from the Custom-bouse.

TRacing the ftreet, I chanced to cast my eye on a fellow, the flowness of whole pace informed me of the idleness of his condition. earb was fo prepoteroully unfuitable that a man could not possibly look on him without excessive aughter. To the intent you may participate with mein the same sport of shall open his Wardrobe. In general there was not any thing he did wear that hidnot some times another property, & of which one might derive another Pedigree. The Hat he had on was devested of all Royal Dignity, having loft its Crown, and yet his crime would not be allowed of as Capital. But what it wanted in one was supplied in another, the brims whereof being so large, they might have conveniently fervedas a Pent-house for another besides himself. But this ingenious Squire politickly had pin'd'up the brims on one fide, that he might have some light to discern his way; his Hat thus pin'd up on the one fide looke much like a crap-door pull'd up. His Band was fo torn and dirty, as if he had but just come from some fray; and lest passion should prove obnoxious, time had done him that courtefie to purge away his choler. In what condition his Doublet

2110

uri

cur

nal

End

hig

Wa

co

aΠ

lo

m

24

ev

10

V

th

t

h

ê

Doublet was behind, I could plainly discover through the holes of his Cloak, which generally was fo cransparent, that the rents and parches of several colours of his cloaths were as visible as if you had looke through Lawn. The forepart of his Doublet and his Breeches I am confident werethe off-foring of the Furniture of a Billiard-Table. His Cloak proceeded from a Boat-tilt, whose Grandfather was an Horfe-cloth; and I could not look on his Breeches, but it put me in mind of the Scotch Flaggs that hung up in Weftmingter. His skirts were fo liquor d and greas'd, that in case of extremity they might have ferved for belly-pieces, not ufine any thing but their own fatness to fry them in Bi his countenance he feemed like a man of course and ingenuity, and so I could not chuse but endervour his relief. Wherefore I accosted him pretend. ing I had feen him fomewhere, but could not for the present call to mind the place. His necelling made him affent to whatever I laid; and defiring his company to an Ale-house, he readily granted my request. By what unhappy accident he became thus miserable, I know not, but the man was well furnishe both with natural and acquir'd parts.Having had various discourses of several matters, and that we began to be familiarly acquainted, I aski him why he rapt himself up so close in his Close O Sir, faid he, (to be plain) I have a maim'd Doub. let, and I have beard some say, there is nothing mon prejudicial to a wound than the intromiffion of Air; which that Network garment of yours (laid I) will never beable to keep out. He replyed, 'Tis true, Sir, I find it so, but I wish it were a Net, for then I might employ my self by fishing.

liscover

nerally

ches of

e as if

t of his

erethe

ble.His

Grand.

ook on

Scotch

s were

remity

ufing

in By

uragi

ndes.

tend-

at for

cefficy

firing

anted

Came

Wel

s.Ha-

and,

askt

oak?

Jaub.

20107!

Air ;

will

Sir,

right

I was so well pleased in my new acquainnnce, that (bidding him stay there till my reurn, which should be speedy) I went and protured him all things necessary for to cover his
nakedness; the last thing he put on was his Shoess
sinding them to have Soals, they added new life to
him.

Having thus cast (Colt-like) his ragged Coat, I. was not ashamed to walk with him in the freets; coming to the Custom-house we saw several Pipes and Hogheads of Wine. Viewing all the places belonging thereunto, faid I, Methinks it is no difficult matter to feal one of these Hosheads, had I but, affiftance. You shall not want mine, Sir, (faid he) even to the hazard of my life, which I that never look on as a sufficient requital for this singular favour you have now conferr'd on me. Having walkt there a while, we went down to a place called Lazy hill, where I found out two or three pure Rogues more, one whereof had a Boat, I informed them of my defign; they willingly promifed their helping hand, and the time appointed for the effeding our intentions, was that night about twelve. Accordingly we all met, and having procured an empry Hoghead, we fill'd it with water, and away we went in the Boat. The tide ebbing had left dry ground underneath the Key, where I planted three of our company, inftructing them that affoon as they found the Coast cleerabove, they should with flings (which they had for that purpose) leave the Hoghead of water, & exchange it for one of wine; which done, they should march off immediately. I and my new Comerade marcht up the Customhouse

varer, and g k 11

house fairs, where we encountred with two old Watchmen. They askt us what our bufiness was, we told them we had no other defign but todrink with them, having been a little frolicksome the other fide the water. The old Watchmen were very joyful at this news, and so giving one of them money to fetch fome drink, the other carre ed me to the Lodge. The drink being come, they minded that fo much, they had forgotten theirde ty ; & I plyed them fo close with whole ones, that they were incapable of holding one more : inthe mean time my Comrogues were gone, pretending our boat was a drift: we took our leaves; Being five of us concerned, we scorned to fell our Wine, but contracting with fome to find Sugar, withou thers West phalia bams, or fuch like relishing means, and with others to be at the expence of Mufick, but every one to be at his own charge for Wenches; we never gave over ranting and rousing till we had dreined the Hoghead dry.

CHAP.

His

bi

N

W

m

sl

his

ou

er

Go

on

Is was, drink ne the

1 Wege

one of

they ir dus, that in the

nding

Being

Vine,

ich o-

eats,

afick,

e for

-1801

CHAP. XXIX.

his Landlady dyeth, and so is left again to live by his wits; his Comerade is hanged, with some hints of his desperate, irreligious, and atheistical tenents.

N the height of our jollicy, word was brought methat my Landlady was dangeroully fick, and hat the defired to fpeak with me instantly; thinking was onely a fir of lecherous and falacious itch . made no great hafte, but at length I went: Affoon slentred within her doors, I received the fad tyings of her death. I ran up flairs (not believing his report, because I would not have it so) bus ound it too true: viewing her as the lay, I perceived er hand fast clincht: I cook at inco mine, and vienching it open, there dropt ten pieces of Gold, which I conceive the intended to have belowed on me whileft living, as her last Legacy. I onveyed them privately into my Pocket, and preently made enquiry how the had disposed of her Mate; but I received little or no fatisfaction heren, only to my great vexation, I heard the often to he very last called much upon me.

I flayed not above two or three days in the

oufe, but I was forced to leave it.

I met with my obliged friend, to whom I comnunicated my late misfortune: he like an experine'd Stoick counsel'd me to bear my loss patient-

ly,

ly, fince that is below a man to repine at any fublunary cafualty, much more to fink under the burden of any vexacious crofs, or remedilessloss. We discoursed what expedient we were best to take, and to encrease our Small stocks by some witey exploit. We propounded many things which we approved not of. We thought of turning Highway-men ; but I diffwaded him from that, by informing him that money was very fcarce, and that men of 500 l. per annum ufually travelled 30 or 40 miles with a fingle Cob, or piece of eight, notio much for fear of robbing as for want of Coyn;and that is the reason that all fores of provision arevery cheap, because there is so great a scarcity of that should purchase them. Why then said he, then is mony enough in the Exchequer. But faid hit is fo difficult to come at , that I will not hazard my life in the attempt. Hearing me fpeak in this manner he looke upon mein derifion: faying, That fear was a paffion unworthy to be lodg'd in the Soul of man, and that there is nothing here which a man either should or need to fear, Secundum Religionen Stoici : And that man deferved not the fruition of the leaft bappinefs bere , that would not , rather then go without it, venture bis neck.

We had so hor a contest about this, that we parted in anger, and never saw him afterwards till heard of his condemnation, which was occasioned by the prosecution of what he propounded to me. Two or three more besides himself combined to rob the Exchequer, but were apprehended in the enterprize, committed, arraigned at the Bar, convicted and condemned. Hearing hereof, I gave him a visit in Prison; expressing much forrow for

what

for s

fince

and

doni

up o

Vet V

it he

Athe

he m

I del

did

ingt

endu

of er

ment

that

fiani

left t

whic

piace

end of m

was a

gick

Thei

eyes vulfi

fessin

thed

TI

No

the

what he was too suffer: but he onely laught at me for my pains. I desir'd him to be mote serious, since three dayes would put a period to his life, and then he must give an account of what he had done on, earth; and that though we might sooth up our selves in all manner of debauchery here, yet without cordial repentance we must suffer for it hereafter. Prethee, said he, do not trouble thy head with such idle faucies; and so broke out into Atheistical mocks and exposulations, not sit to be mentioned: and would have proceeded, but I desir'd him to desist.

Now his prophane and irreligious discourse didsobore my glowing ears, that notwithstanding the wickedness of my own nature, I could not endure to hear him blaspheme; wherefore instead of endeavouring to rectifie his erroneous judgement, (for to speak the truth, my knowledg at that time was but stender in the doctrine of Christianity) I durst not discourse longer with him, but less this own Conscience for conviction, which I judg'd would be powerful with him at the

place of Execution.

7

0

1.

d

e.

at

TE

is

ar

n,

m.

es

f.

11

ed

03

he

n.

75

10

The day being come, I resolved to see the sinal and of my friend. And there did I enjoy the fruits of my hopes and withes. For as soon as the Halter was about his neck, he roared so loud with his voice, that it could not but awake the most lethargick conscience that ever the Devil Jull'd asleep. There I might see and know by the urinal of his eyes, and the water standing therein, what consulfion-fits his soul suffered, his own mouth consulfing how grievously his diseased soul was stretthed upon the rack of despair: then it was that

the voluminous Registers of his conscience, which did formerly lye claps'd in some unsearcht corner of his memory, were laid open before him; and the Devil, who hitherto gave him the lessening end of the prospect to survey his licentious courses and damned opinion, now turned the magnifying end to his eye, which made him cry out a last for merey, and so was turn'd off.

CHAP. XXX.

He passeth for a Batchellor, Courts seven under the pretence of Marrying them, which he perswades some out of the Maiden-heads; others out of their Maiden-heads; others out of their Many, with which he goes for England; a Chester be cheats his Landlord, who having all things requisite to complean Highway-man, followeth that trade: his met with by some of that gang, who is tending to rob him, he discovers his into the society.

Being left now to shift for my self, having a the main prop that sustain'd me in all conditions, busbanding well the advantage of contrary wind, I presently set the engine of brain to work, and thus it was; I address my

of a heig vera

to

ic

ça!

vy

wh

25 2

heis hai ene lavis

ed a

fthe faib, ius'd

onle.
The

hich no da me da meha

re I de

ich

ner

ind

ing

ur.

in.

18 3

M

n ha

e: bo is

1 ba

ing

beft

Courtship. Beauty was not the mark I aimed, the purchase thereof producing little profit, fince it felf is most commonly the fole reward; neither can a man attain to it but by great expence, outrying all therein, leaft any interpose. Either weelthy and aged widdows, or thrifty Maids. who had laid up what they had gotten in Service asa bair to procure an Husband, fuch did I daily hunt out and vifit by turns. I was not sparing of amorous expressions, shewing therein the height of zeal, by which means I deluded fereral. Some I was forced to give earnest to for heir Goods, before they would trust me with hat they had. This course I followed till I was enerally taken notice of for a grand deceiver. the le, I borrowed where ever I could; so crossing living now gotten a round fum of money by Georges Channel, in twenty four hours I laned at Chefter. I took up my quarters in a very receful Inn, and gave out immediately that I adan hundred head of Cattel coming. The Master the house taking notice of my extraordinary and, and believing the report which I had us'd to be spread abroad, lodg'd me with uch respect in one of the best Chambers of his inta oule.

The Wind favoured my defign as much as I puld defire, for it blew East-North-East, by hich no Shipping could come out of Ireland. ne day I came to my Landlord, and telling ll co m that by reason of the non-arrival of my Catof the life was disappointed of Moneys, and theremy hould fatisfie himself in the first choice of the

R 2

in

Wa

wit

for

mo in o

dois

ano very

Dex

Roo

the !

them

andi

hugh

one p

Beard

Muffe

dilgui

of the

by the

H

belt of my beafts when they came, and fwore to him I would perform my promise to him upon So that without any the word of a Gentleman. scruple he lent me the money. Being Markerday, I bought an excellent Gelding with Fumiture thereunto belonging, with Sword and Piftols, and in this Equipage mounted, I taking my leave of my credulous Landlord without speaking a word to him : I had not rid far ,, before three well mounted rid by me, (I found them afterwards to be the Van-guard) having as many more in the Rear. At the bottome of an Hill they before faced about, and bidding me stand, those in the Rear reinforc'd the Van. One of them clayping a Pistol at my breast, commanded me forthwith to deliver, Swearing three or four fullmonth'd Oiths. I faw it was now to little purpole to refift, although I was fo well arm'd, and therefore endeavoured a conquest some other way, viz. by fmooth expressions. Gentlema (faid I) ye are all mittaken; neither do I greatly wonder thereat, fince I verily believe ye are men. fresh-men, men of a days standing in the study of this noble Science, otherwise you might have man, distinguishe me from an honest men; for I think thich in this Garb and poflure, I look as suspicioully is he firt any of ye; onely I think I take a better courfe the rery ye to avoid apprehension, and reap to my fel ntoch greater satisfaction. For ye rob in companies, and tehor if any one be taken, his just fears frequently betry hich himself, but oftner the reft to deftruction : where harge as I robbing fingly, I rob fecurely. Now Sin freely examine my Pockers, where finding for impense of Coyn, they demanded how I came by it? 0

n 17

1. 110

Dy

ng

ree

-19

ny

rey

ole

37-

th-

11-

ere

and

her

men

atly

216

udy

have

nce

invented a lye to their general fatisfaction; which was, I had met with a Booty a little before I met with them, which was the occasion of my being fo well furnisht ; but that which confirm'd them; most, was my being so well provided with Pistols in my Holiters , Pockets and Boots. Instead of doing what they intended, they were then of another opinion, and all of them careft me in a very high manner; resolving to be merry at the next Inn , and there to admit me as a Brother.

Having fer up their Horses, they went into a Room before, whil'ft I stayed some time after for the benefit of eafing nature; coming in among them I chought my felf miltaken in my company, andmade a proffer to go out again; but they hughing heartily called me back. I knew not one person, for they had pull'd off their falle Beards, Vizards, Hoods, Parches, Wens, Mufflers and Perriwigs, together with those other alguises that obscared the natural proportion of their faces, so that they appear'd as other men. Come said the chief (as I guest him to be y the (way he bore over the rest) you are a freshhink man, and therefore want fome of our instructions, thich in due time you shall receive from us.... In ly is he first place it is fir that you take an Oath which the stery young Thief must observe that is admitted and te hangue of the honor of the investation into here harge of fecrecy, that whatever misfortune appened to cloud their freedom by rendring tem as an object to Justice and the Law, they build conceal their Complices to the death, or against

el

n

qı

0

D

fa

80

con

213

the

m:

wil

by-

whi

Arie

tun

man

eve

the

clot

at a blin

against any other jeopardy what soever, burying in oblivion not only his Confederates, but also

his manner of entrance into this way.

And further, they proceeded to swear me, that if the Judges should press me to a discovery of particulars, that then I must cunningly create some men in my fancy, devising not only Names, but to give each man a particular feature, describing their stature, complexion and age, as also their dwelling place. Still provided that the place of their abode be far enough off: And then before enquiry be made, the danger of the tryll may be over or past; and then again this pretended discovery may purchase favour from the Bench.

Further, if I should be examined, why, and how I fell into these courses, I must then tell then that I was born a Gentleman, and well educeted; but being a younger brother, I had not wherewithal allowed me for a subfistance, and rather then I would live beneath my birth, a disparage the flock from whence I came (but fetching a deep figh, and looking very fadly necessity constraining me to supply my wants, fell into these wicked courses; which will make them think you are some missed young man who temptations had drawn afide, and fo caufe that to take pity of your condition; and if their mit cy extend to the remission of your guilt, it ha not only relt you from the punishment of a Law, but from the persecution of your past evil

By this means we may have liberty to falls our old courses; nor must conscience trouble is but dispence with every impiety, and glory ying

alfo

that

y of

mes, de-

pre-

and them duca-

d not

310

has

dly)

ts,

mak

whom

then

mu

· Ibi

f d

ville

alli

eus

oryi

the greatest iniquities, counting him most honourable who is grown the oldest and most exquiste experienced Praditioner of all manner of vice. Much more was committed to my memory for future observation, which for brevity sake I shall omir.

CHAP. XXXI.

some Instructions given me by our Grand master-Thief.

Free I was sworn, and full bowls of Sack A had trould round, our grand Mafter-Thief, composing his Councenance, and looking very gravely, Come my new and young Knight of the Road, be ruled by me, whose long experience m kes me able to command, and my love to you willing to instruct you. Ever lurk or lie in some by-place most advantagious and least suspicious which yields the eye the prospect of the Road: so fridly view the Booties, that other mens misfortunes may enrich your condition, and the honest mans loss be your gain; and be fure you draw every advantage that may promote your cause, to the longest extent. For your Masks and Chincloth, thus must you place them and fit them at a moment to disguise your face, thereby to blind the intellects of fuch as by constraint pay tribute R 4

tl

n

91

0

D

fa

80

CON

gra

the

m

will by-

whi

Arie

tun

mar

eve

the

clot

at a

blin

against any other jeopardy what soever, burying in oblivion not only his Confederates, but also his manner of entrance into this way.

And further, they proceeded to swear me, that if the Judges should press me to a discovery of particulars, that then I must cunningly create some men in my fancy, devising not only Names, but to give each man a particular feature, describing their stature, complexion and age, as also their dwelling place. Still provided that the place of their abode be far enough off: And then before enquiry be made, the danger of the tryl may be over or past; and then again this pretended discovery may purchase favour from the Bench.

Further, if I should be examined, why, and how I fell into these courses, I must then tell then that I was born a Gentleman, and well educe ted; but being a younger brother, I had not wherewithal allowed me for a sublistance, and rather then I would live beneath my birth, disparage the flock from whence I came (ha fetching a deep figh, and looking very [adl] necessity constraining me to supply my wants, fell into these wicked courses; which will make them think you are some missed young man who temptations had drawn afide, and fo caufe the to take pity of your condition; and if their ma cy extend to the remission of your guilt, it ha not only relt you from the punishment of a Law, but from the perfecution of your patteville

By this means we may have liberty to falls our old coarses; nor must conscience troubless but dispence with every impiety, and glory ying

alfo

that

y of

mes, de-, as the

pro-

and them luca-

d not

, 0

ha

dly

mak

v hou

the

mu

· Ibi

f d

vil

alli

eus

ory

T

the greatest iniquities, counting him most honourable who is grown the oldest and most exquisite experienced Practitioner of all manner
of vice. Much more was committed to my memory for future observation, which for brevity
sake I shall omit.

CHAP. XXXI.

some Instructions given me by our Grand master-Thief.

Free I was sworn, and full bowls of Sack had trould round, our grand Mafter-Thief, composing his Countenance, and looking very gravely, Come my new and young Knight of the Road, be ruled by me, whose long experience m kes me able to command, and my love to you willing to instruct you. Ever lurk or lie in some by-place most advantagious and least suspicious which yields the eye the prospect of the Road: so fridly view the Booties, that other mens misfortunes may enrich your condition, and the honest mans loss be your gain; and be sure you draw every advantage that may promote your cause, to the longest extent. For your Masks and Chincloth, thus must you place them and fit them at a moment to disguise your face, thereby to blind the intellects of such as by constraint pay R 4 tribute confiderate heed directly swear you are the man, when these artificial vizards are withdrawn, and so the visible tokens vanish that might inform mens knowledge what you are? and that you words may have a different sound, alter you voice, that so as your habit, sace, and hair obscure your discovery, your speech (teputed undisguiseable) will add to your concealment and

fecurity.

Be sure you ingeniously contrive a Watch-world to your felves that may occasion no suspition; as we are like to have a fair day or a foul, according as the weather is like to prove; which being nam'd, let every man fall to his work; those that are ftrongeft at the grafp, and have hearts accordingly, let them feize first, alwayes duly obler ving this, to catch the bridle by the left hand, and with the right draw your Sword. If he or they refift, the one prevents his flight, the other cuts, and so cools his courage. The weaker som charge is to bid stand, and confronting the Hor fes head, present a Pistol fit for to discharge. Il they deny delivering patiently what they have, but contend, you must wave all niceties, but cut them foundly; if that will not qualifie their foolish presumption, be sure you fire not without doing Execution, and then with all speed by after you have with expedition taken the pillage of the field.

If you are pursu'd by an Hue and Cry, obscure Gent your self in some place or other, and let it pass much by you, and then to be sure it will never overtake hinds you. It a prize comes by, or in your fight, if up the Sir,

lill,

H

211

ca

to

70

19

ba

m:

(10

fai

be

affa

Cci

upo

in t

WC

Wa

fland

ftane bave

ed o

give

ctup

to pr

that

roun

with

nan,

and

form

50m

your

haire

outed

cand

word

1 ; 25

rding

peing

tha

ccor bler.

and.

ne or other

forti Hor-

. H

ave, E COL

foo hou

fly

lage

Hill,

Hill, meet him; if down, follow close at the heels, and having more in company then your felf, let each man fingle out his choice which he likes to deal with : the coast being clear, fall up all to your close order and fide, be fure that you joyntle feize your prize. But here observe, let not any baseness of spirit unman you. For (speaking to me) nature hath beflow'd on you the full proportion of limbs, and thou feem'it a man of courage. fairable to the largeness of thy manly fize, but be not furpriz'd with fear or cowardife if the affailed boldly affaults thre.

Full fraught with the Documents which I recir'd from my old experienced Mafter, I refolv'd upon some atchievement : between two and three in the afternoon, I my felf with four more ferout; we planted our felves in a convenient place, only lwas fent out for a discoverer: not rightly underfanding my trade, I wandered too far, but in my digression I met with a single person whom I bid fund, which he would have done, and as willingly birefurrendred his purfe, but that he was mounted on a stone-horse, I on a Mare. Assoon as I had given the word, his stone-horse wheel'd off and came in the rear of me: I thinking he intended to crupper me, endeavoured all wayes imaginable to prevent him, for therewas fomething it feems under my Mares tail more powerful, which at that time I dreamt not of. I led him round and round several times circularly : the poor harmless feure Gentleman fearing he should provoke me too pass much by delays, the unruliness of his Horse trake hindring my seising the Booty, cry'd out, Worthy orthe bir, take what I have and fpare my life: at that VELY

0

CI

01

di

di

Si

(1

n)

w

th

ce

10

DI

120

del

fau eaf

We

Oh

Bec

ger

bei

bro

full

mey

fron

his

Maj

ceffi

very inftant his Horse reared his two fore-feet upon me and my Mare, in fo much that I thought he faid , l'le take both Life and Money too prefently ; fear had then rendred me fo incapable of performing the office of a Thief. With that I put fours to my Mare, and flew through the air for the procuration of my fafety. Notwichstanding I made what fpeed I could, the other was close at my heels : ftriving and kicking with both my legs, one of my Pistols went off in my Pocket: the apprehension of the present danger had bereft me of the true use of my fense, for I imagined that my back-friend had discharged at me, which made me roar out for quarter. He on the contrary concluded I fought Tartar-like flying, and that I had fired it at him, which made him with much eagernels eccho out with repetition this expression, As you are a man, show your felf merciful. Sometimes he would lay, For heavens lake hold, good Sir ftep; which made me ride more furioully, thinking he called to the Country, Hold him, stop him; at last do what I could, his Stone horse leapt up upon us, at that instant (by what means I know not) we all came headlong to the ground. I expected now that my imaginary adversary would be upon me, and cut my thros before I could recover my legs, wherefore I ffarter up, and found my mortal foe up before me, and upon the run. I could have hang'd my felf to think I should be reckoned among the number of men, and yet want that Spirit and courage which compleats a man : but loofing no time, I pursu's him, and eafily made my felf poffeffor of what he had; Sirrah, faid I, if e're I meet thee again,

feet

ught

pre-

leof

put

for

ding

lose

my

ket :

be-

ined

hicl

con.

anc

with

thi

erci.

lake

nor

dole

whal

the

ad-

101

rtei

ft

ra

nicl

u'c

hai

in,

nd

and find thee so obstinate, or durst resist, as now thou hast done, I will tye thee to a Tree in some obscure place, where none can hear thy doleful cryes, and there for six days thou shalt have no other food but what I shall bring thee. Once a day during that term I will visit thee, and each days Meat shall be either a piece of thine own Sword broken into small bits, or those Bullets (which thou intendest for the destruction of honest men) dissolved, and mingled with Gunpowder, which shall be convey'd to thy mouth through the muzzle of thine own Pistol. It pleased me exceedingly to see how pitifully and submissively he look't: for verily I durst not have utter'd half so much if he had shown an austere countenance.

As I was framing a lye to delude my Comerades (when I should meet them) into a belief how valiant I was, and dextrous in profecution of that defign I had newly undertaken, I lookt about me & hw them all at my elbow. I now believ'd (which f eafily perceiv'd by their flearing looks) that they were all eye-witnesses of my dangerous encounter. Oh brother; said one, how is't? are you well? I askt him the reason of his impertinent question? Because, said he, we took notice of the great danger you were in even now, narrowly escaped of being thor by a Pocket-Inkhorn. Without doubt, brother, you are very hard hearted to fly (riding full speed) at the very naming of, Good Sir be merciful, The poor harmless soul making frequent repetition thereof, but you stopping your ears from all intreaties, his Stone horse seem'd to be his advocate, and to that intent ran after your Mare, endeavouring to court her into an intercession for his Master.

I should never have stopt their mouths had I not shew'd them what I had gotten, which was not inconsiderable.

It was twy-light as we met with another Prize, which was of a different temper from the former. For though he and his fellow-craveller were (comparatively to any of us) but Pigmies, yet of fo undaunted resolution and unresistable courage, that neither threats of death, or torture (lam confident) could dull the edges of their couragious fairies, which might be in part understood by their deportment to us; for had we not flathe, carbonadoed, and forceably bound them, rather then they would have yeilded willingly, they would have stoopt to death. Our power having Subdued them, we withdrew them into a fecret place, leaving them not any thing valuable. Then did I learn to fearch with fo ftrict care, that fooner might the Grand Turk turn Roman Catholick then conceal a penny from me; here was I taught to be deaf when the poor Traveller cries he is undone; and to be more flinty then Adamant, not to be mov'd with fighs or tears. Having ingag'd them by Oath not to follow us by Hue and Cry, or by means of a general rifing of the Towns adjacent; thefe two fellows robbed, rifled and amazed, we left wrapt up in woes, and halted away to fecure our felves.

I shall conclude this Chapter with a Relation how I was quit with my Comrades upon the account of fear or timorousness. Neither could they justly tax me with it, since they are things entail'd upon the profession. For every Crow that shees extracts a fear, and every thing that doth

but

bu

ou

fio

fo wh

Ic

CO

fpi

gai

wh

fcr

of

hit

of

rin

of

en

wh

the

inf

tha

to

tho

fol

len

fon

pro

the

be

us .

Sic

l

not

10n

ze,

er.

m-

ffo

ge,

am

ous

by

he,

her

hey

ing

cret

ble.

re,

man

ere

ller

hen

ars.

s by

g of

ed,

and

tion

ould

ings

that

doch

but

but flir, or make the bushes rush, feem'd co our fearful fancy a Conftable to apprehend us for our Thefr. I cannot forget how ftrong a confufion arose amongst us by a trifle; the means were fosmall, and the occasion so ridiculous, that when after I thought thereon (though by my felf) I could not forbear laughing excellively, and condemn the temerity of fuch minds fo meanly foirited. 'Twas thus in fhort: An Owle who to gain shelter from the troubles of a Sunshine day, when all the airy tribe (wandring) flock to him , screen'd himself in the obscure retired residence of an hollow tree; no sooner had he cloifter'd up himself, but between discontent and something of a pleating fatisfaction he first uttered his amaring screeks, being in a slumber, and dreaming of the affaults were made at him by his feather'd enemies of all forts, and then again awaking, whooptfor joy that he was delivered from them; thus did he whoop and hollow incessantly, which infus'd fuch a terrour into our diffruttful minds. that Whips, Switches and Spurs were all too few to expedite our hall. For we absolutely thought tho'e Hollows were the out-cryes of the Country following us for what we had committed. We at length took Sanctuary in an Inn, where we had Some interest and confidence in our fecurity.

Understanding that our days work had been prosperous, our Host calls lustily for Sack, which the drawer doubles in the Bar; the Hostler must be one of our company too, and hail fellow with us, who knowing what courses we take, presume we dare not cavil, lest they betray our practises. Sie nos non nobis. So we rob for them, and not

100

im

Ru

WB

wi

fol

fol

beg

feei

aic inj per tha diff

offi my

litt

fo h

forg dall

fion

my

fam

bad

trut

hou

near Córc

Ver that

Cour ney.

St

and I

for our felves; for by that time we have profulely frolickt (a bill whereof fhall be brought in of twice as much as we called for and have bestowed our largeffes to the Servants , and offer'd up our (expected) facrifices to our Landlady, or her Daugh. ter, for foine private favour received, we find our felves to have the leaft fhare, and fo betake our selves to our trade till apprehension take from us that liberty, and the Law fentenceth us to pay our lives as a just debt we owe to Justice.

CHAP. XXII.

Scouring the Road, be lights on a Farmers bouse which he intended to rob, but defifts from that resolution, falling in Love with bis Daughter, who was exceeding beautifulz gets ber with Gold, under the pretence of Marriage, but afterwards refusing it, She and her Parents tax him with the undoing of the young Woman; whereupon he leaveth them, giving them no other fatisfaction then what they could gather out a Copy of Verses he sent them.

Iding along the Road, I met with a young Girl with a Milk-Pail on her head, but I was amaz'd to fee such perfection in one mortal face. I rid up to her very near , purposely to entertain some discourse with her, introductory to a future

acquaincance,

ely

lec

our

ex-

gh-

Our

aur

us c

pay

ers

ifts

ith

ti.

nce

it,

un-

z be

tis-

uta

ung

Was

ace.

tain

nce,

equaintance: confidering the ground, you may magine the questions I propounded to this pretty Rural Innocent were frivolous enough; as, which was the readieft way to fuch a place, &c. which with much respect and modest confidence she refol'd. She opening a gate to milk her Cows, I followed, and tying my horse to an hedge, I bee'd her an excuse for being so rude, and befeecht her charitable opinion of my present adions, affuring her I would not offer the leaft injury nor prejudice to her chastity. Being overperswaded with my protestations and vows to that purpose, she admitted me to fit down and discourse with her whilest she performed the office of a Milk-maid. I could hardly contain my felf within bounds when I viewed her pretty little hand stroking the Duggs, which indeed had so heightned my amorous passion, that I soon forgot my Oaths and Promifes, but after some dilliance, what by intreaties and love-perswasions, and what by corporal strength, I obtained my defires. We then grew somewhat more familiar, but the burden of the Song was, I had undone her; let him that reads judge the truth thereof. We conclude at length that she hould go home to her Fathers hourse, and that near night I would come thither likewise, according to the time appointed, as if I had never feen her before, and that I casually rid that way for information in the steering of my course regularly in the prosecution of my journey.

She subtilly goes in, and acquaints her Father and Mother that there was a Gentleman (without) whom

whom by his countenance, ganb and gesture ther, being night, knowing not the way, defir to rest himself there till marriage. ther, being night, knowing no. With much as to rest himself there till morning. With much as faction (which I discern'd in her eyes) I was kindle of entertain'd, and nobly treated. That night we intended to be better acquainted by the renovation tion of our late enjoyments; but our unluch Starrs were impropitious to our amorous design Next morning I feem'd to be very ill, that I migh have some pretence for my staying, which late and quainted the Daughter withal, the old people were very loving and courteous, so that as soons are they heard thereof, with much pitty they winted me, and with as much care they provided what was necessary for me. I offer'd them money, shew have ing good store of Gold, that they might have the better effects of me. Thus I lay for at least a for better esteem of me. Thus I lay for at least a for the night; several Doctors had been with me, but to none knew my distemper. All this while I nightly prohad the society of my fresh Country Mistres, who see deviated from the common customes of her Sex me did not coyilhly refuse that which was the center of her hopes, withes and defires. Fearing real least I might be inspected, I lest off counterfeiting and shew'd them some recovery of my strength which was any time the good old people would find come into my Chamber to sie with me, the main subject of my discourse would be there expressions and that if I live to my former heathful condition, I one day to intice them I could never recompence their love an one of the could never recompence their love an one of the could never recompence their love and the could never recompence the could ne

refture are of me but by marrying their Daughter, relfar hom I told them I loved most affectionately. desir' er Parents made many excuses. As that she mue abut a poor Country Girle, and the like, but kind need motion. Enquiries I made in a Neigh-ght wording Town what this farmer was, whom I un-enove enfood by all to be very wealthy, and that time nluck snot more careful to furnish him with silver lefign airs, then he industrious to maintain them by mish eprocuration of a plentiful Estate: My wanton is his only Darling, for whom he furrowed the people since of the Earth, and for whom he chose rapeople fice of the Earth, and for whom he chole rafoons er to fell then to eat his better fort of Provision,
with the might add to her Portion. It was now
d what thought he had well bestowed his labour, since
shed met with such a blessed opportunity whereaveth beshould add Gentility to his daughters riches.
a fort the slaughter of Piggs, Geese, Capons, which
to some Idol were Sacrifices diurnally offered
nightly procure my favour I And as he was liberal in
some food, so was not I sparing in the sending for
the Sex me, fix Dozen of Bottles at a time: So that
the sold man was brought to this pass, that he
searm to not whether he spent his Estate on me, or. fearing that not whether he spent his Estate on me, or seiting their; and that young Girl so well pleased the her imaginary Paradise here, that I am would addent she would never have been induced to seexchanged this for any other on equal terms, there expressable was our satisfaction on all hands, thothing gave them greater content then to ustogether, by which we had as many opporayto nities as we listed. My main aim was still to ow of my young Mistress what store of Coyn car ber

her Father had , and where it lay , but to my great grief and vexation the told me he had no five pound within doors, having lately bought purchase. I now thought it was to little purpos to flay longer, fince I could not glean from he Fathers harvest, though I had reapt the crep of her Mothers labour, and so resolved to be going but not without one nights folemn leave taking of her. The night being come, the purpofel flayed up till all the reft were gone to bed. But w being too imprudently haftie in the Kitchin stumbled against two Barrels piled one on the ther, and fell; and we both were fo intangled that we could not difinage our felves fo foon but that her Father came out crying, In the new of Goodness what is the matter? And groping about caught me by the naked breech. Seeing there wa no remedy, I defired him to be filent; and no spread his Daughters disgrace; if so, I would make her shortly a recompence. The old man we very much perplext, and could not forbear telling his Wife of what had past. They both cryed or that their Daughter was undone: The Daught was in the same cone, unless I would speed marry her.

I stayed afterwards about some three dayes colour the matter, and at last marcht off incognit fending her twenty pieces of Gold, and a Cop of Verses, which, as too plain and pertinent the sweet Treatment had past between us, we sat present here omit.

CHA SWO

me

tim

ing

bott

ther

cour

inft

WOU

that

Wich

licel

O my d no ght rpole

rep a oing aking

posel

But W

chin

theo ngled

Coon

e nau

abou

nd no

Wou

an W

tellin

yed or

aught

peedil

ayes

cognit

Cop

inent

wellh

CHAP. XXXIII.

From this Farmers house he rides he cared not whither, On the Road be is strangely surprized by a Woman-robber in Mans apparrel; He discovers it by unbuttoning ber Breeches to Search for private Pockets They two conclude a perpetual within. Friend hip.

A Bruptly taking my leave of the Farmer and A his loving Daughter, I rid a long time, but met with none worthy of my taking Cognizance: being wearied, I struck into an Inn, and by char time I had throughly refreshe my felf, the evening began to approach. Whereupon I mounted, and fo put on, Passing by a small Coppice in a bottom between two Hills, a Gentleman (as I then supposed) well armed, and handsomely accoursed, started out upon me, and bid me deliver infintly. Hearing him fay to, I told him if he would have but the patience I would; and with that drew out a Pocker-Piftol and fired it at him, without doing any execution. If you are for a little sport (said the Gentleman) I shall show you some instantly; whereupon drawing a Pistol he hor me into the leg: having so done, with his CHA Sword (which hung ready at his wrift) neatly at a

blow he cut the reins of my bridle, fo that I'm not able to guide my horse. But he being goo we at command, and used to the charge, with the winding of my body I gave him to understand what he was to do. Come Sir, said my adversand have you enough yet? In faith Sir, said I, he exchange but one Pistol more, and if that provinces ful I shall submit to your mercy. When our pool I shot, but missed my mark, however I king upon I shot, but missed my mark, however I king upon I shot, but missed instantly sell a my Gentle and his blocks. led his Horse, which instantly fell : my Gentle wit to do, he had theathed his fword in my Horse belly, which made me come tumbling down to him with a Horse-pox. Once more, said my Antagonis ut with a Horse-pox. Once more, said my Antagonis we are upon equal terms, and since the obscuring of the place gives us freedom, let us try our continuous files, one must fall. And thereupon with his sword (which was for cut and thrust) he made our full pass at my bodie; but putting it by I close I in with him, and upon the Hug threw him with much facility: I wondered much at it; which seed not have done, since his nature (as after this wards I understood) was so prone to it. Having our him down, Now, Sir, said I, I shall ceach you to be careful on whom you fer: you have as innormal. dently undertaken this enterprize as a Pickerm ave did once, who seeing a Man of War high built one and but few men aboard her discoverable, he em Port-holes being likewise fast, clapt her aboard fee Port-holes being likewise fatt, clapt ner avont immediately, thinking she had been a Merchant-ince man; but they found the contrary, the deci being instancly filled with men that were below, much and running out her Guns there could be nowife ver dom in refistance. Wherefore now Sir yeild, or flee

the state of the s I, hosees pair of Breasts so unexspectedly greater at proposed whiter then any mans; but being intent a-When out my business, that amazement vanishe from er Iki sythoughts. Then did I come to his breeches Gentle which I laid open) my curious search omitted not Horse wherein I might suspect the conceal-Horse sent of moneys: at last proffering to remove his twn to his from between his legs, he suddenly cryed agonit ut (and strove to lay his hand there, but could scuring at) I beseech you Sir be civil, said he: I ima-

fourity on) I befeech you Sir be civil, laid he: I imair containing that some notable Treasure lay there obith his mied, I pulled up his shirt (alias Smock) and
made bund my self not much mistaken.

close The sight so surprized me, as if I had been conm with tred into a Statue by the head of a Gorgon; but
shich stera little pause, I hastily unbound her, and
after thing her in my Armes, Pardon me most couralaving jous Amazon, (said I) for thus rudely dealing
your the you, it was nothing but ignorance that
improve the differentials what you were, the greatures of mpm suled this errour; for could my dim-ingrited tout the serious are distinguished what you were, the greatness of built, one and respect I bear your Sex would have detend me from contending with you. But I board steem this my ignorance, my greatest happiness, thank-ince knowledge in this case would have deprived dech need the benefit of knowing there could be so elow, much Prowess in a Woman. For your sake I shall owil-ver retain (since you have restored it) a good d, or seem of the worst of Females. She beg'd me not to be too tedious in my expressions, nor pumpso eloquent phrases, alleadging this was no prope place to make Orations in. But if you will enlarge your felf, let us go to a place not far diffa from this, better known, but to few befides w felf. I liked her advice very well, and rette ning what I had taken from her, I followed it by following her through divers obscure passage till we came to a Wood, where in a place the Su had not feen fince the first deluge, stood an House At our approach the Servants were all in a hum who should first obey Mrs. Virago's commands, fo they all knew her, being no way effranged to he difguife, but wondered to fee St. George, in his trufty Efquire on foot, neither durft the thow themselves inquifitive presently : with mu respect we were conducted into a very flate room, where embracing each other, we knits indiffolvable tye of friendship.

umpfo prope enlare diffan ides n

d recur wedin

paffage

the Su

House

a hum nds, fo

to be

ge, an

rft che h mud

ffard

knitz

. 17:55

CHAP. XXXIV.

After supper they enter in Discourse, wherein he give th him a short account of her Life, and the cause of berundertaking such an extravagant and dangerous course; relating how notably she revenged her self on her Husband for his unworthy and base carriage towards ber.

TAving refresht our selves with what the House afforded, and Bottles and Pipes had suplied the place of Dishes; we dialogu'd as familirly, as if our acquaintance had bore equal dare ith our nativities. And now it was the laid her elfopen to me, not concealing any thing, haing before made my felf acquainted with her matest Secret. Frankly the called for Bottles of Vine, which we smartly drank together out of Beerglasses: had not Supper been speedily proided, which required a ceffation for some time, fould not have been in a condition to discern he Dish, nor him that brought it to the Table. laving taken some repast, I began to be refresht, Cill henor in the least disturbed all this while.

I preft her to tell me what the was, and what manner of life she led. Sir, said she, I cannot de-Tyyour request; wherefore to fatishe you, know that

that I was the Daughter of a Swort-Cutler. I my younger days my Mother would have taugh me to handle a Needle; but my Martial spin gain-said all perswasions to that purpose. I could never endure to be among the Utenfils of the Kitchin, but spent most of my time in my Father shop, taking wonderful delight in handling those Warlike Instruments: to take a Sword in my hand well mounted and brandish it, was reckone to the state of the by me among the chief of my recreations. Bendant about a douzen years of age, I studyed all waste imaginable how I might make my telf acquaints a with a Fencing-Master. Time brought my do fires to their complement, for such a one as wishe for, casually came into our Shop to him his blade furnific; and Fortune fo orderedit there was none to answer him but my self. He as ving given him that satisfaction he defired, though not expecting it from me; Amongst other talk I demanded of him whether he was not a Professor of the Noble Science? (for I guest so mud so by his Postures, Looks, and expressions.) He told me he was a well-willer thereunto. Beit glad of this opportunity, defiring him to contain my intentions, I requested him the favour and give me some instructions how I should many en a Sword: at first he seemed amazed at my proposal, but perceiving I was in earnest, he grante my petition, allotting me fuch a time to conto him as was most convenient. I became expert at Back-sword and Single-Rapier interinfort time, that I needed not his aliftance and longer: My Parents not in the least mittrufinger any fuch thing.

eı

0 et ler. Is stall wave what Exploits I did by the help of staugh disquise, and only tell you that when I arrived I spin officeen years of age, an Inne-Keeper Married I could ne, and carried me into the Country. For two of the ears we lived very peaceably and comfortably Father ogether, but at length the insolent and impense the ious tempers of my Husband made me begin to in my how my Natural humour. Once a week we seld om eckone with of a Combat between us, which frequently Bent roved so tharp, that it was well if my Husband is waste ame off with a single broken pate; by which mainton hans the gaping wounds of our discontents and my de inferences being not presently salved up, they one as became in a manner incurable.

Inever was much inclined to love him, because it was of a mean dastardly spini, and ever seed to have a difference of a mean dastardly spini, and ever seed to the Game. Being stinted likewise of Money, are talk my life grew altogether comfortless, and I looke a Prom my condition as insupportable: Wherefore

Inever was much inclined to love him, because eredic it was of a mean dastardly spirit, and ever f. His ated that a Dunghill-Cock should tread a Hen sthough sthe Game. Being stinted likewise of Money, or talk splife grew altogether comfortless, and I looke a Proper and condition as insupportable: Wherefore to make the only remedy or expedient to mitigate my st.) He entious troubles, I contrived a way how I being spirit sometimes to ke a Purse. I judged this recontract of the enough, (if I were not taken in the ery sact) for who could suspect me to be a Robmana er, wearing abroad upon such designs mans may properly, but at home onely that which was grant mable and agreable to my own Sex? Besides, one could have better encouragement and contained to more proper to have in custody what charge more proper to have in custody what charge my Guelts brought into my house then my self? I ristommitted to my Husbands tutelage, I could or fail to inform my self of the richness of the Boory-

1

PS

fo

10

B

Co

W

in

8

20

ba

of

M

Wi

ffr

foo

36

to

are

fad

Wic

to

Booty. Moreover, the Hoftels is the person whole company is most defired, before whom they are no wayes forupulous to relate which way they are going, and frequently what the affair was that

led them that way.

Courage I knew I wanted not, (be you my impartial Judge, Sir) what then could hinder h me from being successful in such an enterprize? Being thus resolved, I soon procured necessary Habilliments for thefe my contrivances, and never miscarried in any of them till now. Inflead of going to Market, or riding five or fix miles about fuch a bufinels, (the ufual pretences with which I blinded my Husband) I would when out of fight ride a contrary road to this House (wherein we now are) and here Mecamorphole my felf, and being fitted at all points; Pad uncontroulably, coming off alwayes most Vide Not long fince my Husband had about one hundred pounds due to him fomet wenty Mila from his habitation, and defigned such a day for its reception: Glad I was to hear of this, resolving now to be revenged of him for all those injuries and churlish outrages he had committed against me: I knew very well which way he went, and knew the time of his coming home; where fore I way-laid him at his return. And hap pily as I would have it, he did not make me wait above three hours for him. I let him pass me, knowing that by the swiftness of my Horse Far I could easily overtake him, and so I did, riding Wi with him a mile or two before I could do my Ra intended bufiness. At last (looking about me) him I saw the coast clear on every fide; Wherefore riding

riding up close to him, and laying hold of his whole Bridle , I clapt a Pittol to his breaft , commandy are ing him to deliver, or he was a dead man. y are imperious Don feeing death before his face, had that like to have faved me the labour by dying voluntarily without compulsion, and so amazed at u my his suddain surprizal, that he lookt like an Apinder parition, or one lately rifen from the dead. riZe ? Sirrha (faid I) be quick : but a dead Pallie had Mary foleized every part of him, that his eyes were and incapable of directing his hands to his Pocker. In-But I foon recalled his loft spirits by two or three or fix ences fort blows with the flat of my Sword, which fo when whened him out of that deep Lethargy he was House in, that with much submissiveness he delivered phole me his moneys. After I had dismounted him d unand cut the Reins of his Bridle and Girts . I Vidobifted him foundly, till that I had made jelly about of his bones, and that his flesh looke like Egyptian Miles Mummy. Now you Rogue (faid I) I am even a day with you; have a care the next time how you this, finke a Woman (your wife I mean) for none but thole foch as dare not fight a man, will lift up his hand nitted sgainst a weaker Veffel. Now you fee what it is went, to provoke them; for if irritated too much, they here hap-

are reftless till they have accomplishe their fatisshory revenge: I have a good mind to end thy ke me wicked courses with thy life, but that I am loath Horse Farewel; this money shall serve me to purchase wine to drink healths to the confusion of such o my Rascally and mean-spirited things. And so I lest

me) him.

refore riding

She

She was about to have proceeded in such agrees ble relations of her rencounters, when word was brought her up, two Gentlemen below defired to speak with her: craving my excuse, she went down, and in a little time returned with them: She made an Apology to me for so doing, adding that if the had committed a crime herein, my future knowledge of those persons would extenuate it. By their effeminate countenances a could not miss of judging rightly what they were, wiz. Females. After several discourses we grew so familiar, that the longest continued friends could not boast of more freedom.

Having taikt and drank our felves weary, we concluded to lye all in one chamber, there being two beds: what our Nocturnal passages were,

I'le give the Reader leave to imagine.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXV.

here he relates (modestly) what satisfaction he received from his new Female-acquaintance, and what occasioned the two last income Amazons to attempt the hazard-ous enterprizes of the High Pad: with their Character and course of Life.

Though Melancholy Night had drawn her lable curtains about our Hemisphere, yet the werled of our Opticks was not yet laid down to mit our active fenfes to their usual reft and rehe: obscured darkness had every where prosimed filence about us on penalty of diffracted composedness; yet we feared not the breach thole binding Laws, by breaking our minds to th other interchangeably. My conquered foe low my new friend) first began to relate to her deflociates the rife of our late rencounter, and esuccess, which she express with so much life dingenuity, that they knew not which to value off, her wit, or my courage; but when the came relate the manner of the discovery of her fex, petulant and facetious was her discourse, that ic

CHAP.

agreen n word defired ne went them: adding

d ex-

Were,

e grew

ensilio

y, we

e being

Were,

it occasioned a great deal of laughter and min among us. Having throughly discourst varieties for further diversion one of these late Incomme undertook to give us a summary of her Comrades (or Sisters) being therewith intermixt; no I must give her leave to tell her own Tale.

Sir, (for to you I apply my discourse particular ly, being wholly ignorant of what these twoir separable Companions of mine well understand I shall not trouble your ear with any thing be what is absolutely necessary: laying aside then fore Superfluous Preambles, let me tell you In the eldest Daughter of a Vinter in London, am looke on fo wealthy, that he was called up for Alderman, having no more Children then Son, my Self, and this my dear Sifter, my M tamorphosed follower. My Brother i thinks begot out of degenerate Wine, and that me him to degenerate from Virtue and a good Spin a hot fiery fellow, always on the fret, till Cask or Carcals was pierced; and fo I leavel as I found him, an empty Hogsheard.

This obstacle being removed (the Remors our fair promising Fortune) none were mextold and courted for Wealth and Beauty (ruly seen together) then my Sister and self; mof all fizes, both of Wit, Estate and Statudaily frequented my Fathers House, pretend they came for the goodness of Wine there we ded, till they had got an interest in our acquitance, and then they unmasks their means Several overtures were made to our Parents, while good domestick Polititians, seemed to his to incourage them to continue coming for the expense.

exper

nd min pence fake : frequently they befpake Dinners, varieties ying who should exceed in prodigality, thinkr Come idbut laugh at them in private for their pains. ixt; no y Mother bad her trade at her fingers ends; for hen the would oblige any of them to any treaarticulary, it was but calling him Son, or Sirrah you to two in the wag, my Benjamin must have the largest derstand ortion, &c. By this means she chained them to hing behouse, and to engage them the more, perthe sine house, and to engage them the more, perde ther sined us to bear them company; but fearing you I we might glut our Idolators by too long stayer, a man g (for we sooner surfeit on delicates then courled up rare) our Mother would call us, pretending ten them when business, and would then supply the my Make her self; then would they charge atresh, thinks Withey had blinded one another. I must needs that may, my Mothers company was deservingly de-od Spin able: for though she had past her ages Æquinox, t, all a her beauty appeared but a very little decli-leaveling. In her youthful dayes she was the wonder ther Sex, and was so generally talkt of among her Sex, and was so generally talkt of among sauty-hunters, that our Tavern was never apply, and happy was he that could procure aty (medrinking of a glass with her at the Bar, but suffer ansported, if they could obtain the favour to we her company in a room: which for profit retend to sometimes permitted, and somthing else, there we hich my Father winked at gladly, because he may be audinot find the like expedient to enrich himmonials. She was comely, tall, and of a beautious tents, which grown; her hair proper to her combetted in the like expedient to enrich himmonials. She was comely, tall, and of a beautious tents, which grown; her hair proper to her combetted in the like expedient parts; as as as a sexperiment of the like was made up of excellent parts; experiment the face was made up of excellent parts; experiments.

as a quick eye and full; her circled brown graceful and big ; her note not over Ro man , with a full mouth; the largenels of the lips commendable, because plump and red; be dimpled chin (which Nature had drawn , with s wanton touch of her Penfil) did fingularly fe out her looks most comely. Her neck was round rifing, full and far : her Bodie well fed , not far an Italian Don's delight. When any Gentle men came in, me thinks I now fee how the leare out of her inticing Italianated eyes, able to confound a Saint. In fhort, her hair was enough to enchant you into thofe mazes, but that he looks were fo neer, which hooked yours into he eyebals, full, black and rowling; and when the had you, the held you there. Neither mi the a niggard of those gifts were so liberally be flowed on her, but communicated a tafte there of to divers; for as the was naturally pronent whorithness, fo the gave her inclinations the reins, and at last became so impudent, that h did frequently that in our fights, which though we understood not, being too young, yet force bly drew a blush into our tender cheeks. Bein in her prime, she gave her felf so much libertie that the was a thame to her Sex; there was no any vice that was attended either by pleafur now being gulled with this dows and importures, the drew up the Portcullis of her heart and laid the gates thereof wide open to be own ruine. Who would imagine, that a pleasing countenance could harbour villany, of the same of that a fmile could fer upon the face of milchief

or, Witty Extruggant?

brow

er Ro of the

d; be

, With rly fe

round

not fat

Gentle

e learer

able to

enoug

hat he

into he

d whee

her wa

ally be

e there

rone

ons th

that lb

thoug forces

Bein

bertie

ailchief

therein fhe shewed her felf a Curtezan of the ight flamp, that for her own advantage can enertain mans appetite with wanton dall iance but all never make affurance of fetled love. net think them selves most interessed in her, than is frequently that they were farthelt from a lam tomewhat the longer in my Mothers hereter, that I might the fuller demonstrate hat was the original that I fo exactly coppied in leactions of my own life. Did Parents confider ow prevalent their wicked examples are with er lifue, they would be less curious to cleanie bir houses of dirt and dust against the comming their friends, and more careful not to fee them me with vices in the presence of their Children, bufee I know the difference between good and because I talk so well though I act so ill, Bug. proceed; How is it possible the Daughter should thate, that can reckon up the adulteries of her, other, though the be nere fo well in breath thout a dozen stops or intermissions at the of Such as are conscious to these saults in prochearing of them told, begets a willingness to ythem: the feeing of them done, a wilfulness dothem. She prefumed I belive upon our in-W 15 110 fretions as Children, perswading her self we pleasure discountry and alas? The An and wit enough to discern it. But alas? The to be dothar in her fight which the before would not a plea thear in ours. And with what face could the reany, o Prove us.

Tha

The crooked wretch must not upbraid the lame, Nor must the Moor the tawny Indian blame.

Her house did daily swarm with fuch as preten ed more then common kindness to me. Seven eny Perents approved of as wealthy, and propoun ed them to me whom I only dilliked for want comeliness. One I confess I could have fand highly for his wit, had not his formation, be fo extravagant and prepofterous. O the innu rable quantity of Poetick brats which Palas fprang out of his head, and fo peftred my Ch ber that I could hardly fleep for the trampling their feet : fome whereof appear'd fo fair me from a Father fo foul, that I have earried th in my bosome to converse with them among folitary shades. I protest civility could for keep me from laughing optright every time ! him , his whole composure appear'd to me for culous. For first his head seem'd to fink down to his breaft, his eyes ftaring affrighted at the ger, while his mouth continually gaped if it intended to cry out for help : his back breaft bunched out as if a wallet fiuffed at b ends had hung over his shoulder behind and Though extravagant enough, you of not fay he showed much waste. Had you feen on a rainy day by the length of his leggs fye dwarnsh stature) you would have thought mounted on files, and wading through the with a boy at his back. Now let me skip over perion, and only tell you how I ferved him,

preten

Seven

opoun

r want

e fance

on, be

innu

allas | ny Cha

mpling

fair un

mong

uld for

gaped, is back

nd and you co

u feen

kip over

then I have done with him. That day I faw him oot, I had his reprelentation fent me, which was good diversion, but his presence was insufferable: to the intent therefore that I might be rid of him I fenthim these lines,

SIR, Tenare the fon of Elop, for I find Legitimation by your shape and mind Deformed ye are al he thence tis thought fit, Tou fuch defects should be supplyed by wit. Tim afpects monstrous foul, yet don't complain. fourifines fair the product of your brain : But Stay, I must recal may folf, for know Mi praifes are like to your felf, too low: Tub when I veire you well my fancy mul megine you much like a Capon truft. Wille Sir Hudibras, nick-named All-feather. bethe one tred both neck and beels together: Ne do not think Pygmean Sir that I, time If Afall in love wish meer deformity; me for hen cours some Sucenbus, a fiend will be down

at the futer match : fo think no more on me.

These lines so nettled him, that having belcht ed at lent fome execrations against me and our fex, Inein hard more of him. To be short there was nwer, a neat Sazen-hair'd dapper fellow ; fo sgs fye affionately we loved one the other, that we could hought to forbear holding fome private correspondence gh the at nights. My Father at length suspecting us uned away his man, whose absence I could not d him, wook, and therefore resolved to follow after. which

which I did, taking with me what ready money thy Father bad in his custody; and finding our my dear Comerade, this was the refulle of our confultation . that I should cloath my felf like a min and fo travel together. It will be too tedieus relate how and whither we went; but let it hi fice to tell you, that after we had ran throw France and Italy, and wearied our felves in fe reign parts, we concluded to return for Engla We landed at Dover having made an end of vovage and money together, faving fo much would purchase Horse and Armes, for padding the way we agreed on to recruit our decayed flod Many were the robberies we committed, takin fuch a course that the Devilcould hardly detecti for fometimes when we had robbed, and feering least we should be taken by the Hue and Cry. was but turning my borfe loofe, and then wo · I put on womans apparel (which I always cam in my Portmantle in fuch expeditions) and getti up behind my dear friend, I past unexspected his wife; this stratagem frequently p oved a fi guard to us both By this means we feveral tim robbed houses under the pretence of my friends king lodgings for himfelf and Wife; to tell you what manner, and how often we played our pra under a double difguife, would take up more u then is convenient. Wherefore I shall now wi up my flory: My Comerade in an unhappy terprize received a shot in his shoulder, whi proved Mortal, for not long after he died, Bei then destitute of my dear companion, I had seve thoughts of returning home, but that liked

money

ding ou

our con-

e a man

dious u

et it fu

through

es in fo

Englan

d of or

mucha

ding

red Hod

d, taki

dered

fearin Cry, en wo

y's carri id getti

ipedied ed a fa eral tim

friends ell you our pra nore ti

now wi happy o

er, whi

d, Bei

had fever

1 liked

113

made so well, I could not be induced to leave it. However I went to my Fathers house frequently with roaring Blades, but new me not though fome. times they would stare upon me, as if their eves would have started out of their heads for joy to ketheir o'd acquaintance, At last I took a convenierropportunity under the veil of courtship to difover my felf to my Sifter (nere prefent) who underflanding my course of life, and knowing well brown conflicution, for my fake refolved to haard all, and run one rifgue with me. Having inmided her how she should rob her Father, as I had one before her, we met at a place appointed, and otook our journey hitherward. Now if our conin advantagious, we are both your devoted ferat I could not forbear imbracing her. After we de plighted faiths, and mutually carreffed each onigine was little enough.

the dark, 'thow did we be till elections which Bus to sund the tenfore of flanciti

resolved to rile and unanimouslathe all board fied sile T 3 blroin CHAP.

aft ingenalty in contribing what min at field a in this law

CHAP, XXXVI.

How he with his new female padding Comrade continuation notable subtil and safe ways to rob together, with are lation of some remarkable stories which were the effect of those consultations.

A Ngry I was when I perceived the appearant of day, which I knew would unavoidably rob me of my present delight and pleasure. But was only my sear of being deprived of so much bliss made me so grossely to mistake; for I quickly found my happiness inlarged by the approaching light, my sence of seeing being now made Coparate with that of seeling. Love had now his eyes restored him who before only groped for the naked truth the dark. Now did we begin afresh to renew ou late sweet nocturnal pastime, and could our bodie have any wayes answered our boundless desires, our bed would have been the sole concern we should have minded, till that time which must put a period to this transitory life.

But to avoid the censure of sluggishness, we all resolved to rise and unanimously strive and contend who should make the best proof the greatest ingenuity in contriving what may give the largest satisfaction both to mind and body. As

apaladium to our intended purpofe and a reftoranve to our decayed ftrengths ; we first refolved upon buttered Sack, with other things of like comforing natures : and now finding our felves by this first estay so much beyond expectation revived and fredfor mirch and pleafure, we ftraight gave order for a Dinner to be speedily prepared, whose composition should be of the choicest viands. And that the time might not feem tedious in the interim, it was put to the vote what pastime we should make thoice of for divertisement. Some were for bodily exercise, but I was clearly against that, having so butly tired my felf with it : belides my lamenels, which was occasioned by the shot I received in my eg from my Valient and Rencountress. It was at ingth agreed on by all that we should entertain our selves with Musick and Discourse. A match said heeldest Sister) and to the intent you may see my freedom and forwardness to propogate your proofition, I shall give my affiltance first to heighten your spirits by vocal and instrumental Musick: having thus broken the Ice, I question not but you prove ready followers, and fwim with me in belime streams of delight. Whereupon the took malane, and having praised that instrument above thoused other for its sweet ravishing harmony, I will period now try (said she) how my voice will agree with t, and thus fang :

with are

be effidi

carance

roidably

e. But fo much

quickly

partne

rellore truchi

ew our

bodies 1785,00

We all nd congrex give the

What

CHAP, XXXVI.

How he with his new female padding Comrade continuous notable subsil and safe ways to rob together, with an lation of some remarkable stories which were the effect of those consultations.

A Ngry I was when I perceived the appearant of day, which I knew would unavoidable rob me of my present delight and pleasure: But was only my sear of being deprived of so much bliss made me so grossely to mistake; for I quick found my happiness inlarged by the approached light, my sence of leasing being now made Coparus with that of seeling. Love had now his eyes restore him who before only groped for the naked truth the dark. Now did we begin afresh to renew ou late sweet nocturnal pastime, and could our bodie have any wayes answered our boundless desires, ou bed would have been the sole concern we should have minded, till that time which must put a period to this transitory life.

But to avoid the censure of sluggishness, we all resolved to rise and unanimously strive and contend who should make the best proof the great est ingenuity in contriving what may give the largest satisfaction both to mind and body. A

apaladiam to our intended purpose and a restoraive to our decayed ftrengths ; we first resolved upon buttered Sack, with other things of like comforing natures : and now finding our felves by this intellay fo much beyond expectation revived and fredfor mirth and pleafure, we ftraight gave order for a Dinner to be speedily prepared, whose composition should be of the choicest viands. And that the time might not feem tedious in the interim, it sasput to the vote what pastime we should make thoice of for divertisement. Some were for bodily cercife, but I was clearly against that, having fo mely tired my felf with it : belides my lamenels, shich was occasioned by the shot I received in my es from my Valient and Rencountress. It was at eigh agreed on by all that we should entertain or selves with Musick and Discourse. A match said heeldest Sister) and to the intent you may see my rectom and forwardness to propogate your prooftion, I shall give my affistance first to heighten our spirits by vocal and instrumental Musick: ha-ing thus broken the Ice, I question not but you prove ready followers, and fwim with me in belime streams of delight. Whereupon the took maline, and having praised that instrument above other for its sweet ravishing harmony, I will period tow try (faid the) how my voice will agree with

with are

be effid

pearand

roidably

c. Be fo mud quickly

oachin

partit reflore truth in

new our

bodia ires,ou

ihouk

we al nd con-

greater the

What

What need we to care,
we have enough and to spare,
What we gain we will drink out and spend ont;
But when all is gone
We will get more anon.

Then make it all fly, theres an endon't

We will rob, we will steal,
For our own Common weal.
Let the Miser be damn'd with histreasure;
Our designs we will shape
For the juice of the grape,
Thus spin out our lives to our pleasure,

To live by our wit,
And bazard our lives on adventure,
We are Sons of the blade
Never bred to a trade,
Ve fearned to be bound by Indenture.

Not for flattery, but due merit we could go her no Iess then applause: Which thought word may savour of somthing of a compleme yet I will assure you there was no such thing pot between us; we knew how to improve our of a far greater advantage, leaving such empouse expressions to such, who have little else to then to play with a Ladies Fan, or to consume the times in combing their Perriwigs, not only in Streets and Play houses, but even (irreverently in the holy places of Divine Worship,

or, Witty Extravagant. The pertinency of this song, to the practice of rlives did as much please us alt, as the fweet mony of that voice did ravish our delished ears. ate, more Mulical fewel was laid on, to warm our numbed spirits, if any such unlikely thing should ppen. Which doth with an and become Whereupon her Sister of not making use of any

frament to affift her voice being lentible it was od and natural) frankly, and with a becoming

edom, fang to this purpole

of the sa

10 0131

7. Ho th

milini

Lucial

Comit 50

w this

esvisla. . diblos

s moles l .norid

inglus

ouldei

ough th

plemen

thing p

ourm

h emp

elfe to

fume the

nty ind verently

Tisliberty which we adore, history wealth and only flores ong and of such Having berime all are free a besource in erew ow Wee fo merry them as we zuo es eldenolest es emes Waving all Cerem aging a work to sales after she will be she will And only She cital pleaf war bring land oit sa od suo were welong at it, ou strodo and appenin be slike nimble and symbole die freedme bing bas sidmin skile Wei' purchase pleasure, or a grave go Deteitel bor Tiebetter fe iben line a fleve, ov de C 1911A

l samberracy of the female lexital All am free, forwill be flilly anomy the woo ou gri Powerma: shall abridg my wild: soi nameW 199mi pavarious objects found my treasure to the comment that meman fure no joy can find had an amow so White one man is only joyned. Monty at 119100 30

se Chorus, aw a yd ameenove viinb Since we then fuch freedom have Wee'l purchase pleasure or a g-ave : Tubetter fo then live a flave.

West

What pleasure is in full cramed baggs,
No more then is in Beggars rags,
Undersmade use of what is Cash?
Assure new Nothing, glistering trash:
Being well employed, it is a thing
Which doth delight and bonour bring,
Chorus.

Since we then such freedom have the state Wee'l purchase money, or a grave; "Tis better so then live assaue, it is

About to have proceeded in this magner rouse we were interrupted by Dinner coming up, who came as feafonable as our stomacks could require with the tediousness, we instantly fell to it wout the tediousness of long winded graces; said were we long at it, our hands and appetites he alike nimble and quick to give the body its regred satisfaction.

After Dinner we had various discourses at the vanity and imbecility of the semale sex: wi ing up our Argument, one said, she would not meer Woman for the whole universe, and worred that man, so noble and rational a Soul she so unman himself in his voluntary instaving him to a Womans will: I wonder how they dare to of Conquests, when they must acknowledg they daily overcome by a weak and seeble Creat Woman a thing which for want of heat sunk it that Sex,

With fuch like prattile we entertained our felves abour or two; and now it was put to the ewhat course we should steer, and what defign fhould next put in execution. Diffirent were our pions for a while, but at last we concluded anaonly about the evening to fer out, and rob ally: the manner which we laid down was thus: youngest fifter should ride behind the eldest Sion a Pillion in her own proper apparel and my ago behind me in the like female garb, & this we ged to be the fafeft project we could propound; sho could be fo fenfelele to imagine us Robriding in that manner double-horsed, and atwith the greatest symptomes of innocency. hopon we prefently fell to work, that is to endeavoured to get fuch necessaries as were convenient for our enterprise, as Pillions purds and short Swords for my females : at-piftols they had already, having gotten twomans attire we wanted and all things we mounted with Boots, which we dirtpurpole to the intent those which faw night not suspect but that we had rid many that day. It was about fix of the Clock in evening when we did fet forth; we had hid above two hours but there overtook us Horfemen, and demanded whither we were ding ! I answered them to such a place. did our two fubtil Queans which rid behe play their parts to the life pretending a afear of being robbed, and carried their buso craftily, that they gave the Gentlemen

10

up, while to it will continue to it will continue to it will continue tites being the continue to it will be i

y its req

ex: wind not be and work out the best of t

funk i

to understand their pretended sear and jealens and the better to cloak our design, pray them Dear (said I) in a voice not over-loud, but just that they might hear me, do not be asraid, I a consider they are no other then what they appear

that is, honest civil perfons.

Hereupon, one of the Gentlemen over-he ing, rode up close to me and comforted my f posed Wife behind, protesting they were fuch persons as she imagined; that they we Gentlemen of good Estates all, and so far the were from offending any, that they would w the hazard of their lives defend the injured the road : we feemed hereat to be much fatish returning them many thanks, and defiring th comyany, which they kindly granted, fayi Come follow , wee'l lead the way gently on , a stand between you and danger. I was glad hear them fay they mou'dride before, for not judged our business to be facile and easily do I now whilpered behind me, telling her as f as ever the faw me give a blow the should im diately leap off the horse, and make use of weapons the had: Her fifter had the like infirm ons given her.

My Brother, as I called him, riding up do with me; received directions from me, that whe we came to the bottom of the Hill, he should the time time with medicactly discharge his Trucheon on the head of his foregoer withall the for

he could fum up together? To mis

When they least suspected us in the rear, executed what we defigned with such exact un

jealouse ay thee n but just aid, La ney appea

over-he d my fa were i they we o far the rould wi injured th farisfa iring the

for now
for now
filly don
r as for
uld imm
infred

, layin

up clo shar wh should his Tru the for

ear,

to luccelsfully, that a devided minute did not ference their fall. Our Women were as fwift lightning upon them, depriving them of all eadvantages of rifing, whilest we set spurs to Horles, ond overtook the other two afore. hoinsensible of what was done, were itrangly prized and amazed, to fee our Swords and Piis ready to dispatch our Hellish commands. aron's fuddain had fo chained up their tongues, that they could not atter a word, till we forced em to it by threatning their unavoidable deaths they did not instantly deliver. Being willing unsome their lives by their moneys, gave ushat they had, as not to stand in composition iha matter of eternal concern. Having reaped r defires, we dismounted them, and cutting er Girts and Bridles, we took their peices with esaddles, and threw them into an obscure place. be Horses were whipt over into a fie'd. Our tiloners we led into a little wood, where we and them, as the rest of our gang did, who ere more expeditious then we in their works. living finisht our business to our hearts content Mecurity, we mounted, and so rid back again our old quarters. Our Landlord wondered tour speedy dispatch, but had like to have expired for joy when he saw our booty was so condetable; for you are to underfrand he had a unter share with us. Here did we carouse and altera long time, not so much as thinking on my prize: and the truth on tis, my leg grew to ad by my shot, that I could not ride but in great an. Wherefore I resolved to lie still till its cure

The English Rogne.

My wound being healed, I relolved to follow to the most alone, not so much that my profit we be greater, but I begant o be tyred with my former dainties; nay more, they were so infain those pleasures they injoyed, that my stroud not cope with such excesses. Wherefore tending business of privacy a little way off I them the slip, knowing how difficult it would part from them knowingly.

ful Lande o follow profit wo ith myth

fo infa

erefore

ay off I

would

CHAP. XXXVII.

now upon the Pad alone, he baits at an Inn', with hich he was acquainted, and there by the Hoffler is formed of a Booty which he pursued, but was sound-planged for his pains, losing both his Horse, and what wall matter he had left.

They loath I was to part with these Amazons, notwithstanding I saw there was an unavoidable bloome necessity for it. For no man could ever ter be pleased with society, then I was in theirs, oying such persons whose courage and sidelity the vie with the most approved male friend, and ping at the same time the choycest savours Venus confer on her cheisest Favourities.

one remarkable passage concerning this Felikeber, I had like to have forgot; which was i she would frequently Pad or rob on foot Womans apparrel, but so disguised, that she id not easily be known: Getting a Cushion, some such thing, (by putting it under her than to make her seem big with Child) she id usually walk abroad, it may be three or it miles at length, near some beaten Road in had she the benefit of victing all rid by the saw any single person by whose equipage in might imagine him to have his Pockets well mished, before he came near her, she used to feign

feign her felf both exceeding fick and wer groaning in a most pitiful manner. What heart could be fo obdurate as to pass herby lected, and without taking any notice of he Who would not proffer a big bellied Won (tired and indisposed) the courtese of riding bind him for a little way to refresh her? A told me, the met with very few that did not her up behind them feeing her in that deplor Coast clear, and coming to a convenient for to execute her defign, the would pretend Gentlemans hat that rid before her offended eyes; most in point of civility would put it though they immediately put it on again ; I would the with a Cord with a nooze, which had ready for the purpole, clap it over hishe and to whipping off the Horse pull the Man her; oftentimes half ftrangling him, ferving as the Mines do the Baffas with their black and Silk string therein, when they are delig for death by the Grand Semen appointment & mand. Taking the advantage of their being fuffocated, the could easily first bind their making them fo fecure that they were fo farh refilting, that they were totally at her devotion

But to return where I left off: before It my leave of her, perceiving the temper of brave noble Spirit, and that it was Poetically ned out of my true referement of her due man gave her these lines, which she thankfully return though modest y denied to concern her in

leaft.

hat m

herby

e of he

ed Won

riding.

ier? A

lid not

deplor

lecing

nient

pretend

ffended

putu

gain :

which

er his he

Man

Cerving.

black l

ent & d

ir being

their fo fart

evotion

fore I

per of

ticallyin

due men

ly recent

her in

back ye Muses, Mars, come guide my Pens this Female Heroe mong ft thy Men. h'is well. Now let us to the matter. fich a subject that I cannot flatter. Portalooners firmt, and Muffetoons gereat pains for to appear. Buffoons. o feem men, and like 'em wear their Swords : derenot draw; Such may be kill'd with words : Clave a Lady, and affect perfumes : elighter are, (then what they wear) their Plumes. afcorn'st fach shadows, or Chimara's, which god for nothing, but a Womans itch. le ft that man alone, that dares in fpight fac, forn Death himself in fight. altims speak thee man, who dares deny it? we this truth, or if you dare, then try it be a favour to her, for they'l find, mever man injoy'd fo brave a mind:

Ithought requisite to fasten on. At length me to an inn, where I was very well acquainand intended there to have refresh t my self; the Hostler prevented it, not suffering me to it, relling me haltily, that there was a Gentlemot an hour since baited there, who had in his mantue a considerable purchase, that he was not spirited fellow, whom he knew, and that he thad an absolute antipathy to a naked Sword, that he was gone such a road, & . I stay'd not ong as to drink, but with all possible expedition

made after him; alcending a small Hill, I dife vered him, who rid an ordinary pace, wherefore flacked mine to cool my Horie; however! he overtook him, and rode by him, not without vie ing him well; riding down the Hill I did die purposely that he might overtake me, which did; being past I mounted, and at the very be rom I bid him stand and deliver instantly, or was a dead man. Sis, fis, fir, (faid he lifping re much) I-I-I-I am going home. I bid him not me these proposed delays, left he smarted, and the fore wisht him to dispatch and give me his mon for I was informed (I told him) that he had a fi behind him. T-t-t-'tis true (he reply'd) beh it is my Fathers m-m-money. Hang your Fat and his startering Coxcomb too, (faid 1) I n have what you have. W-wh-why then you h (faid he) and with that drew out a pocket-pi and fired it at me; which made my horse stant very much furprizing me, expecting not the relistance from such a seemingly ignorant and wardly fellow; by that means he had time an berry to draw his fword (which was almost broad as a Chopping-knife) and came upon To furiously, that I am fure I had not time to fend my telf : he fo laid about him, that I foon at his mercy. I was forced to beg very hard for life, which I obtained with very much adorthe fell to my pockets, not leaving any suspected p for money unlearcht: by which I guest him to belonged to our profession, and was not mile as you shall understand by and by. He went to horse, and viewing him, he seemed to like him

I, I disco wherefor ver I f lout vie did alig which very bo ly, or iping va e not ma and the his mon had a f

well. Wherefore coming to me (for he had cut coffmy horse) ha-ha-hark you (said he) you are raraw Thief, a me-me-meer Child, & it is but that you should be fent to a ma-ma-Master to nata-taught knowledge, and be whipt for your of foolilhness. You faid you must have my Fathers money, but I tell you! must have han-han-Horle, and fo farewell. He was fo as to leave me his, which was a pitiful Jade, of anger spurr'd me on to be revenged of the foller, but I better confidered with my felf, that robably that horse was known there, and so I d) bb mild be detected; wherefore I rid a contrary our Fail my, and took up my lodging in a place I never I) I newbeen in before. As foon as I alighted, abunm yould ance of people flocks, about me, feeing me all ocket-pi blody, to knew the cause thereof. Whereupon sestant and interest best lime. That travelling to such a place ant and inhabout 150 pieces of Gold, I was set upon time and threor fix susty. Rogues, who rob'd me, and s almost scaule I made what relationce I could, to lave ne upon that I had, it being my whole Estate, they had time to as barbarously mangled me, hacking and hewat I soon gene till I grew weary, and at last with much
hard for alliculty escapt with my life. There was a geadorther tal fortw for me, pitying me so much that
presed p
t Inhabitants strove one with another; who
him to bould shew me most kindness. A Chyrurgeon
tot mills as presently sent for, who (as he was a Barber
went to b) Barbarian like, drest my wounds; some were
like him sployed in procuring me Cordials, and getting

me things necessary; others were fent out to make

inquifition after the Thieves.

This Gentleman that ferv'd me this trick, was (as I understood afterwards) an High-way-man himself, who being well born and bred, but his Father being either at that time unable or unwil. ling to supply him with what monies his lavish expences required: Nature having bestowed on him a ftout resolute keart, and strength answering his courage, betook himself to the Pud. In which profession he behaved himself so gallantly, that he was flyled the Father or Governour of his Tribe But his attempts prov'd not always fuccessful, le that there was hardly a Country in England, where in he had not been in Prison; being frequently atraigned for his life, but having eminent and potent friends, he still came off; this did his Father and Kindred fo frequent, that they grew weary, and he narrowly escaping with his life one time, and finding that his kindred matter'd not much if he were hanged, he submitted himself to his Father, making a folemn protestation that he would never follow the like courses again: whereupon his Father fetled an Annual Estate upon him, on which he now liveth very orderly. Thus much briefly of my overcomer.

I had not laid above a night in this place for the cure of my wounds, before I was question's about my Horse by some persons that knew him well, and taken on suspicion for murdering the Gentleman the right owner; which seem'd more than probable by various circumstances. First, this Gentleman was not to be found, which well might be his late success, having conveyed him

OR

on t

reve

fpeer

ny a

great

tlema

Cox

fay u

Notv

Carb

pair (

for b

again

Alip th

cuting while

tance

VOU a

been f

thort

der w

indeed

power

find m

precep

have n

TO COIT

and he

love H

but ha

actions

dreadf

imbrac

ke

25

31.00

il.

X.

im

nis

cli

he

X,

6

19.

II.

0-

ICT

y,

e,

.

did.

on

on

d

fot n'd

im

he

ft.

rell

im

OR

on the wings of speed to an obscure place, there to revel and congratulate his good Fortune by the freedy spending his late purchase. Next, my mawand dangerous wounds fufficiently declared the great hazard of the two Combitants lives: but that which chiefly committed me, swas the Gentlemans horse, which I like an impudent insipid Coxcomb must ride on, which reason must needs fay was the ready way to ride Post to the Gallows. Notwithstanding the miserable condition of my Carbonadoed body, I was inclosed between a pair of walls, and had undoubtedly been hang'd for being robb'd, had not the Gentleman appear'd again amongst his friends, then did my accusers lip their necks out of the collar, and none profeoning me, I was discharged. Staying a little while in the Town for refreshment, an old acquainuncethere found me, of whom I cannot but give you a character, fince the passages of his life bath been so remarkable and notorious, and from the hort relation of which I question not but the Reader will reap much benefit and satisfaction. For indeed examples have to great an influence and power upon the actions of mans life, as that we find men are more wrought upon by president than precept. To this intent preceeding Generations have made it their grand care and labour, not only to communicate to their Posterity the lives of good and honest men, that thereby man might fall in love with the smooth and beautiful face of virtue, but have also raken the same pains to recount the actions of criminal and wicked persons, that by the dreadful aspects of Vice, they may be deter'd from imbracing her. CHAP.

of synthesis of the of the street of the str

for v

toget

comi

not l

proct

recei

Maye

major

how

gave left h

et any

the A

relate mirat

with

of w

folide

m? |

finual

Malis

He here reneweth his acquaintance with a cunning fellow, that formerly studyed the Law, at fince made it his fole business to practise the date thereof,

A Bout four dayes after I was discharged, there L came into the fame Inn where I lay a Go tleman, who hearing fome of the house discouring of the Robbery that was lately committed, he de fired to be particularly informed, which they did adding that the robb'd Gentleman lay wounded the liquider he inquired of them my name, which they cold him, as I had told them, having a name for eyery month in the year. Very delirous to was, If it might be no diffurbance to me, to git me a visit, unto which I condescended, a servin to that intent defiring to know my pleasure. A foon as he entred the Room, I verily thought knew him, though I could not for the prefent a to mind where I had feen him I was fo mill about the Chops, that it was impossible for him have any knowledge of me. He fare down by my & askt me various queftions, to which I gave him convenient latisfaction. At last I recalled my me mory, and askt him if his name was not fohe unlivered me affirmatively. Dear friend fi 1) I am glad to fee you : come, be not amazet; my right name is fo -- with that he embraced m and was overjoyed that he fo cafually founded out. Laying afide all formal niceries, I unbosome my felf to him, not mincing the truth in the leaf

for we know our felves Birds of a Feather, Rognes mether. He condol'd my wounded condition, and comforted me, by telling me that he would not leave me till I was well, and that he would procure me such a Plaifter for the wounds I had received, that thouid prove very effectual. He faved with me above a fortnight, enjoying what pleasures the Country was capable to afford us. Being by our felves (for fo we designed the major part of every day;) we discoursed interchangeably of nothing but our adventures, &c. how we might lay new plots for our advantage : I gwehim the epitome of what I had done, fince I left him, who took more pleasure in the relation of my Requeries, than the Quaker did in Courting the Mare near Rochester. But when he began to mate his Villanies, I was struck dumb with adpiration, and what cannot a man do if indued with the strength of his natural parts, sharpness of wit, quickness of apprehension, depth and folidness of judgement, with a tenacious memoty? Now because he ever had a smooth and infinating tongue, with the command thereof, I hall give him leave to tell his own tale.

V 4

CHAP:

mad the I I kn Maf

prou

Atte

till t

Ifol

m o

tatio

Wea

face

skin

any

De Ti

more

do n

bout

Won

Soul

nion

Ty ex

cle.

fecti

very Dear

thee

Natu

CARDO

CHAP. XXXIX.

The Life of a Law-abufing Cheat.

Dear Friend,

Or what am I beholding, it is to Nature. I lone; for as I am ashamed of my birth, fol cannot condemn my Father for not bestowing E ducation on me, fince his condition was fo low, yet his spirit so high, that he would not beg him felf though ready to starve, however would permit me, which was the fole support of his and my life I was ten years old before I could meet with any preferment; one day Fortune favouring, the offer'd to my view a Commodity, which withcom fidence and dexterity I might carry off undifcovered. My hands presently successfully effected what my mind suggested; it was but of small ve lue, the utmost I could get for it was a Link, with which that night I more than trebled what it con This course I followed by night, and ran in errands by day, fo that I had furnished my felf both with Cloaths and Money. In process of time I was atmitted as a Servant into a Scriveners House; my Mafter taking a liking to me, put me to a Writing school, where being capacitated for his buliness, he puts me into the Shop, and instructs me in his imployment. I had not been there long before

E.

W,

fa

my of-

-00

00-

ted

¥2-

id

nds

rich

ad-

my

fs,

his

el

ade

made my felf very eminent, by fludying the Law, the Radiments whereof i understood fo well, as I knew how to ingrofs an Indenture. This made my Malter efteem of me, and that estimation made me proud; and being not yer bound his Apprentice, I thought I knew better things than to be his fervant any longer, and so left him. Then was I with an Attorney a while, afterwards with a Counfellor, ill thinking I had Law enough, I took an House, refolving to see what I could do with it my felf. Mollicited several mens businesses, giving a genenl content, infomuch that my credit and repumion increased dayly. Now did I marry for Wealth, having not the least affection, for her he lookt much like a gammon of Bacon with the skin off. Sometimes I liv'd with her, too long for my delight I took in her; and being refolved to be rid of her, this stratagem I used. I shewed her more kindness than formerly, pretending I would do nothing but what I would confult with her about; which fo wrought upon her love, that the would have been content to have facrificed her Soul to my interest; and made her withal so opimionative, that she judged every filly and unfavoy expression she utter'd was no less than an Orach. Having brought my business thus far to perfection, I came home one evening very melancholy: very inquisitive she was to know the cause. My Dear, (said I) I will not conceal any thing from thee; such a Gentleman hath injur'd me, and I cannot rest till I be reverged. Thou knowest my Nature, if wrong'd I am implacable, it is a fault I cannot help. Come, come, said my wife, let us go to bed .

dat

non

fou

him

req

him

abu

thus

and

four

TOTT

the

dans

arre

Wall

grie

adi

Hou

mad

difc

mve

way

me I

perf

yet

in or

tith

birn.

or h

lofs.

frier

WOU

CISTU

bed, and there we will confult. Being there he askt me how we should bring our revenge about? I feemed to fludy a while, --- I have it now (faid) thou art with Child, he is one tender of his reputation; tax him for being the Father of it, and that will do the work to my full content : very loth the was, because of the talk of the people; but I satisfied this poor filly harmless soul, by relling her that as long as I knew her chafte, it was no matter what others faid of her: whereupon he condescended, and had the Person before a h flice, where the fwore politively that the was go with Childe by that Gentleman. I presently too advantage of her Confession, turned her of leaving them both to the disposal of the Spiritu Court. This was my first prank.

One of my Clients another time, having bought a good handsome Tenement, had so much confi dence as to put me in Possession; my Client havin purchased an Estate in the Country, was form to be there to look after the management of h Rural affairs, for some certain time; I took opportunity to forge a Leafe to my felf, at an easi Rent, from him that constituted me his Truste I foon found a Chapman for it, and fold this Leak receiving a good round Fine, which had been penny-worth indeed, had the Title been good, m to this man I delivered possession, who dwelt in till the return of the right owner, who coming I his faid house, wonder'd to find every thing contrary to his expectation, and demanding of the Tenant by what power he inhabited in that dwe ling, the poor man shewed him his forged Leafe, de

out!

It.

onto

10.6

daring that he had paid his fine to fuch a man, nominating me, who at that rime was not to be found. The Landlord could do no less than ejed him his house, but finding him so grofly abused, required nothing for the time he was in it, but left him to the Law to require fatisfaction of me. The abused being very much troubled he should be thus deceived, made so ftrickt inquiry after me, and so unwearied in his search, that at last he found me out, who faid, nothing should serve his mm but he would for this cheat have the rigor of the Law executed upon me; knowing of what a dangerous consequence it was, I got my adversary melted in an action of a thousand pounds, who wanting Bayl was committed to Newgate, where grief releated me by his death from ensuing pre-Judice. I afterwards forged a deed of Sale of an House hard by the former, which would have made more for my advantage, had not this man dicovered my defign, which made me the more inveterate against him and his. For this was alwyes my temper, though nothing could provoke me to expreis my anger in company (as having a perfect command over my passions in that nature) yet if any durst profecute his own or friends right moppolition to me, I seldome left him, till I had tither absolutely undone him, or so impoverisht him, that he should be in no condition to hurt me, or help himself, making him at last confess that he had been better to have fate down with his first los. And this I effected the easier, having a confrience that scrupled nothing, and instruments that would swear any thing. These contrivances of mine

I fer

forme

proc

what

WOL

dance

great

nuh

perfo

havin

me,

DOUD

a Squ

not d

to ke

will I

necef

any t

to cor

fach a

with !

/ cam

much

mone

me (

ready

Lane of I d

too la

ter, ar the ha

her fe

mine made me generally reputed a subtil and knowing man, which brought me in multiplicity of bulinels, with confiderable in-comes. Neither did I alone sollicite for such as were concern'd in the Law, but I had my concernment with Lifters, who did put so great a confidence in me, that what they got was left folely to my disposal, either by fale or pawn, for which I had my brokage, and fome thing elfe belide. Now was I grown fo famous (my Garb adding much to my fame, which was very splendid) that if any intricate controversie, reference, or Law-fuit arose among my Neighbours, they knew no person fitter to make their appeal to than my felf for arbitration. If any again wanted either money, goods, nay a cooler of concupifcence I was adjudged the best Procurer. By these means tumbled in money; and to let the world knowit, wore a feveral Suit every day, having belides Ha bits suitable to any design. Now did those that knew me not, even adore me . those that were acquainted with me, out of fear were forced to how me more than ordinary respects. I confesse had now walkt in a medium, this had been the time (as they fay there is a time allotted to every man) to have made my felf for ever. But Knaverie was so implanted in my Nature, that I could not forbear cheating the dearest friend I had, if he ingrufted me, circumvent every man that had more honesty than my self; and though I was sure to damn Soul and Body, yet I muit attempt the destruction of my adversary, and to speak the truth, I did not flick to betray my friend, if any advantage would accrue to me thereby. For one trick

ty lid

he

ho

ale

ne-

my

ry

fe-

to,

ice,

nsl

LI

da.

hat

20-

WO

dJ

me

an)

was

for-

In-

ore

10

de

uth,

728-

not

ferr'd an antient Widow, I now and then find fome internal gripings, I cannot tell whether they proceed from Conscience, because I never knew what Conscience was; and this it is, A Gentlewoman of my acquaintance, whose fole dependance was upon Lodgers, and having taken up a great many Goods to a confiderable value to furnot her House, befitting the reception of any person of quality, for which she was indebted, and having too often put off her Creditor, came to me, defiring the favour of me to procure her fifty pound, telling me, that fuch a Knight, and fuch Souire would fland bound with her; that will nordo (faid I) for the Gentry have so many tricks tokeep Citizens out of their money. That they will have better fecurity. Perceiving her present meessities were very urgent, I knew I could do mything with her; wherefore I perswaded her to confeis a Judgements: fire agreed to it. Itold her sich a day it should be done, but I would speak with the Party first: according to the day prefixt rame, bringing with me a Warrant of Attorny, with a friend or two to attest it; the confided to much in me, as to feal before the receiv'd the moneys. That being done; now come along with me (faid I) to fuch a place, where the mony lyeth ready. As we were going, there was a stop in a Lane by Carts and Coaches, and by the help thereof I dodg'd her, the feeing me no more till it was too late: for I came, with an Execution a white after, and carried a way every pennyworth of Goods: she had; yet so civil I was, that I would not let her fee it done, knowing it could not but be a great trouble

int

did,

I for

TWI

poin

form

afe (

none

Goo

mak

Воле

Arat

of or

trouble to her, to that intent about half an hout before I fent for her my name, far enough di-Stant from her own Habitation. In this nature with fome variations as to the manner, I ferv'd feveral Knowing I had a plentiful invention, which feldom failed me, I scorned to be so idle as to make use of one trick only, to bring about my ends, and as I had several, I never made use of one trick twice for fear of being smooks. I seldome went abroad but I had some of my Complices at my heels, rarely going together, unless necessity required it. I went into a Coffee-house one day, and sate me down at a common Table, (as the Room is to all Coners) a little after came in one of my Imps, and fin himself down too. I had then a very curious Ring upon my finger, which a Gentleman oppolitete me perceiving pray Sir (faid he) do me the favour as lend me a light of that Ring on your finger; presently delivered him; having viewed it and commended it, my Rogue must needs desire a light of it too from this Gentleman, who thinking m harm, gave it into his hands; after he had lookt of it a while, he fairly march'd off with it : I faw him, but would not in the least take notice thereal, knowing where to find him. The Gentleman imgined nothing to the contrary, but that the right Owner had received it again. A little while after I demanded very courteoully my Ring, exculing his detention thereof upon the account of forgo fulnels. The Gentleman starting, replyed, St, I thought you had had it long fince. I told him! had it not; and as I delivered it unto him, I house require it from no other person. He pisht at it, and

di-

with

eral

fel-

ake

d as

vice.

oad

are-

. 1

OWI

om-

Ring

vone and light

him.

im I

DYM HAT LEVELS

imatient iter,

La vin singlish of very my fond

with the horse decree of the

in the conclusion bad me take my course; and so I did, having first taken witness of the standers by, I such him, and recovered the value of my Ring twice over; producing two in Court that swore point blank, that the one of them sold it me for somuch---. One thing I confess I frequently made use of, which was this; If any person dy'd, and none durst administer, but leave the Deceased's Goods to the Creditors, then would I be sure to make my self a principal Creditor by a forged Bond, and thereupon sue out letters of administration, and sweeping all away, I wiped the nose of other Creditors.

s francis a several state force and the second

CHAP.

o to the wir bereve when

who concintion bud me take my course; Ind to !

felf

to f

abr

Prit

fort

of E

ther

my

TI

of F

2000

TOOD

ioda

of;m

abou

fuch

anot

coun

Lady

wife

cient

when

loth

The section of the CHAP XL

the various and addition I govern

What a notable revengeful trick he feru dthe Turn-

T Went on a time to fee a Prisoner in Ludgate but thinking to come out again as easily as l went in , I found my felf just as the Picture ! have often feen upon the Exchange, wherein is represented a man plunging himself with much ease into the great end of the Horn, but with the greatest difficulty can hardly squeeze his Head through the other end. Hell Gates stand ever open to let all souls in, but none are suffer'd to go out. Here I waited two hours for the return of the Turn-key, fretting my felf even to death for being detained from my urgent occasions. At length he came: I told him what an injury he did me : instead of exculing himself, he returned me very scurvy language, which provoked my passion so much, that though I faid little, yet my invention was presently at work to be reveng'd. Not long after I got a poor fellow to be arrested for an inconsiderable debt, advising him to turn himself instantly over to Ludgate. In a short time the poornesse of this mans condition was generally known, and he himfelf

fell pretending he was almost starved, got liberty to put in what stender security he could procure for his true imprisonment, and so had leave to go abroad in the mean time I had got a Bond of the Prisoner of sourscore pound for the payment of sorty, and so went privately and enter'd an action of Debt. I told the Prisoner the next time he went outhe should run away, which he did, neither was there any security to be found; then did I bring my action against the Keeper, with my Knights of the Post, and so recovered the money.

CHAP. XLI.

as I

n is

with his

land

fuf

for

felf

ur-

him

iling

aage,

ough

y at

1000

debt,

chis him-

felf

What a freak be play'd upon a Jeweller.

Was intimately acquainted with a Jeweller in Foster-lane, whom I often helped to the fale of Rings and Jewels, fo that my credit was very good with him. Being one time above in his workroom, I chanced to fpy a very rich Jewel, whereupon I told him I could help him to the fale thereolimy Lady fuch a one having lately spoke to me about fuch a thing. He glady delivered it to me at fuch a price to thew it her. But I only carried it to another to have one exactly made like 't with counterfeit ftones Before I went, I askt him if che lady diflike it, whether I might leave it with his wife or fervant? 1,1, (faid he) to eicher will be fufttient. I was forced to watch one whole day to fee when he went out; and being gone, presently went othe Shop, and enquired of his Wife for her Huf-

pr

H:

bar

qua

109

for

Wit

on t

Well

pref

of:

gent

Iloc

And

Gate

Maft

ther

men

m.

bim !

favor

tobr

268

Husband; the answered me, he was but just gone. Well, Madam (faid I) you can do my bufinessas well as he, 'cis onely to deliver these stones into your cultody; and fo went off undiscovered. Not longafter I met him in the ftreet, carrying displeafure in his looks; Sir (faid he) I thought a friend would not have ferv'd me fo; but I deny'dit flifly: Whereupon he was very angry, and told me he would fue me; I valu'd not his careats, and foleft him; I had not gone many paces, before! met with a friend, that complain'd to me he had loft a very valuable Locket of his Wives, it being Rollen from her. Glad I was that this thould fall out so pat to my purpose; I askt him to give me s description of it, which he did punctually. Now, faid I, what will you give me, if I tell you where it is? Any thing in reason. Then go to such a Shopin Foster-Lane (the same Shop where I cheated the man of bis King) and there ask peremptorily for it; I was there at fuch a time and faw it; and he would have had me help him to a Customer for it; I'll flay at the Star-Tavern for you. Away he went and demanded his Locket: The Jeweller deny'd he had any fuch thing, (as well he might.) Upon this he returned to me, and (by this I had another with me) and told me what he faid. Whereupon I so viled him to have a Warrant for him to fetch him before a Justice of Peace, and that I and my friend (which faw as much as I) would fwear it. Geldfmith was instantly feiz'd on by a Constable and affoon as he faw who they were that would fwearagainst him, defired the Gentleman to drink a glafs of wine, and then tender'd him fatisfaction But I had order'd the bufiness that it would no

.51

13

to

OE

nd d it

ind re l

had

ing

me ow,

re it

pin

MAN

: 1

ould

flay

and

had

is be

wich

I ad-

him

riend

The

able

rould

drin

aion

d no

betaken unless he would give us all three general releases. He knowing the danger that might ensue to life and estate if we perfished, consented to the proposal.

CHAP. XLII.

He puts a notable Cheat upon a Gentleman concerning his Honfe.

WAlking one time in the Fields with an Atbare before me, if in company with any persons of quality, but otherwise, bail fellow well met; I was got as far as Hackney, ere I thought where I was for my thoughts were busied about designs, and my wit was shaping them into a form; casting my eye on the one fide of me I faw the prettieft built and well faituated House that ever my eyes beheld. I presently had a coverous defire to be Matter thereof: I was then, as Fortune would have it in a very gentile Ganb; I walke but a little way further, and Hoon found out a Plot to accomplish my defires. And thus it was: I returned and knockt at the Gate, and demanded of the Servant whether his Molter was within? I understood he was, and thereupon defired to speak with him. The Gentleman came out to me himfelf, defiring me to walk in. After I had made a general Apology, I told him my bufiness, which was only to request the favour of him, that I might have the priviledge tobring a Workman to supervise his House, and X a

to take the Dimensions thereof, because I was so well pleased with the Building, that I egerly desired to have another built exactly after that pattern. The Gentleman could do no less then to grant me so small a civility. Coming home, I went to a Carpenter, telling him I was about buying an House in Hackney, and that I would have him accompany me to give me (in private) the estimate. Accordingly we went, and sound the Gentleman at home, who entertained me kindly as a stranger. In the mean time the Carpenter took an exact account of the Butts and Bounds of the House on Paper; which was a much as I defired for that time.

H

dre

cur

ofe

the

iní

cor

por

to k

the S

brin

cord

olice

perf

Scrin

The up

cale

fter

e co

Nam

Paying the Carpenter well, I dismiss him, and by that Paper had a Least rawn with a very great sine (mentioned to have been paid) at a small Rent; Witnesses thereunto I could not want. Shortly after I demanded Possession. The Gentle man thinking me out of my wits, only laught at me: I commenced my suit against him, and brought my own Creatures to swear the scaling and delivering of the Lease, the Carpenters evidence, with many other probable Circumstance to strengthen my cause; whereupon I had a Vendict: The Gentleman understanding what I was thought it safer to compound with me, and look something, rather then loose all.

the was within I the elical is was and the content of the Cearlethe door delived the peak with him. I have earlethe conservation of the himself deliving me to walk.
I take I had he as general a pology I to I to I

CHAP beautifully which was to your request the character for the privilege as a real for the privilege.

Se Workman's of the vitality House, 2114

Was zerly that then

ne, I bout

ould

vate)

ound i me

Car-

s and

25 1

and

gren

fmall

want.

encle

ghr at

and caling

ance

Ven

I was

loof

CHAP. XLIII

How he cheated a Scrivener under the pretence of bringing bim good Security for an Hundred pound which he would borrow.

Triring my felf in one of the richeft Garbs A I had, I went to a Scrivener in Bow-lane, and acquainted him I had an occasion for an Hundred pound. He demanded the Names of my Security. I rold him where they lived two persons ofeminent worth (whom I knew were gone into the Country)and defired him to make enquiry, but wit to be privace and modeft. The Scrivener according to my defires went and found them by report to be what they were, real, able, and sufficient men: two orthree days after I called upon him who know whether I might have the money upon the Security propounded. He told me I might, rs evioringing the persons; and appointed me a day. Actording to the time I came with two of my Comblices actived like wealthy grave Citizens, who personated such persons so to the life, that the Scrivener could not entertain the least suspicion. Themoney being ready, I told it over, and putting tup in a bag, I and my infignificant Bondimen taled, leaving the Scrivener to another enquiry fter us, whom, if he did not meet, I was confident e could never find out by reason of our feigned Names.

k chanced that my forged and fictions name Chook

1

N

in

W

da

fel

16

Wa

his

ho

fer

No and

cen

got

felf

buf

his

rela

Kin

AAi

shook hands with that of a Gentleman in Surry, who was a great purchaser, which I came to know by being accidentally in his company the next night after I had cheated this credulous Scribe, understanding likewife from him the exact place of his abode; and, as the Devil would have it, his Christian name was the fame, as well as his Sirname, with that of mine I had borrowed Where upon I went to the Scrivener again, and toldhim that now I had a fair opportunity to benefit my felf very much by a purchale, provided he would offift me with 200 pound more. But Sir, faid I,take notice (in a careless and generous frankness) that it is out of a particular respect to you, that you might profit by me that I come, again, neither will I now give you any other Security then my Le own Bond, though I did otherwife before. Buti you will defire to be farisfied as to my Eftate.praf tin let your fervant go to fuch a place in Surry, there on is a piece of Gold to bear his charges, and I sil arishe you farther for the lofs of your Servant rime. He being greedy of gain, very officiouly promifed me to do what I required, and would speedily give me an answer. Imagining who time his Servant would return, I repaired to him again, and understood from him by the feque that he received as much farisfaction as in resto any man could require. Hereupon I had on my own Bond the money paid me. I cannot but laug to think how strangely the Surry Gentleman wa furprized when the money becoming due was de manded of him, and how like the figure of ma in Hangings the Scrivener lookt when he found fpce himfelf cheated.

know

next ribe, place

c, his

here d him

ic my

vould

Liake

) chat

eicher

n my

Buti

-Draf

chen

Isil

Vanu

ioul

would

what

o him

Ceque

calor

n m

laug

n wa

25 de

ma

found

HA

CHAP. XLIV.

How he was revenged on a Broker for arresting him for some Goods be bad past his word for upon his friends accompt.

NTOtwithstanding I daily thus almost cheated Vone or other, procuring thereby confiderabefums of money, yet, by my Drinking, Whoreing, and defending my felf from such as I had wronged, I feldom kept any money by me. One day as I walk'dehe freets fecurely, as I thought, a fellow faffned his Flesh-Hooks on my Shoulder. Looking about to fee what this fudden chap meant, law a fellow behind me, whose face looks ten times worse then those Philiftines that are pictured on Chimny-pieces, feizing upon Samfon, his mouth was as largely vaulted as that within Alderfgate; his Visage was almost eaten through with Pockholes, every hole so big, that they would have ferved for Children to play at Cherry-pit. Nose resembled an Hand-saw; take both Head and face together, and it appeared like the Saracens on Snew-bill; questionles some Incubus begot him on a Witch. Having a little recovered my felf from my amazement, I askt him what his bufiness was with me? He spake but little leaving his errand to his Mace (which he thew'd me) to mate. Away they carried me to Woodfreet at the hings-head, from whence I fent for Bail, which speedily came to me : having put in Bail to one Action, I found another enter'd: having done X 4 the

more bearing is company; wherefore thanking my friends for the trouble I had put them to, I defired them to leave me, resolving to go to Ludgate. The two Serjeants that arrested me conducted me thither, having my name enter'd in the Paper-house, as Horses in Smithfield are in the Tole-booth: Cerberus turned the Key, and set the door as wide open as West minster-Hall Gate in the Term-time to Country clients, to receive me from my Hell-guides, which puts me in mind of that old Verse.

fo

m

gı

th

21

Be

th

m

br

01

te

re

ha

De

te

Pa

po

hi

th

to

ne Tr

din

be

lo

Ha

Po

pu

Nocies atque dies patet atri janua ditu. I no fooner was enter'd into this inchanted lile, where some lie wind-bound sometimes seven years together, but a fellow (whom at first fight I rook to be a Gardner, because he had a kind of Reddiff beard, and turn'd up withal) came to me, & underflanding I was a Prisoner seem'd mighty courteous, profering me his Chamber, for my Garnill fake. I accepted his kindness, & went with him to view this Cobweb-hung-Chamber, for fo it proved ; I demanded of him who should be my Bedfellow?that Gentleman there Sir, faid he, that lits by the fire fide: I could not forbear smiling, for he was a fat fquobby fellow, though his brain fer med to be lean. I believe he was his own Barber, and was forc'd to make use of a Knife instead of Razor; for his beard it was cut round like a rubbing-brush. Certainly, had all the skin of his body been like that of his face, it would have ferved excellent well when he was dead to make clokebags of. Not content with this lodging, I fought out another; liking it somewhat better then the for

lozen

king

0,1

Lud-

ondu-

n the

n the

et the

n the

that

I Ife.

rook

ddiff

urte-

rnil

pro-

Bed-

for

fee-

rber,

ofs

rub-

body

es.

oke-

ught

the

for

former, I pitcht on it. Assoon as they understood my resolution, they worried me presently like angry Mastriffs, barking for their Garnish; I told them they should have it to morrow, at which they grumbled like the greatest strings of a Base-Viol. Before I went to Bed I must pay for a pair of sheets, that never came nigh Holland by three hundred miles, and out of much civility my Bedsellow brought me a candle not so long as his nose to light me to Bed.

The next morning I made it my business to get ontaffoon as I could; some I paid, others I non-fuited, and fo got clear. Being out I resolved not to rettill I had revenged my felf on this Broker that had thus croubled me. I needed not means, for the Devil feldom failed to help my inventions. I pretended to go into the Country, and in order to ic pick'd up a Frunk of what I had most valuable and portable, and getting a Porter, fent it toan Inn where a Normich-Carryer used to lye, but I knew him to be gone the day before. Going along with the Porter, I enquired for fuch a Carryer, but they told me he was gone, and would not return till the next week. I aske them where I might lay my Trunk fafe: they shewed me a Room; where bidding the Porter lit down, I called for some Ale, telling the Porter, moreover, that I would have him be a witness of what there was in the Trunk, left I hould be dishonefly dealt by; whereupon I unlockt it, defiring him to take notice, which he did, k to be more fure took an inventory in Writing. Having paused a little, now I think upon it (faid I) Porter, it will not be fo lafe to leave this here in a publique house as in a friends, wherefore prechee

go

fuc

old

pro

tit

off

20

T

ha

th

de

in

up

m

m

ne

do

m

ty

m vi

he

no it

fo fo

Po

0

man.

go buy a Cord, and thou shale carry it elsewhere. Whileft he was gone, I rook out the chiefest things and put in rubbish, or what I could get, and io lockt it again. The Potter returning, we corded the Trunk, and carried it to this Broker, who tookit kindly from mesthat I would intrust him after our controversie, and received it. The next week! cold him I would call for it, in order to the fending it into the Country. The time being come, ! took the same Porter with me, and demanding the Trunk, it was forthwith delivered me. Porter, faid I, you must uncord it again, for I have present use for something therein contain'd which being done, I feemingly amaz'd, cry'dout I was rob'd, taxing the Broker for fo doing, villifying him for his knavery. He protested that he never looks on it to his knowledge fince the receipt thereof. Well Sir (faid I) this shall not ferve your turn, this honest Porter knows how differently it is fraught from what he faw it at first. In a great feeming heat I left him, but before he flept I fent a couple of Serjeants to him, who arrefted bim; coming to tryal, by the affiftance of two (refolv'd Jurors) and this Porter, I overthrew him, and recovered above forty pound, befides coft of Suir.

How be cozened a rich Usurer, and a young Tradef-

Being resolved to go and look out some of my good success

faccels in my advantagious revenge, I met with an oldcomrade that had lately bear'd a Booth, Anglise broken open a Shop, who told me he had a quantity of good comodities, & defired me to put them off for him, knowing that I dealt in Brokeage in goods indirectly come by: I promis'd him I would. The next day he delivered what he had inco my hands, I instantly carried them to an old Usurer that would grafp at any thing, telling him I only defired to Mort-gage them for fuch a time, requesting to lend me fifty pounds thereon. He looking upon them to be thrice the value of that fum, lent me freely the quantity of mony propounded, & in my fight took the Goods and laid them in a place next his Bed-chamber. The same day I met with this friend, who demanded of me whether I had done his bufiness? No not yet (faid 1) it will be to morrow first: However let us drink a glass of wine, which he readily confented to. Having drank pretty fmartly, he could not contain himfelf (fo powerful are the operations of Wine; as it frequently makes a man divulge that which carrieth in it inevitable ruine) I say he cold me whose Shop it was herob'd, and at what time. I feem'd to take little notice then, though I intended to make good use of it Parting with him, I went freight way to the perfon rob'd, & cold him that accidentally I was inform'd of his late lofs, and that my intent of coming was out of a principle of honesty, to assist him in the recovery of what was stollen from him. Buc before I acquainted him with any thing I required of him a Bond of 10 l. if I helpt him to his Goods; which he granted me. I advised him to get the Lord chief Justices warrant, which he did, and

-

vhere.

bines

nd fo

edthe

ook it

er our

Veek

fend-

me, I

gehe

ome.

have

in'd:

d out

at he

e re-

ferve

fiffe-

re be

ce of

Ver-

be-

idef-

my celi

mo

me

hai

1 0

his

rin

en

put

n I

me

but

W

ted

111

red

my

bul

On

nil

ını

ay

111

:ha

ha

:01

B

Pa

pel

for

tio

de

where they should go, and in what place they should find them. He would have had me gone with him, but that I excused my self, alledging it would be inconvenient. Taking a Constable with them, they went & sound what they sought for according to my direction, which they seiz'd, leaving the old man to condole his loss, which had been no great matter had not his life lain in his Purse.

Having thus carried on my mischievous contrivances with continued impunity; the next I fell on was a young Merchant, to whom I went gentily habited, with a foot-boy waiting at my heels. I lookt out several Commodicies, and laid them afide, affuring him that I would e're long lay out a confiderable parcel of money with him. We difcours'd upon the price, & in the conclusion closed. The next day I appointed the Goods to be fent home to my House, and in the interim defired him to go along with me, and accept of what poor accommodation my habitation would afford him, under the pretence of being better acquainted, but my design was to raise in him a good opinion of me, for I had one room (especially) very richly bung with coffly furniture, My motion was entertained', and away we went, where I treated him nobly; the next day the Commodities were fent in with his Servant, who expected his money, but I precended that my Calhier was abroad, and fo defired him to call the next morning; he did, but then I was not to be spoken with. Thus he did so often till the young man was weary. At laft the Mafter himself came, who met me just as I was going out ; who had not the patience to ask for his money

them

they

gone

ing it

with

L SC-

ving

been

urfe.

ntri-

fell

nti-

eels.

n a-

ut a

dif-

fed.

ent

him

ac-

m,

but

of

hly

el-

im

in

it I

de-

out

fo

he

0-

his

cy

money, but presently railed most bitterly, calling me cheat, knave, &c. and that he would not put himself to the trouble of posting me up, but would have a Warrant for me instantly.

Being gone, I was as nimble as himself, having scouple of my Emissaries ready for him against his return. It was not long before he came structing with a Constable. Perceiving him coming, I sent my two friends out with their Warrant, and putting it into the Constables hand, charged him in the Kings name to execute it upon such a one, meaning the Merchant; who dared not deny it, but carried him before a Justice, before whom my two Rogues swore slat felony, and so was committed. Sending for friends, they advised him to make mend thereof. Whereupon I was much solicited; and upon consideration I consented to cause my friends to forbear prosecution.

As yet I have not fully unbowell'd the huge bulk of my villany, that hath proved so burdeniome to the world, and destructive to so many families; wherefore give me leave a sittle farther to
matomize my own vicious nature, and I shall so
ay open the ulcers and sores of my impostumed
machinations, apparent to the sight of every one,
that the most Ospray and Owl-eyed spectator
hall confess there never was a more necessary and

commodious discovery revealed.

Brother, said I, for so I must call you now, your segitious deeds claiming that title, & must be compelled I see to give you superiority, the upperhand, for I am consident the line of other mens inventions never sounded the Sea of a more deep and dreadful mischies. When I consider how power-

ful

ful and imperious vice is of late grown; and what horrid facts are committed every where by licentious and wicked men that fwarm in all places : I admire that the Fabrick of the Earth is not concinually palfyed by Earth-quakes, fince there is · Greator above that overfees fuch actions. That the Barch her felf (though an indulgent Mother) doth not receive into her Womb her off-fpring, and therein for fhame hide them ; that the air is not choaked with Froggs, and that black pitchy mifts do not perperually masque the face of Heaven, and leave the World in obscurity; and that the Sun doch not hide his face from feeing fuch enormous crimes blacker then is the Eclipse of his countenance : and laftly, that the Sea is not turned to blood to put us in mind of the cruel and remorfeles usages of one another; our kindness being commonly attended with discourresses of a Vermilion bue. Thus Brother you fee I am fenfible of my miscarriages, but want the power to regulate my life. I would have proceeded, but that! found this discourse grated in his ears; wherefore I defired him to profecute his story, which he did in this manner.

He

cal

if

ed,

qu

wh

to

Ik

TE

W

br

CD

b

what cenes: I conre is

(hat her)

ng,

air 15

tchy

Hea-

fuch

f his

urn-

d re-

ness

of a

fible

egu-

hatl

efore

e did

HAP.

CHAP. XLVI.

He discovers the subtlety of some Citizens he had to do withal by Broking for them, relating his own craft and cunning, and what the consequent was, thereine of young Gentlemen.

I lke an Hawk as I rold you, I flew at all Game, not confining my felf to any one thing particularly; where I could abuse the Law, I did; and if had an opportunity to Trepan, I feldome failed, oc. Some part of my time I spent in the enquiry of what young Heirs were arrived, into whole fociety I was fure by one means or other to infinuate my felf. These Country Wood-cocks Iknew how to catch with a City Springe; whom I very well understood, had rather be out of the world then out of the fashion, who would be brave for the present time, though their Gallantry contthem all their fugure Fortunes. I commonly laid my plot thus: Sit, you undervalue your felf by the meannels of your Habit, it being fo unfuitable to your quality: if you want money, you cannot want credit, having a fair promising estate in reversion; if you are willing, I will find you out a believing Mercer. Returning me many thanks, it may be he would be in fuch haft as to fend me prefently. He could not be fo eager to have his gaudy defires fatisfied, as I forward to accomplish them. I knew knew where togo readily to one, with whom ! went fnips ; in fo faying , I would not have any think I throw dirt upon that noble profession. It I discover the fraud of any particular person, as long as I name him nor, I do him no wrong; but if I dered by what deceitful and finister means he worketh upon the infirmity of the youth of a greenwitted Gallant , it may ferve for an ufe of initrudion. In the most famous Universities there are some Dunces resident, that by disgracing themselves, difgrace also their fellow Students. In the most virtuous Courts there will be fome Parafits. So in the most goodly and glorious City under Heavens Canopy, there are some Alps lorking, that fling the reputation of their Brethren by their poylonous and corrupt dealings. There are knaves in all Trades but Book-felling.

1

r

impa

But to my purpose: a young Gentleman coming in of Norfolk to see the City & for discounting out of Norfolk to fee the City, & finding to many ha him, he grew very melancholy : happing to be in he his company, and indifferently well acquainted in with him, I askt him the cause of his fadness ! af po fest the true original of his pensiveness. Pith, fair I, is that all? let me alon seffect what you de Ga fire; neither shall you wait longer then the morner row. Leaving my Gentleman, away I went to person fic for my purpose, & gave him an account that of my bufiness : glad he was thankt me for my bor pains, promising me a reward, and would need I, i have me to a Tavern to consult this affair. Having ref concluded every thing, I repaired the next day total my Gentleman, who over-joyed to fee me, wa abo om [impatient to know whether his wishes were consummaany red. Come along with me, faid I, and we will cry what we can do. I have been year importunate with the I il a Mercer, but as yet I cannot mollifie him, it may be your long 1 deworkreenrudifome elves, e most So Hear that their e are impa

presence may do much. Finding him in the Shop, I called him afide , and told him this was the Gentleman . My young Gentleman that would be gallant prefently, fell aboard him (and with much fervency and procestations) he wood the Mercer to credit him for 30 1, worth of commodities. I called him afide, faying, What will 30 l. worth do ? take up 100 l. worth , and what you ule not , I will dispose by tale , to furnish your Pockets withmoney. He thankt me kindly for my advice, and returned to the Mercer, who ask'd him, if he should credithim with fo much, what fecurity would he propound? This ttruck my young Gentleman as dumb as a Codshead. The Mercer perceiving he had nothing to fay, plaid the Roge-maker, being extream backwardto trust oming of, Statutes he scorned: For, said he, Gentlemen of late above (1 by the fame means having had feveral collops cur be in from the body of my estate) that I will not credit any ainted more : whereas he spake this only to grind the blunt apfainted more: whereas he lpake this only to grind the blunt apfis? af petic of my Commodity-taker into a sharper edge, and
ly cont make him more greedy of his own mine; imitating in
this a cunning and deceitful, though petulant and wanton Currezan; who is nice when a fick-brain'd young
Galant importunes her to admit of his amorous kindnels, only to make him more fierce upon his own confution: holding him off like a Fencer, a month of two,
count to the may come up the roundlier to her purpose. But
for my to the matter. My Gentleman being in a manner denied,
the need I stronded him this? Sire you know no suppose a condend need lifeconded him this; Sir, you know not what you do in Having refusing to credit this Gentleman; he is his Fathers beir, day to a man of a vast estate, and very aged: This his son is about a very great match, a rich heires, and though he

hath not mony for the prefent, yet let him have an huns dred pounds worth of Commodities, you need not doubt your payment, and it will do him at this present a 1000 pounds worth of good. The Mercer began to hearken to this, and protested to my Green-goose, that he would be glad to do any a pleasures to as notto injure himself; that if he could out possels him with a belief that he should have his mony in fix months, he would freely let him have an hundred pounds worth of what he pleafed : the young Gentleman protested, and I warranted it; and the Mercer (though feemingly loath) condescended, upon this proviso still, that he should procure some man elfe to be bound with him as good as himself; For, said he, we are all mortal, and having not a leafe of our lives, we may die before to morrow; where is then my 100 1. Signior Unthrift is once more put to his non-plan, bu'at length fell to intreat me, who would not by any means and fo we parted. He would not let me rest for two of three days together, fo that at last, provided he would give me ten pound, I would : agreed, we went again to the Mercer, and entring into Bonds, we had the commodities. Having made my young Gentleman an absolut Gallant, I went to fell what was left, of which I made 40 1. but I made my Gallant to be contented with 301 alledging, that when goods come once to be fold, the will not yeild the moiety of what they cost, though new and out of that 301. I had my 101. for furety (hip. Thu I perswaded him to be very well saussied. He revels: bout, whilft I was contriving to leave him as baret means as Brains. Now doth my Mercer dream of no thing but his pay-day, which he hoped would be broke The time being expired, and my young Novice nor mind ing it, the Mercer invited him to a dinner in Fift-free dinner being almost ended, for a third course came up couple of Sergeants sewed with Mace, who arrest him at the fuit of the Founder of the Feast; not prod ring Bail, he was carried to the Counter, where he le

hun-

oubt

COD

en to

ildbe

; that

nould

t him

: the

; and

d, up-

man

fometime : his friends hearing thereof, endeavour'd to ethim out, by an Audita querela; my Mercer hearingthereof, 'advised with me what was best to be done. Agree, faid I, with fome Officer in the Exchequer, and fourn the debt over to the King, pretending you owe him to much mony; for the Chancery will not, or cannot allow any thing in luch a case against his Majesty Heladoing, his buhnels was done for the pretent. Thus have I read, when the Jews have bought a red-hair'd Boy, at first they will cloath him in filks; ravishing him with all the delights that can be thought on, never have Mulick from his ears, or banquets from his tafte; and , faid thus use him, till they see he is plump, fat, and fit for their r lives, purpole: but when the poor Boy least thinks of his im-00 1.3 minent rune, he istaken by a brace of flaves, and tied bu' at ip by the heels, to beaten by degrees to death with cudgmeans dispurging the rankest poylon out of his mouth, and matwo of king Mummy of his flesh. I shall leave it to the Reader would omake application. In short, I perswaded the Mercer gain to take a Bond of 500 1. of his Prisoner, to be paid after ommoisfathers deceafe. This Widgeon being in the ners, blolut taled to any thing for his liberty. He was not the first I mad oferred, by thousands. And that is the reason there are th 301. o many creited Citizens: for Gentlemen being begd, the tr'dby their extortion; they have no other means then ah new ofall in with their Wives, purchasing from them a tup-. Thu by. This is it that makes the Roads every where fo full of revelsa high-way-men, who will borrow of men when they have s bare inle mind to lend, but not without giving them Bonds. m of no This makes Tyburn, the Metropolitan, and other petty e broker Gallowles, have formany hangers on; and this is the or mind h-street fathers deaths, as their Fathers, when living, have place ame up guid others. These are the Boars that plow up whole Aarrefte ms, nay, Fields of Gentlemens I ands with their Snouts not prod bele are the Swine that eat up whole Orchards, and ere he la the are they whose fiery consciences drink up whose OB

148 The English Rogue: Ot,

Fish-ponds at a draught; and lastly, they are the Hurry-canes that root up the trees of whole woods together.

From fuch , Libera nos Domine.

To conclude, take this as an infallible Maxime, that the worst of Creditors are either very rich men, or very poor men: The rich man can stay for his mony, and therefore will have all or none; the poor man to be sure will have no pity, neither do I see how he should, for it may be the debt is all he is worth.

ther

CHAP. XLVII.

now he infinuated himself into the acquaintance of all bethought he could prey upon, and what tricks he us to build his interest upon their ruine.

Wow can that Tyrant flourish in his Commonwealth, when the foundation of his Reign was built on the epulchre of the right and lawful Heir he murther'd > And ow can that man profper, whose rife he rear'd from thermens ruines? Such was 1, who having oftentimes ken gulled by Knaves, turned Knave my felf, and did as radily hunt after such I could make a prey of, (to repair edamages I had fustain'd by others) as the devil doth fer Ulurers fouls, being on their death-beds, refolving to relike a Bandice on the tooll. Like an old Souldier haing been beaten to the world, (or indeed more properly) estenby the world) I began to fummon up all my fenfes nd my idle brains to a thick account, how to get that up gaining riot and folly had ipent; and thinking I had no my to recover my felf, but by what ruined me, I did cast bout me, and fished after this manner. I prepared my nessproviding baits, and made ready my hooks, which ad fuch conftant and firm barbs , that after I had ftruck Gudgeon in the gills, I was fure to hold him, though fufferd him to play a fictle in the ftream. The Flouds daily frequented, were either the Temple, Ordinaries, lay-houses, Cock-pits, Brothels, or Taverns, leaving oplace unsearch'd, wherein there might be any thing orthy a Bait. If luch I found, like a shadow I was ever from his heels, but followed him close, especialif he was a young Country-Gentleman, whom his ther had fent up to fee fashions in the Citie: and raer then he should go out as rawe as he came in . I failed

CHA

ether.

and

to be

hould,

ed not to scason himin one of the Cities Powdering. First , I made it my business to know what his Father allowed him; then would I studie his natural disposition and inclination, and accordingly sute my felf to hin , fothat by my behaviour towards him, he should look upon me to be his Majculine Sweet-heart, his befom-friend, and that like Hippocrates twins, we must needs live and die together. Having now by much I weat and industrie adapted and fitted him to my humour and purpose, and wrought him to fuch a foft and waxen temperature, that I could make what impression I pleased on him, I brought him acquainted with some of my accomplices, who all vail'd bonnet to him, invited him from Tayern to Tayern, not letting him expend a penny; or if he wanted money, I would supply him with four or five pound. This Innocent (not having yet (cented the Citie-air) all this while thinks himself in Elyfium, fancying he enjoys more de ights then the Turks Paradife affords , and withal imagineth himfelf not a little graced, to be entertained amongst such feet ing. Gallants. For my Rogues (give me the hiertie w call them so) looks on it as the greatest piece of police to wear good cloaths, though their mockets were work furnished then a Chandlers box, that seldom hath any co Groats, &c. Sometimes my Cultie did meet with fut vil that knew me) who would advice him to have a care I (that knew me) who would advise him to have a can person, and in the end would ruine him. Whereast cut was to little purpose: for when Youth is in its full we con gour, and height of defire, neither wholesom countil dar nor lamentable examples, will give them warning of tha their future destruction. Still I continued my seeming respects and kindnesses him , which I onely intender to o as the Praludium or Prologue to that Play which was this to come after : for my Country Cock-brain being ho neyed with these sweet delights, thought that whatever

1

n

b 12

tot

ringat his atural te my m, he beart. s. We much ny huoft and reflion h forme · myiexpend ly him having himfelf hen the himfelf h feem pertie to police e work

eing ho Whatever

becould return, was not able to give an answerable faustaction. Watching a fit opportunitie (when he is well warm'd with wine) then would I perfwade hims (which was no difficult matter) to be bound with me for fo much , orc. which I promited I would repay at the day, without putting him to any inconvenience bur ke knew not, that what I borrowed for an hou, I borrowed for an age. When I could squeeze no more juice out of him , then I left him to the mercy of his Crediwis, to be dealt w that as the fopiniay in the Fable, who being fummoned to appear with the reft of the winged Tribe , before their King the Eagle , borrowed of all the finer fort of Birds feathers to adorn him, and make him appear iplended before his Soveraign. After he wat difmis'd, he proudly flutter'd up and down the woods with hisborrow'd gallantry, which made the little Titmosfe, Wren, and Hedge-Sparrow adore him. They to whom he was obliged for his gallantry, hearing thereof, deminded again their own, and to deplum'd him, whereby he teem'd ten times worfe then those small birds that lately did admire him. Such Popiniays are they, who borrow of every Citizen, to make themselves shew glorious in the worlds eye; but when their Creditors shall counsels of the worlds eye; but when their Creditors shall ath any come and claim their own, and getit, they will seem penets more foul then lately they did fair. So various and will anous were the pranks I committed every day, that I was forced now, like an Owl, to appear only by night in the Citie. If I d dat any time transferes that thereast withom, I did then as the dogs of Egypt, when they sould we come to drink of the river Nilms, lap here and there, and dare not stay long in one place, for fear the Crocodiles that he lurking within the Binks, should pull them infeement to one Tayern; and not daring to stay longer there, shich was shifted to another. But to proceed.

CHAP. XLVIII.

How be could make Ink that would disappear from the Paper, accordingly as he pleased, by the strength or weakness of the composition. His imitating exacily both Hand and Seal. A remarkable Story thereupon.

fe

f

C

ca

W

R Eading one time a book that an Italian writ, I found therein a description of several forts of Ink, and how to make them; but more especially, an Ink that thould last a week, a month, or two, according to the composition. I made an experiment, and found it hit indifferently well: perceiving how beneficial this would be to me, I resolved not to rest till I had found out the true Receipt; which I did at last, by much study and industry. Having obtain'd it, I so highly valued it, that methought I would not have parted with it for the Philosophers Stone. Not to be tedious, I did abule therewith many persons with Bonds, Leases, Deeds, Acquittances, c'c. there appearing in fuch a time nothing but the bare Seal, the paper remaining as white as # never writ on. By the help of Graving, I could counterfeit Seals exactly, infomuch that I have often cheated the Grand Cheater, Oliver, the late hypocritical and bloudy Tyrant; and by an exact imitation of an hand-writing, his Council was too too fentible of what That I was no bungler at it Cheats I put upon them. I Thall give you this instance. Accidentally coming acquainted with a Gentlewoman, very beautiful and well featur'd, her sparkling eyes fet me all in a flame, so that I resolved to attempt the enjoyment of her. Oftentimes I visited her, and by the modelty of my carriage towards her, the perceived not my burning luft. One time having a fit opportunity, the being alone, I communicafrom

ength

g ex-

Story

found

, and

k that

to the

hit ins

bluow

ut the

y and

acd its

or the

abuic

s,Ac-

othing

e as it

COUN-

cheat-

of an

what

rat It

d well

times

wards

ne ha-

mica-

ndmy thoughts to her: waving what amorous difcourie past on my fide , I would have fallen roundly whematter; but the understanding my intent, cry'd out: whereupon I defifted, feeing it was to little purpole if I proceeded. Sitting down by her, the exprest an abiolute hatred to me for my incivility, and vow'd the would neither fee nor endure me more. The vehemence of her utterance and countenance fully declared the was in earnest; fo that I faw twas time to be gone. I ooking about (unperceived by her) I took up half a sheet of paper of her writing, and clape it into my pocket; and fo took my leave. Coming home, I found my love converted into hatred, and therefore vowed my revenge : and thus it was. I understood from her , whereabout her husband liv'd , and what his Christian name was, with fomthing of her concerns; that her husbands mother could not endure her, (because her son married her without a portion, though a wife, discreet, vertuous, and handsome woman) and whereabout the lived, with name, &c. I counterfeitda Letter, as from this vertuous Gentlewoman, to a Gallant of hers, taxing him with want of love, and that if he proved not more constant, she had no more olay to him, orc. The contents you shall have in the Letter it felf, as tolloweth.

Most beloved by me of men!

I cannot blame you so much as my self: it is customany for man to proffer, but then it should be a momans
my to refuse: but alas! how could I withstand the
merful perswasions of your eloquent tongue, especially
when they carried with them so much seeming reality
affection and constancy? I finde you now like other
move breaking men, who having obtained the fruition
stheir desires, their appetite nauseates that which beme it so eagerly crav'd. Call to minde those many ensared and melting expressions you did voluntarily ut-

ters

ter, when I was encircled in thine arms; and if the will not reduce you so your former station, and goodefeem of me, now fo much flighted by your confider that I have preferred you in love before my Husband, me caring how much I wronged him to pleasure you. If nothing will prevail, know then, this (hall be my refor Colution, that fince you have alienated my affection from my Husband, and you thus unworthily defert me, I will procure a Subject elsewhere shall out-do you in evert thing, as much or more as you have out-done my Auf. band. I am young, plump, bandsome, and buck some; what then | bould hinder me from enjoying fuch a perlong my beart will not rest fatisfied till I have found! which having done, be shall lead me in thy view, and then it is probable you will de fire, but never shall reaffume your place again within my breaft. Farewel

This Letter was fent to her Mother-in-law in the Country, who was glad the had matter to impeach her daughter to her fon. Affoon as he faw the Letter, he very well knew the hand, he thought , and would have fworn it to be his wifes: but reading the contents, the poor man was ready to fink down for grief. Perturbation of minde would not let him rest in his Country. dwelling, but rid up Post to London, where he foon found out his wife. The unexpected fight of him at first surprised her, not hearing of his coming, and knowing that his occasions were very urgent in the Country; however, like a truly-loving wife, the was overjoy'd to let him, and would have kifs'd him, but that he rudelit thruit her off ; which action ftruck her to the heart, and overwhelm'd her in amazement. Prethee Sweetheart (faid the) what is the matter? There, read it, faid he, throwing her the Letter. She read it; and fwounded he let her lie, not caring whether she liv'd or dy'd; and had dy'd indeed , had not her Maid come up accidental ly. Being recovered, he ask'd her whether it was her hand,

th

n

th

I

to

ar fo

ifthe

Tood e-

er that

d, no

. If

7 20/0-

n from

I will

evert

Huf.

some &

4 per-

ound!

> and

all re-

re web

in the

ch her

er, he

d have

s, the

turba-

mtry-

e foon

OWINE

:how-

to lee

rodelie

heart ,

weet-

inded:

; and

dental-

hand,

hand. She could not deny it : which made the main nee, ready to run out of his wits, whilft the was filent with altonilh ment, taking such inward grief, that the betook her felf to her bed. Nothing could comfort her, neither would the take any thing to fultain life: Hearing how powerfully my forgeries had wrought, to the hazard of somes lives; in the same hand I sent him Letter, wherein I gave him an account of the defigne, modaiming to the world the Gentlewomans honefty, unspotted and unstain'd. The Gentlewoman recoverd in a little time after; but this trick had too much feiz'd upon my Gentleman ; for like a fool he fell difracted in a freering posture, as pleas'd to think his wife was honest not withstanding. I have been somewhat long in this relation, because it was a passage yery remarkable. Now I shall tell you how I cheated a young Citizen and an Upholfter.

CHAP. XLIX.

How he cheated a young Citizen newly fet up, and an upbeltter.

A Young Citizen about to fet up, and wanting fome money, was directed to me, to procure fo much as his present occasion required. I treated him very civilly, promiting him very fairly; and in order thereunto, appointed him a day; which being come, contrary to my expediation or defire he brought a crew with him to fee the receipt of the money. Judging this time inco nvement for my defignes, I told him I exp Red the money his very day; but if he pleased to seal the Bond, and have it witheffed, he might keep it himfelf; and bringing the Bond with him the next day, he should not fail to have his money. The next day he came to the place appointed, where I was ready to want him. As good fortune would have it, he came alone. Idiscours'd with him a while: at last I defired him to let me see the Bond; which he delivered into my hand, being fign'd and feal'd

before. I took this as a good and lawful livery, and pur it up into my pocket. He asked me what I meant. I told him he should know when the Bond became due. Why Sir, faid he, you will not ferve me fo? Doft thou think I am fuch a fool (faid I) to lend thee fo much money upon a piece of Paper, which next showre of rain will wash away with thy felf into the common shore ? Shall I trust thee, when thou canst not trust thy felf? Arthis the young man began to be clamorous; but one of my accomplices foon Hill'd the clapper of his mouth, by a found knock on the pate, which laid him affeep : and in the mean time we marcht off. Just as the money came due upon the Bond, my flock-pated Cit was gone to tell his friends in the country the danger of Counters and prisons in the Citie. Wanting another time some money to fupply my preient occasions, I could not think of any ftratagem for the prefent to affilt me in this necessity, but to fellmy featherbed, with furniture thereunto belong. ing. Packing them up, I got a friend to go along with the Porter, and fellthem to an Upholfter. Whichmy friend did , bringing me half their worth; but withal, that which was more then the whole worth, the name of the person. A week afterwards, wanting my bed, I refolved to have it again. Whereupon I went to him that bought it, asking him before a couple I carried along with me, whether at fuch a time there were not fuch commodities fold him. He acknowledged there was. I defired to fee them : and he as readily granted that. Sir, faid I, thefe are my goods: I was lately rob'd, and now I know you are the receiver : I mutt have you before a Justice,to know how you came by them. The naming of a Justice to terrified this simple filly fellow, that he bid metake themif I would swear they were mine, and put him to no further trouble. First I swore they were my goods, (and therein I was not perjur'd) but I told him I could not receive stollen goods safely, though they were my own. In fhort, I got my bed and furniture thereunto again, with CHAP. money to boot.

CHAP. L.

He is at last met withal, and laid up in Prison by one of his Creditors. The abuses and tricks Sergeants use to arrest men. Lastly, he escaped, by putting atrick

upon his Keeper.

d pur

told

Why

hink

oney

will

Shall

t this

of my

bya

nd in

came

to tell

s and

oney

fany

cy, but

elong.

with

ch my

ithal.

me of

n that

com-

aid I,

know tice to

Justice ie take

to no

lotre-

Mn.In

with

HAP.

HAving gone thus far without any remarkable check or controul, at least any such as might bear a proportion with the villanies and in juries I had done; I abfolutely thought that nothing was dishonest or difficult that had in it either pleasure or profit. Meeting with no molefration or hinderance, I took my freedom to do even what I listed. One time thinking my felf most secure, I then found my felf in the greatest danger, being arrestedin an Action of 5000 L. Several times there were attempts made to take me, but I was fill too cunning for them : yet at last they over reacht me ; it will not be amiss to relate in what manner. They had information, that every week I had Letters come to me out of Effex, and that the Porter which brought them had still free admittance to me: wherefore the Serjeant provided himfelf a Frock, and a Rope about his middle, which would better have become his neck, and with Letters in his hand directed to me trudged to my lodging. Knocking at my door, and being demanded his business, he told them he had Letters for the mafter of the house, nominating me-Looking out, and feeing no one but a feeming Porter, I order'd that he should be let in. Assoon as he was enter'd, he bid my Worship good morrow, and in stead of delivering me his Letters, she wed me his Mace; which I wisht might be the onely spice and meat too he should ext for a twelvemonth. Seeing how I was betraid, I went quickly along with him to the Compter; and afterwards, finding I could make no composition with my Creditors, turned my felf over to the Kings-Bench. Vanous are their tricks and inventions to enfoare whom they intend to arrest. Sometimes I have known a Creditor feem to comply with his Debtoratelling him that pay-

ing

ing some inconfiderable matter, his Bonds should bere newed with longer time : then appoint him a place of meeting, where he faith he will bring a Counfeilor and Scrivener; a Counfellor to advise them in management of their bufinessand a Scrivener to write what they determine. He acquainted a Sergeant and a Ycoman with his Plot, who were as hot upon it, as an Italian one Wench of 15. The Serjeant going with a Barriften Gown on his back, and the Yeoman with his beard ou as close as a stubble field, with a Pen in his ear, and some Parchment in his hand, effected their defign without fuspicion. A Merchant I knew, that intended to break and go beyond Sea, was betraid by his fervant, who informed his Creditors that at fuch a time his Mr. vyould be gonerthat on the morrow he would fend for Coopers to hoop some dry-fats to pack his goods; and that if ever they hoped to have their money, they must make that their time. Some Serjeants were prefently acquainted herewith, who attired like Coopers in red Caps, canvale Brerches, with Ads in their hands, and Hoops about their fhoulders, went to the Merchant, and were entertained whill he was giving them direction; but in flead of hooping the dry-fats, they hoopt him in their arms, aid arrefted him. Before they parted with himsthey made him part with fo much money as would fatisfie his Credition andthem; and made him fee them befides, not then to enter any more Actions against him. They will change themselves into as many thopes as Protem, to brings bout their deligne: sometimes like a grand wealthy U tizen, othertimes like a Country-fellow newly comen town, with boots and fours all dirty. Now as I have related their manner of strefting, fo let me briefly in form you of their uling (or rather abuling) priloners First they enquire of the person whether this be the find time he was arrested : iffo, then they know the beat how to deal with him. Perhaps they will carry him the Tavern, pretending to do him kindness, where the

berelace of or and zement hey deth with an Oni rriften ard cur ad fome without o break who invvould Coopers it if ever ke that uainted canvale out their rtained flead of ms, atd ade him Crediton t then to change bring a letry Ci comen as I have iefly in rifoner the fir he bear ry himu

here the

illadvise him to fend for some friend; and one of them sill be the Porter himfelf; but in flead of fetching the friend, he only enquires out his Creditors, and perswades hemto ule this opportunity to recover their debt : mean while, the other that is left behind doth milk him. The nellenger returning, forrowfully tells him his friend is notat home. Getting as much as they can by founging. andfucking the very heart-blond of his socker, the Comper must be his refuge at latt. Sometimes, seeing a man nfear of arresting, they will without warrant of the Creditor give him a call of their Office, often arrefting him before they enter their Action : and have ways to givent a mans injuring them by fearch in the Offices. Other times for a fee they will fend to the party to keep out of the way, having received a fee to that end before. Oftentimes, having arrested, if the Creditor stand not by, they will let the party go for a brace of Angels, orlo; telling his adversary that he cannot fet eye on him. And though their fee for an Arrest is to be but I so yet will they hardly be wrought upon to do their Office under a Crown: and though the Statute Cay that the arrefled shall pay but one Groat, I will not excuse him for an Angel. If a man oppose them, or struggle for an elcape, they will both gripe and pinch him, and afterwards clap an Action of A Sanit and Battery on him at their own fuit. I could fay more of them, but that for for I must be favourable, being now, as I celt you, a priloner in the Kings-Bench, which may be called, The Bankrupts Banquetting bonfe, where he fealts himself on diffies borrowed from other menstables; or, The Proligals Purgatory, and A Pesthonse for decaying Citisens. Being wearie of this place, wherein are as many maladies and milchiefs as flew our of Pandor a's box openedby Epimerhese; I invented this stratagem: One day I pretended much bufiness abroad, and so got leave to go out with my Keeper, refolving not to return with him. Having been from Tayern to Alehouse, and so to Ta-

Tavera again, precending the dispatch of much bufines I at length told my Keeper, that I would visit a very dea friend of mine, but that I thought it requifite to be trim first. He consenting, we went to a Barbers. I fardown in the Chair first; and being disparche, I defired the Ken per to fit down too, and I would pay for fprucifying hi Phi (nomy, Whilft he was trimming Italkt of one thin or other, to hold him in discourse. At last faid the Barber Shut your eyes, or else my ball will offend them. Shu ting his eyes, I took an occasion to slip out, planting m felf in an house hard by ; the Barber not imagining was a priloner. The Keeper not hearing me talk, value not the fmart, but opened his eyes; and feeing mend in the shop, rose up, and that so hastily, that he over threw Cutbeard, and the bason on him, running out if to the Areet with the Barbers cloth about him, and De Barberofo's Turbant on his head. The people feeing his thus with the frozh about his face', concluded him mad and ashe ran gave him the way. The Barber withh Razor ran after the Keeper, crying, Stop bin, frop bin that I may be revenged on the Rogue. The other ne minding the Outcry, ran flaring up and down as it wits had lately stole away from him, and he in purlu of them. Some durft not ftop him, others would not thinking the Barber by his posture intended to have Tefficles for abuling his wife. To conclude, the Barb at laft feis'd him, and having recovered his cloaths an made him pay 6 d. for shaving, the Keeper was dim with a kick or two in the arfe ; the Barber not fufferin him to speak a word in his own defence. Thus freen my felf, I refolv'd to take the Country-air, where I ha pily met with you. Many other things worthy remen brance did he relate, which now I have forgot. Son while we-staid together; but at last his bufiness call'dhi one way, and my Padding Trade invited me another.

CHAP. LI.

Henlaid up in O tod mal bis Hoft; be is cheatime is ranfomed ted at Chefter ; Knights of the thence by some Road, they paying

Our Crew having been abroad, we had got a valuable Purchase; which after we had diided, I told them, that I would but visit a friend t he over n Oxford, and repair to them again within two ng outin or three days. My old Acquaintance being over-and De by'd to see me, after to long absence, treated me my gallantly, introducing me into the fociety of he Wits; who would frequently drink too, till hey had loft them. The Company pleased me owell, that I thought it a folecism in civiliz y, to be fober, when they made any appointin purfu ment for mirch ; and they being true Baschanaould not lans, in the uppermost Classis of Aristippus's o havel chool, scorn'd to be outry'd by a junior Sophishe Barb ler; and therefore, do what I could, they would oaths an edrunk before me: they never contended about was dim ny argument that tended to ebriery, but swalfustern owed them all. I thought they would never have one speaking of Sack; every one endeavoring the should express most in its praise. One said, got. Son but Diogenes was but a dry fellow; and the only call'this tasen he could give for it, was, That it is shrewely nother. specied by the Commentators on bis Tub, that that onden-bouse of his was given him by a Beer-brewer bibeing an enemy to all good wits and learning Aa

CHA

bufines very dea

be trim' fatdown

the Kee fying hi

one thin

e Barber

m. Shu nting m

agining lk, value

ng me no

eeing hi

him mad

withh

stop him

n as if h

fufferin

8

10

fa

Ol

1 T

th

o d

I

102

is c

ario

gave bim this Cask, which formerly had contained that pernicious liquor , Beer , that by the meer fcent be might deftray bis understanding. But Bacchuis fo witty a Philosopher, that he never fails, night nor day, to your forth his instructions, till he hath filled his auditors out of measure; 'cis he that makes us speak fluently, and utter our minds in abundance : for my part, I am commonly fo over-joy'd in his company, that I have often w feared I should never be my own man again. Sau 118 another, It is Sack was the Promethean fire, no ing foln from Jove's Kitchin, but his Wine-cellar, to increase the native heat, without which weat but cold clay ; but that celeftial liquor applie dal ed even to the dead, will cause a revivisication this is it which gave Ganymede beauty, and Feb new youth. Can you think, that ever Ariffetle would have been taken notice of, had he drank Ale or pur Beer; or, that Alexander's conquests had been heard of, had he been fober? therefore to make his Captains famous to posterity, he taught then how to muster Quarts and Pottles, and by accusto ming them to be dead-drunk, shewed them the way to contemn death. All this is true (faid and ther, fo drunk, that what he fpake could hardly be understood) but pray take my opinion with you too: do not all light, things ascend? what better way is there to understand high matters then a light head ? Copernicus by the lightnels o his head, claimed alliance with heaven, and by that first found out the motion of the earth which he could never have done, had not Sac been his instructer. Hence grew the Proverb, I vino veritas, as if Sack were the only Butt trut Choots bro d that

ent be

s is fo

t nor

hath

char

ids in

ly fo

often

. Said

, no

125,00

appli

d been make

then

culto

ch the

dano

ardle

a with what

atters

relso

nd by

arth

t Sacl

b, 1

truth

Choots

floors at, the piercing of which causeth the other to be drawn out with it. For my part Gentlemen. faid I, my pattion was never more ftirred then the other day, comming by a red-lettice, unto which There a natural ancipathy : there did I hear a Tapler aver, that Helicon was nothing more then an Hogshead of March-beer, and that Pegawas anciently a Dray-horfe : and then fpeaking of French wine, in derifion, called him friskng Monfieur ; and the Spanish, Don Khodomontah; fwearing, that if ever he met with either, he would challenge all the Drawers in the Town to weate defihim as he would. Then cumbling our two or d Feb never look through his red-lettice Percullice, if would he did not verify believe he should see Monsteur Ale or burn'd with a pox to him, and Spanish Don multid odeath with butter and eggs.

> It is a thing beyond my reason, That we strong Ale for Sack Sould quit Since twould have blown us up by treason; Had not Ale bestirr'd our wit : Then give w Ale, but banift Sack; That Spanish Don must have the rack,

I could do no less for his malepertnes, but much his Hogs-head, which to convince him of terror, ran Terle Claret : I heard afrerwards, his accident converted the Infidel. We fpun out arious discourses of this nature, as long as we midfee, and then each man reel'd to his reeftive lodging. The next morning, walking broad to finde our fome of my last nights allo-Azz cieces

cistes, unfortunately my Chefter-Landlord (who having some bufiness to do in Oxford, was newly come thicher to difperch it) efpy'd me, and with out accosting me (like a subrile Sophister) watch me whither I went : being housed, he presently fetche two Officers, and coming out into the ftreet napt me. I fent to those friends that had been fo merry with me ever fince my coming to that City; but they understanding the bufinels came not neer me; one pretending indisposition of body; another, that he was not within; third, that he was about urgent occations, which having finishe, he would wait upon me; buti fine, none came to my relief, the wing themselve right pot-companions, whose courtefies it me be, shall extend to the payment of a Reckoning when their friend wants it to discharge it him felf; but disappear and vanish, when their all tance is implored to draw him out of Prison. Se ing no remedy, I pariently suffered my self to My adversary visiting me, I treat with him about my releasment, offering him wh I had, which was neer upon half; but his refol tion wasto have all, or there I must lie. Thou I could not much condemn him, yet I couldn but complain against the inconstancy of Fortun and ruminating within my minde the milen that accend all forts of prifons , I judged that Debt to be the most deplorable : and though wanted liberty, which commonly doth depr the minde, yet by the vertue of Canary (which could not be without) my fancy scornedto fettered , but would in spice of fate, use her fit dom. Tis some kinde of pleasure and comfor

I

0

B

1

F

db

ently

o the at had

ingu

linels

oution

nin;

which

buci

mielve

ic him

in wh

s refo Thoug

ouldn

Fortun

milen

dthat

though

h depri which nedto her fre comfor

who for a man fometimes in advertity, to descant on with-atche ound experimentally true, lapplied my felf to nyusual custom, the use of my pen, differencing hele Metropolitan Prifons thus :

To Bedlam men are fent bereft of wit; When 'tis restored, then they are freed from it: Confin'd to Newgate long, men can't complain, For once a month they're cleer'd from it and pain; Ina hort time their Bolts wear off, and then They may be fure ne're to come there agen; Discharged thence their fettered souls shall be, Only an bour confin'd, and then fet free. it ma Bridewel, no wife man yet did e're difpraise thee. oning Fortbou doft feed the poor, correct the lazy; The expiration of a little time, eir alli Forgives offenders, and forgets; beir Crime. on. Se Hereafter from this Prifon, Heav'n defend me, elf sot Rather to Bedlam, Newgate, Bridewel, fend me; treate For there Wit, Work, or Law doth fet men free, Nothing but Mon'y bere gets liberty.

> H ving lain here above a week, I fent away a tter to my Brethren, informing them of my sfortune, and acquainting them with the fum as imprisoned far; which was fent me by them, dbrought by one of our trufty Knights : paymy Debt and Fees, I returned again to them.

CHAP. LII.

He returns to his Brethren the Knights of the Road, whom he finds with two or three Gentlemen, firangers; be cheats one of them of a very fair and rich Watch.

Y Companions took little notice of meat my return, which made me think there was fome defign in hand; but according to their !fual course, fell to drink high : observing two or three faces, I tipt a wink to one of my Brethren being in another room; I asked him, who they were ; he replied, Gentlemen that were travelling into the North; to which he added, We have been pumping them (ever fince we did thrust out felves into their company) to know what flored Cash they had about them; but we find little more then will defray their necessary expend on the Road; only, faid he, there is one of the hath a very rich Watch : I bid him return tob place, and I would warrant him to have it befor he ffirred, I came in again to the company, no taking the least cognizance of any, but there much tespectand civility to them all, as a fran ger; I purpofely askt what it was a clock: one the Gentlemen , and of my friends both , pulle forth their Watches, striving who should firtigit me latisfaction to my queftion; after this, th viewed interchangeably the workmanship of of & the other , both praifing the feeming goodne of each others Watch. At last my friend makes proposition : Come, Sir, if you please we "

um

bad .

tran-

1 rich

me at

e Was

eir D-

WO OF

hren:

they

elling

e have

uft out

toreo

lice

pence

fine

befor

thewa

pulle

first gi

s, the

of of

oodne

makes we w

ma

make an exchange upon fentence and repenrance. The stranger defired to understand his meaning: Why Sir, faid he, we will commit them both into the hands of any one indifferent person, and what difference he shall judge there is between them, shall be given in money by him whose Watch is least worth. It was concluded upon; but they could not agree into whose hands to put them. At last it was mutually agreed upon between them, that I being a ftranger to them both, should be the decider : I seemingly refused it, but they would not hear me alledge ony arguments to the contrary; whereupon I went out; ind immediately caufing my horse to be brought fonh, without the least delay I mounted, and away I rid. My Comerades knew where to meet me it the next stage. The next morning they found meout, telling me how they all formed to be fo heated, to avoid suspition: and now did they lembrace me, promiting to themfelves great opes in me from this adventure.

CHAP. LHI.

Heputs anotable Trick upon a Physician.

Ear adjacent to our general randezvous, I was informed of the habitation of a wealby Physician, who had shewed himself fortunateyexpert in divers Cures, where it seemed that
tumane art had not sufficient power to give a remedy. The same of his great skill, and of many
dmirable cures, which to the shame of other Phy-

A a 4

ficians.

ficians, he had performed, made him fo generally beloved and fought after, that in a fhore time he purchased by his sanatory industry, above sool. per annum, and feldom had lefs by him then a thousand pound. Thus much I casually underflood from one accidentally, speaking of this his rich Neighbour : but that which pleased me mof was, that (as he faid) he feldom carried tels then an 100 pieces of gold about him conflantly, proceeding from a fancy derived from an extream love he bore that Metal. I could not fleep for contriving a way how I might disembogue this Uriral of what it contained : sometimes i way-laid him in his return; but he was fo well esteemed of. that he feldom returned home without two or three Gentlemen to accompany him. At another time I thought to have pretended fome diftemper, and to have applied my felf to him for Cure; and imagining that he would privately discourse with me about my Malady, that then I would prefent a Piftol to his breaft, fwearing, that fould be hi immediate and unavoidable Executioner, if he did not without the least noise or refistance, deli ver fuch a quantity of Gold; but this way I could not approve of, it being accompanied with it much hazard. At laft I thought of this stratagen which fafely produced its effect : One day after dinner I rid to his house (seemingly) in extrest hafte, which he might perceive not only by m own affrighted looks, but by my horse, which w all of a form; I askt his fervant, with much quickness, whether Mr. Doctor was within ; yo Sir, (faid he) if you please to walkin, I shall ca him to you. I waited some time (for most of the

i

I

n

1

V

11

G

t

c

t

V

h

rally ne he 5001. hen a nderis his moft then protream r cons Uriy-laid ed of, two or other mper, ; and e with refent be hi , if he deli could with f tagem y afte xtream by m ich we muc ye

of the

pro

profession must take some flate upon them) and then Mr. Doctor came. Sir, (faid I) the report of your great experience in your happy Practice hath brought me hither, humbly imploring your affiliance, and that instantly, if you have any refpet to the preservation of life; the trouble I hall put you to, shall be gratefully recompensed to the utmost of my ability. The Doctor inquired of me, whom it was, and what manner of diftemperche person laboured under; I readily cold him, it was my Wife, who for some continuence of time, hath been extreamly troubled with the flux ofher Belly; the more that is applied to it by us, the more it increaseth ; wherefore, our help failing, I befeech you lend us yours, and favour me fo far as to ride with me to her. The feeming fincenity of my words prevailed upon him , asthey would have done upon the most distrustful. This Doctor (who as I was informed, was accustomed to be induced more by gain, then fair words) gave me this defirable answer : Sir , far be it from me that I should refuse to do my endeavour toany person whatever, much less to a Gentleman of your rank and quality, in that little skill which I have in the knowledge and pradife of Phylick; if can effect any thing for the good of the good Gentlewoman your Wife , I will accend you this ther with a very good will, which at any time my charge requireth. Without attending any further discourse, his horse was made ready, and so we rid away together. As we rid through a small Wood , leading him the way , I turned my horse about, and clapt a Pistol to his breast, shewing him withal an empty bag : See here, Sir, (faid 1) my

my Wife, which hath a long time been troubled with a flux or vomiting, which you pleafe, the last I think more proper; for the no fooner receives any thing for her (and my) fuffenance , but he immediately brings it up again at her mouth. Now Sir, if you do not find out fome means to micigate this diftemper (the cure I fhall never expect, as knowing it impossible) this Pistol shall fend you to A sculapin, to consult with him what is most fit to be administred : come , Sir , let me advise you, and fave your felf the trouble of fo long a journey; your gold (an hundred pieces (as lam rold) are the constant attending Esquires of your body) I fay, that is the best and only Resipe for remedy. The Doctor perceiving there was no help, in much amazement and fear delivered me what gold he had about him, which was neer upon the fum expreft : there was a rich Diamond-Ring on his finger, which I defired him likewile to give me, which should serve for a perpetual memorandum of his kindness to me. I commanded him, asherendred his life, to ride back again, without fo much as once looking behinde him; and that if he offered to raife the Country, ifl was fure to die that inftant , I would be the death of him first. The Doctor followed my dictations foexactly, that I never heard more of him.

b

1

1

1

1

CHAP. LIV.

Add to

Hefalls in love with a wealthy Widow, who is poetically inclined; be courts ber, and in a short time injoys ber, and after that ingratefully leaves ber, carrying away what ready money she had.

TTAving gained so much money by my own I industry and fole procurement, I refolved neither to acquaint my Brethren therewith, nor affociate my felf any longer with them, being fo encouraged by this fuccels, that I concluded I might archieve gallant things by my felf: being belated one night, and some miles from any town, Iknockt at an house that stood in my road, imagining it at first a publick house for entertainment; one of the fervants coming to the door, I found it no fuch thing : he demanded my bufneis : Prithee sweetheart (faid I) acquaint youe Mafter, that there is a Gentleman requests the civility of a nights lodging: the goes in and informs her Miltress what I said; who came to me with much respect, telling me, She questioned not but Iwas a Gentleman, and therefore should be welcome to the mean accomodation the was capable of hewing. I rendred her many thanks, and fo alighted; ftrict order was given to the Groom. that he very carefully looke after my horse : this being done, I was conducted into a very fair room; there did I make my apology in the best Rhetorick I had, for I perceived the was endued with ingenuity, by the quaintness of her expreshons; Ex pede Herculem : Many things I forged; as that

AP.

be laft

ceives out she

.Now

tigate

ct, as

s moft

advise

ong a

slam

fyour

pe for

vas no

ed me

er up-

nond-

kewile

al me-

anded

gain,

him;

, ifl

death

tions

that the ways being dangerous, I was fearful to adventure any farther, having a great charge upon me. Such was her urbanity , that laying afide all niceties, she bore me company till it was time to go to bed, entertaining me all this while with what the house afforded, which was beyond my expectation. Every glafs of wine , or bit almost, that I committed to my mouth, the ushered this ther with some Apothegm or other : the whole feries, indeed, of her discourse, was composed of nothing but reason or wit, which made me admire her; which the eafily understood, I perceived, by her smiles, when she observed me gaping, asit were, when the spoke, as if I would have taien up her Words. As her foul was beautiful, foarkling with celestial ornaments, fo was the caskanet that contained it very fair, and enricht with Natures chiefeft gifts : She was very clear skin'd, well bodied, a fharp piercing eye, a proportionable face, an exceeding small and white hand; and then the lifpe a little, which became her fo well , that methought it added a grace to the reft of her internal and external qualifications. Being about ten a clock, the advited me to repose my self, supposing I was weary. I condescended, though with much regret to leave her fo foon; but good manners would not permit me to do otherwise: She conducted me to my Chamber, where bidding me good night, she betook her self to her own Chamber. That night I could hardly fleep, not fo much for pure love, as the heat of luft:next morning, very early, t heard her ftirring, which made me wonder ; but the told me afterwards, that the got up fo foon, fearing I should have.

d

b

1

t

-

i

have gone away, and the not take her leave of me. About eight in the morning, the Maid brought me upa Sack-poffer ; and a little after , her Miftrefs came, courteoully faluting me, and enquiring how I flept : I return'd an answer, in as handsom terms I could utter: her eyes plainly discovered comine, that the had more then a common respect for me. Having left me a while, larofe, and made my felf ready for my journey : after fevealdiscourses which she had ingaged me in, purposely to delay time, with much gratitude I took my leave, the accending me to the court: my horse being brought our, halced down-right (the had caused him to be prickt in the foot, to the intent Imight Itay longer.) Not knowing what to fay or do, Well, Sir, faid the, fince the unhappy accident bath fallen out so unexpectedly, make use of my house, & what is in ir, cill your horse be recover'd of his lameness. This was a proposition that my foul longed for; wherefore I could not but thew much farisfaction in the acceptation of this proffer. We walkt in again, & profecuted for divertion take our former discourse, interlining it with some love-touches at a distance, which she would frequently descant on pleasantly. We in this shore time became intimately acquainted; which need not be much wondred at, confidering the greatness of sympathy between us; so that now the conquest of her appeared not any ways difficult. Having talkt our felves weary, Come, faid the in a very familiar manner; I will thew you the product of some idle hours; and with that brought me several Epitaphs, Elegies, Anagrams, Anacrofticks, Epigrams, &c. of her own com-

ul to upalide time with

my nost, chi-

ed of e adrceiping,

iful, s the

clear por-

ce to

ne to ndeer fo

ne to aber, r felf

ardly at of ring,

fterould have composition, too many here to relate; but for their wit, deserved to have each line characterized in gold: some I would here insert, were not the radiant lustre of her conceits so great and glorious, that they would absolutely extinguish the dim-sightedness of my fancy. Having viewed them, I could not but applaud them, as their due merit; and I was glad I had this happy occasion to vent my own thoughts, which I tacitly insinuated in these lines, reflecting on her from what I had read.

Sisters thrice three I've read of, and no more; Till your quick wit compleated half a Score: Since you are one, let me perswade you then, Be kind to me, for they are kind to men. Dearest, be like them, they are soft and blitbe Let who will love the nine, give me the tithe.

These lines so powerfully wrought upon her that the could not forbear to tell me, that the was much obliged to me for what I had writ. You cannot Madam, faid I, cancel your obligation, till you have made some recompence : with that, fail the (milingly, What will content you? The continuance of your favour Madam, is the utmost ambition of my defires. You have it Sir; ner ther can I deny any deferving man a thing fo inconfiderable: By your favour Madam, love I mean I never was founcharitable, faid the, to be out of love with any. I was glad to hear her reply fo merrily: for a fore which fo capitulateth, is half furrendred. Since I had broke theice, I was refolved to profecute my defign ; wherefore in plain English I told her , that I loved her from the first interview, fo ardently , that my constancy should provo

ut for derire not deloifb che iewed ir due cation nfinuwhat I ore; the se. n her (he was ou cann, till ar, faid ie conutmot r; ner g fo inis half was re-11 plain he firt hould

provo

17,

prove the reality of my affection : the defired me coleave that to the test of time; that should the believe me fuddenly before the had made tryal, he should not only loofe the good estimation the hadgained by the prudent and discreet management of her affairs, every one accusing her for too nuch credulity, but thereby it may be involve her offin a Labyrinch of all manner of troubles. Tryfaid I, you shall have : and knowing the maner of courting a widow, a tryal I gave her, nowing that Parleys operate little on a widow, nd there is nothing fooner gains a conquest then resolute affault. This action made her so frmly nine, that I durft not speak of leaving; which then I did at any time, her Soul was ready to eve its ancient habitation to attend on me. ometwo months we spent in all manner of felfleafing delights, till at laft I begun to be tyr'd ich her too frequent invitations ; the more I eneavoured to facisfie her, the further I was from Not only by her, but by others, this experiunt I found, that the oftner I treated them, the ore ragerly and earnestly they defired it. Begnow incapacisated to hold out in this manerlonger, I thought it high time to be gone, but or without fufficient recompence for my fervice. mean romifed her from time to time, waiting an ope out of ortunity when I might become master of her rasure. One day in a frolick, and the more to acourage me to make a speedy consummation of ir loves by marriage, the thew'd me all her wriugs which concerned her estate (by which I and her to be so wealthy a fortune; that I often-

tentimes curft my unhappy flars, that they has thus debarr'd me from the complement of fogres a blifs.) After this, the thews me a trunk where in was contained her cash: then taking me about the neck with fuch fervency of affection, that thought the would have firangled me, & with the repetition of k ffes, the fmiling, askt me, whether thefethings facisfied me or nor. I cold her they did, but they were not to fland in competition with her mott affected felf: with that the gave me the keys of that trunk wherein her money was and in retaliation, I vowed to marry her in four days. In the mean time I fludied how I might be gone, but could not contrive a way, the notine during me to be out of her fight. In fine, I feign ed some indisposition of body, and that I would ride two or three miles for the benefit of the fiel air, and return : with much unwillingness fo consented, Just as I was about to take horse (ha ving furnished my felf with as much mony as could well carry without discovery) she wep bitterly (as having I think a prophetick Spirit lask'd her the cause of her discontent : all be thed in tears, the answered me with a deep figh, shall never see you more : Hard-hearted man! ca you thus leave a woman that loves you thus dear ly, nay, that dotes on you? I made many pro teltations to the contrary; which were not be lieved. Seeing that I could not prevail on he belief, I bad her farewel, fetting fpurs to m borfe, and was out of fight in an instant. I could not but condemn my felf extreamly for this in humane action : but considering that there is no flavery greater then that of the fmock , I foother

ev hat

O great

where

about

that l

hether

er they

etition

ave me

in four

ight b

not in

feign

would

he fref

refs the

Ce (ha

11y as

e wep

Spirit.

all ba

figh,

an! car

us deur

ny pro

on he

s tom

I could

chis in re is no foother

m

my self up in mine own unworthines; passing by a little Ale-house, I called in, and over a pot of Ale I composed these ensuing lines, which I sent to her by a messenger I procured in the house, directed thus:

Deliver these to the fair bands of Mrs. Pulcheria Tickleman, at ber dwelling-bouse, near Redding.

The Concents were thefe, or to this purpofer

Madam, A Poetessyou are, and Prophet too. Thu to divine I'm gone from you Biernally. 'Tis true : D'ye think that I can eat, Though ne're fo choice, always one fort of meat? No faitb ; I'd rather wear a Porters frock ; Then to be fbromded in one womans smock. Jon fay you are with child; Pifh, don't complain, Tu but the product of your fruitful brain : Tare only big with fancy, which may prove Awitty Brat, like Pallas fprung from Jove. And have you then conceiv'd ? How can I chuse But write Encomigms on my fertile Mufe ? Mind not the Father, nor bis Brat, for it Will like the Father live (no doubt) by wit a Let Pegalus be Godfather, the crew Of the nine Mufes, Goffips; fo adien.

Idefired no answer, therefore stayed not till bereturn of the messenger, but rid that night to bidenhead.

Bb

CHAP:

to me an to be a

CHAP. LV.

He comes up to London, fends to a particular friend, whom he could confide in, to come to him, and requests him to compound with his Creditors, which he did in a short time; and in a short time after, he attampts the robbing of an house, but is taken and clapt up in Newgate: The miseries of an imprisoned estate, with the manner of his escape out of that Prison.

He next day I rode towards London, and about I twylight took up my quarters in the Suburbe the day following, I fent for a friend whom I could put considence in, who came immediately upon the reception of my Letter. I communicated to him my intentions, who was very glad to hear of my resolution; yet I would not acquaint him how firong I was, nor by what means procured: 'twi chough that I gave him commission how far forth he should proceed, and no farther, which was half a Crown per pound. He went (after I had given him a list of them all) to every one particularly and treated with them fo cunningly, and the despairing of ever recovering a farthing, condo fcended to his proposals; whereupon he gers then all to fubferibe, and then brings the Paper to we which I exceedingly well liked of. According to the day appointed, he carried them the Money which every one received proportionably, each man respectively giving me his general release from the beginning of the world; they to who I had confest Judgements, filled according to La cheil

iend,

d res

which

ter be

and

mpri-

us of

about

urbs:

could

upon

ed to

ear of

m how

'EWAS

font

as half

given

ularly

d chej

conde

sthen

to me

ling to

Money

y, each

reles

whom

toLat

cheil

their discharges. But when my Creditors a little while afterward, faw me walk the ftreets in fo folendid a garb, some of them were ready to die with anguish; but that which croubled them moft, us my supercilious looks when I met any of them, and my flighting falutations. What I did in this respect was only to have the freedom of valkings the ffreets, without the molefacion of chargable arrefts. I kept fuch deboiftcompany, that the remaing part of my money arew low, and in a very short time after was all fent. All my drunken Companions failed me, and thaving nothing left me but my clouths, necellity made me to condescend to the enquiry afer the kind-natured Gentlewoman my Wife: bernearest relations could not give me any account of her, giving her over for loft. I wandred up and down, imploying all the powers of my mend invention, in the fearch of what might conduce to supply my present necessities. While I on thus hammering out some new defign on the Anvil of experience, I bethought my felf where probably I might find my Wife: First, I went to Recliff high-way, and made enquiry of Dammati, keithe Metrapolitan Bawd of those parts, for Genelewoman of fuch a complexion, flature, and age, ('twas but a folly to mention her name, for those that follow that trade change their himes as often as they do their places of abode) but that care-toad of fielh could give me no informin, neither was it polible for me to have hid to hear it, the fo flunk of Strong-waters, honger then that Cas Bahat never contained any lingelfe: I went dewn all along to the Crofs, in B b 2

my way I faw many Whores standing at the doors, giving me invitation; but being poor the could not afford the charge of Fucm, fo that their faces looke much like a piece of rumpled Parch ment, and by their continual traffick with Se mens Breeches, I could not come near them, the fmelt fo ftrongly of Tarpawlin and ftinking Co yet fill no tidings of her I fought for From hene I went to Fleet-yard, but there they were fo daws ed or plaistred with paint, & botcht with patche that had I feen her there, it was impossible for to have known ber. Away I went to Luteners-lan Sodom, and Dog and Bitch-yard; but the Pox, feemed, had not yet fitted her for those place From hence I went to Wberftons-Park, where faw my Mad-dame flanding at the door : her fi quent trading, and those many shots she hade ceived between wind and water in the fervio had so altered her countenance, and dispropor oned her body, that I knew not whether this Fi gate was English or Flewish built : but at last, ha ing whence the was, I boarded her, and madel lawful prize : miltake me nor, I rummag'd not her Hold, fearing the was a Fire-thip. The figh and knowledge of me, made her fled fome Beb lonish tears, which I took little notice of, kno ing them to be either cultomary to that Sex, the effects of a moift brain. In we went togeth where we had, according to the custom of t house, Pint-black-pots of small Ale for two pend and quarterns of Strong-water half fill'd for pence, with Biskets; which as foon as brough every one broken, though not a bit afterward esten. We must be smoking too, though the Pi

t thei mit be thrown down carelefly, and often broken foon as put to the lips : one of the Plyers being orthe at thei sone down to draw fome more drink, the begged Parch me to conceal my felf for the prefent, and comply alfo with the cheating customs of the house, th See m, the and the would willingly pay all. I had hardly ne Co moukt two whiffs more, but that a fellow came here we were, fwearing dam-me, why do you fray n hene o dawb with this fellow, and leave me thus, you unconatche ant Quean? have I fpent my estate on you, and for m multyou now grow weary of me! and with that ers-las dew his knife, making a proffer to cut her note Pox. of I was fo amazed at what I heard, and fo irriplace need by passion, that I knew not which of them where tobe revenged on first. Sir, said I, I have been her fo onger acquainted with her then you, and may hade My claim a better title and more priviledge; (ervice it as you have affronced me, fo I shall require saгороп faction instantly, nor referring our difference his F be decided by the field, an Umpire that Cowaft, ba is frequently make choice of : fo drawing my adel mile alfo, and feizing on his nofe, which I intened to have divorc'd from his face, I was preventd not for it dropt off into my hand. This accidence he fig e Bab stonish me, and withal being much affrighted knot the fight of his Deaths-head, I durft not meddle Sex, hit him any further, left handling any Member, ogethe would have dropt off in the fame manner: be of t idea blow at me, but instead of friking me, I o pend petted when his fift would have flown from his d for ody into my face : he kickt at me, but that leg rough ing up, the other was incapable of Supporting body, and fo he fell down. The old Bawd hears orwar! the Pi this diffurbance, ran to us as fast as the valt mu bulk

Bb 3

bulk of her body would give her leave, whose pace was not much swifter then a fnail in his full carreer, who having fafted too long, by the confrant repercussion of the Sun-beams on him in a milling morning, forrageth a garden for pillage. From the place whence the flarted, to that when we fouffled, was about fix yards diffance; and from the time of her fetting forward, to the time he came to us (not to belye the woman) was about half an hour, and then too, out of breath, for the hafte the made. Sirrah, firrah, faid the, come you bither to breed quarrels, and abuse civil Gentle men, and it may be build a sconce too ? get you out of my house, you Rascal, or I'll scald you out, By this time the Pimp came to their affiftance, and fo they all conjoyned to shove this poor fellow out of doors : and notwithstanding he had for two or three years frequented the house, yet they neither pitied nor relieved him as a maimed fouldier, the marks whereof were a lufficient reflimony, besides the loss of a Member or two. He ving discharged my reckoning, my Wife appointed me a place where I should meet her. Having now conveniency and privacy of discourse, we wav'd every thing that tended not to my prefent defign, which was the contrivance of some way to live. At last we resolved to take an house and live rogether ; I thought it was as good to be Pimpto my own Wife, by which means the major part of the gain would be mine, as Pimp to another for 12 pence a day and spunging. What we had determined, we foon put in execution : what money the had was laid out in ucenfils belonging to our Trade, as for bedding, linnen, chairs and flool,

whole

is full

e con-

n in a

llage.

where

from

me the

about

or the

ne you

entle-

et you

ou out,

tance,

or fel-

he had

Ce, yet

aimed

ent re-

o. Ha-

ppoin-

le, we

refent

way to

mp to

part of ner for

ad de-

money

to our

floor,

&r.

AcThe Tally-man or Broker, who fells his goods to be paid by 12 d. a pound per week, the truth ofit is, we found of him, but more especially his fervants excellent cuttomers; for they would for a private favour, cut off a (core, fometimes two orthree from the Tally. Our flock being but finall, my Wife was forced to be both Bawd and Whore; but our trade increasing, the goes frequently to the Carriers, where at last the had pickt up a couple of very well-featured Country-girls, and brings them home, entertaining them as fervancs; but the wing as much kindness in them, as if they had been our nearest kindred, purposely to induce them to flay: The Whore, my Wife, intended to heve fold their Maiden-heads at a dear rate; but intruth. Lever lov'd fuch things too well to put them to fale, having them in my poffession. To be fure thereof, I gathered my Rose-buds the first night, left the infectious and contagious breath of some one Suburbicarian should blast them : in four days time afterwards, I fitted them for their occupations, leaving the instructive part thereof to my Wife to feason them withal. I never faw two young Jades understand their trade sooner in my life; for in a Months time they could Cant indifferently, Wheedle most cunningly, Lyc confoundedly, Swear desperately, pick a Pocket dexterioully, Diffemble undifcernably, drink and moak everlastingly, Whore infatiately, and brazen out all their actions impudently. Now did I beginto renew my acquaintance with the Tribe of Rogues, with whom I grew fo intimate, that I was feldom out of their company, either at home wabroad. To relate all the tricks & rogueries we Bb 4

committed in one half year, were an half year work : therefore to be fhort, we were grown fo notorious, and fo generally taken notice of, that at last my Wife, and her two Maids of dishonour were apprehended by the Marihals men, and carried to Bridewel; I my felf narrowly escaping by Hight: The next day I boldly went to visit them; methought their beating of hemp became them excellent well; and in troth I'll fay this for them, there hath not been feen in that place a moreferviceable frong-dockt Crew for many years. Look ing very earnestly upon that Hemp my Wife was besting, a deep fit of Melancholy feized me, proceeding only from my imagination; for I fancied that very Hemp would make that very Rope which bould put a period to my life. The cimeof my vifiting them, fell out on the day of their con rection; understanding fo much, I resolved to for and fee them well lafte, I hop'd : My Wife being manacled, and the whip ready reencircle her Walte; Hold, faid I, and then directing my felf to the Mafters of Bridewel; May it please your Wor thips, this woman now under correction, is the most impudent brazen-fac'd Whore in the whole Town; I have known her a long time, ever fince, and fome fmall time before the undid her Hur band, a very honest man indeed, and had the good report of all his Neighbours; but this confident Slut could not then be content without her Stale lion, whom the maintained by what the purloin from her Husband, and fo uccerly ruined him! fince the hath been the destruction of feveral, fom in their effates, others in their bodily health, an now fo far from being penitent, that the glories nothing years fo nohatat onour, id caring by them; chem them, ore fer-Lookife was e, profanci-Rope e being Celfio r Woris the whole r fince, er Husne good nfident er Stale rloin' d him: al, some ories in

othing

nothing more, then in the relation of how many hebath undone here and hereafter: wherefore beleech your Worthips, for my friend's fake, that good honest man, and for the good of her own fool, add one half-dozen ftripes to the number intended, and let them be laid home. I had no foorer ended my speech, but I vanisht immediates ly. Just as I was out of the gate. I met with two of my roguing friends, whom the Devil had fent, I think, to way-lay me : they were going, it feems, to fee some of their Doxies, that had that day been committed. Being over-joy'd to meet me lo ecidentally, they would needs have me go to the Tavern with them : over a glass of wine we confulted about divers matters, no goodness to be time of fure; the refult whereof was, that I should go to to far set into it unperceived, and abscond my self in order to my opening the door for them about cle has indve a clock. According to the time nominated went, and with much facility conveyed my felf thich I crept, being confident I might lie there courely, till all the houshold were retired to take heir reft. After I had lain about fome two hours in the ground, there came into this room a ferant; I peept out, and by the light of his candle, w that which I thought would have diffracted ne with fear; it was the laying the cloth, by which understood, the Master of the house intended to upthere : fuddenly after, meat was brought in ad served to the Table; then came five or fix ersons, who passing divers complements (all hich needless ceremonies at that time, I wisht

with their inventers were flark naked upon the top of the Snowy Alps) every one took feats, He nor there been at that time fome fmall pratlin children running up and down, and making noife, the affright their appearance had put m in, would have betrayed me; for my knees knoch fo hard one against the other, that they made molfe like a Mill-clack, or the firiking of two man row-bones together: for my life I could not pre vent the Palie from feizing every limb of me My cruel faces had fo ordered it, that there was small Dog in the soom, and a Cat, both dearl beloved by their Miftress; who would be conti nually flinging down fomething other, which the continually quarrelled about, as jealous and en vious upon the distribution of their Mistres fo vours : at length the threw down a small bit; th Cat being somewhat a more nimble fervitor, and diligent waiter than the Dog, took it, & ran will it underneath the Bed; the Dog ran afterthe Co marling, endeavouring to affright her, that h might forfake the purchase : The Dog approach ing near, and too much increnching upon he right, the puts him in minde of his duty, by on fcratch with her Claw, and chaftifeth him for hi raffiness with two orthree more: this so angre him, that he made a furious affault upon Pull who defended her felf as well as the could; but length they closed and grappling each other, the made a most hideous noise. The spot in which they fought this combat, was underneath the Bed upon my buttocks: The fervant that attend ed being over hafty to quell the noise, by parting the fray, fratched up the fire thovel, and throw

underneath the Bed; had it his my note with pon th heedge, asir did my breech with the handle, I ers, Had ould have had it pared off even with my face. pratlin The Cat instantly provides for her fafety by aking light, but the Dog still remained behind grum-ling, and now and then barking with such eagerput m knock els, that he became very offensive to the whole made ompany. W herefore the fervant was commanded o mar odrag him forth, which he he did, beating him. ot pre and throwing him out of doors: in the mean time of me was left in such a condition, as if I had been e was mething my laft. As foon as the door was open'd, dearly te Dog came in underneath the Bed with more e conti my than before: this fecond alarm did my buich the ness(or as they vulgarly fay, made me do my buand en refs fo ines) for running fiercely on me, he had bit me The nofe, but that I fnatch't away my head oit; th from him: but not observing the Bed-post behind. or, and thought I had dashed my brains out against it; an with the Co eralfo having bereft me of my recentive faculy, I did let flie at one and the fame time, which ude fo firange a noise together, that they all rose that h proach nom the table to fee what was the matter: their poles quickly informed them of some part, for the pon he by on com was presently strongly seented, looking unfor hi trneath the bed, they could fee poor fain Perm, angre ting up the Ghoft (as dying persons usually en Puli scute their ordure before their departure) they ; but a lling me forth, and quickly ravived me, they er,the oughly handled me, and then Beat me, till I was n whier me dead again. Being taken in the prefent offence, ath the build expect no other but to be subject to the riattend our of their vengeance; I could make no plea parting ficient to flay their fury , or fatisfie their rethrow

venge: having feecht a Conflable, I was carried before a Justice of Peace, who with little examination on caufed my Mittimus to be drawn, and fo I was fent to Newgate. I was no fooner within, and under lock and key, but feerens confined my legs from firagling, and bracelets were clapt upon my orms. The Rogues came all flocking about me for their Garnish, which I gave them: some of the gentiler fort added more to it, fo that we had abundance of drink. But never did I bear fo confuled din of Dam-me and Sink-me: others finging fo loud (alias roaring) that I thought my felf in Hell, and that thefe were damned fouls that roared through extreamity of torments. I thought none had been fo wicked as my felf, till I came among thefe Helbounds. Not a word came from any of their mouths, but what was feconded with an Oath curfing their bad Stars, and Blafpheming. The Mifery of this of any other prifon is sufficiently represented, if by nothing elfe then want of liberty, that rich inhe sitance of living fouls: as it is the greatest of injoyments, next that imperial Gem of health, foith want thereof next to fickness must needs be of all other the most birrer. Since then to be confine to the confines of the Goal, is to be in part un man'dentomb'd alive, what and how great is the wretchedness that is occasioned not only by want of liberty, but by a continual dread of shameful death The terror of this place fullo torture is to exafperated by the imagination of poble mind, that Hell it felf cannot contain more exquifite woes and pains, a continuant whereof were fufficient to punish all offences, the Law difpenced with that debt due to Juftie the life of the offender. Your companions at non

none but licentious wretches, fouls which daily ied befurround you with their loathlome persons overumatiforead with scabs audlice. Here fighing is our air, Was our comfort coldness, our food despair, our musick id unming of chains, our recreation the deftruction of y legs semin; laftly, our expectation death and damnaon my ionaThe keeper with the grim afpect of his ftern me for countenance makes us tremble, with fear of a e genme marryrdom, while the infulting raskal on abunhe tiptoes of his pride need not skrew his ill-fafuleda foured face to a frown, for he knows not how to fo loud look otherwise ; which so dejects the spirits of we U, and corimprisoned flaves, that the contricion of our rough oks feems to implore his smiles, whose fliney d been han having renounced remorfe, cafts a defiance e Hellnour fad and pitious faces. I might infilt much ouths. unher, but that I am halfning to gev out of the g their mierable and foul-exeruciating prison. One day this or ther I had exonerated nature, I chanced to view , if by hefeat, and found that it was no difficult mate inbe miogo down the vault by the help of a Rope A of inmily friend coming to fee me, I told him what I fothe id observed, and what I wanted fome three e of all ysbefore the Seffions, he brought me Rope es nfine migh to have hanged us all Having a respect unart un news more, which I honoured for their admirais the legood parts, I informed them of what I my y by mded; which presently we put in execution. ead o in I went down, but I could have wished my fullo dup again; for I was up to the neck; and knew on of but I might be deeper, but to my great comontail thound to the contrary: the reft descended afnuanc me, with the like good fuccels. Having gotten ices, i to an house, in which we could put considence, ultice equickly freed our felves from our Iron tackle. ons at non CHAP.

CHAP. LVI.

He and bis two Comrades (which he had delivered disguise themselves, and having been old experienced Gamesters, they taught him all the tricks of Cards, by which they usually cheated their Cullin or Mouths, and also how to nap, palm, or top a Dy With all things thereunto belonging.

TTE had places enough to fend to for chang V of apparel, as rich as we pleased, or as be gerly again on the contrary, according as our d fign required. Having layen in Lavender abou a fortnight in this house, not only to sweeten w but that the rumour of our elcape, and fearch fe us might be over, we got our felves change of bits : Then did we all confule with our Lookin glaffes for the change of our faces, not fufferi our own judgements to pass, without the appro bation of the reft. In the first place I got me a con black Perriwig (my own hair being flaxen) and small false beard suitable, with whiskers in the Spanish fashion : It was no great trouble to be my eye-brows every morning; then clapping patch on my left eye, stealing out of the room while my Companions were busied about the fan thing, not minding me, and coming in again po fently, my appearance did put them all into st ry firange confusion. I changed my voice, asked them what they were doing; and speak to them in a tone they were not acquainted with their chops mov'd incessantly, but the Devil

torred

experi

ricks

Cullie

p a Dy

chang

as be

our de

eten u

arch fo

e of he

ufferi

eappro

c a cos

) and

in th

pping

C 100

hefar

ain po

peaki

ed with

Devil

od I could understand; they had got a palie their jaws by their sudden surprizal: To have Merred the feveral Mankey-faces, and Baboondures, could not but extract laughter from the meet Cynick. Why don't you answer me, and rquickly, ye fneaking dumb Rascals? Lookmost piteously one upon the other, expeding should fpeak firft, at laft faid one, We mean herm, we are only preparing some things for Mek, which shortly will be presented to the Ciuns, and we are persons therein concerned. I ald not hold longer, but burft forth into an relive laughter, by which they understood their fake, not without theme enough to think that supprehension of danger so flightly grounded, ld fo cerrifie them, being fruck dumb, and not dead with a pannick fear. To be brief, we my well liked the manner of our Metamorphoand having borrowed fome money as the neary tools of our intended Trade, we adventulabroad. The first Mouth we picke up was in ling-walk by Christ-Church upon the account wager : there came towards us a young man, by his garb feemed to be a Merchants man takerwards proved fo, and his Casheer) I stept olim, and faid, Sir, if it may not be too troubleneto you, I befeech you resolve me one questi-: This Gencleman bath laid an Angel with and referr'd the decision thereof to the next came this way, whether this next adjacent spital be S. Themas's, or S. Bertholomen's. Said eyong man, I can affure you it is S. Burthelomens. by then friend (laid I) you have loft. Sir, will you pleased (if it may not be any great hindrance

EG

to your present affairs) accompany as to the ne Tavern, and participate of the lofings ? for I feer to pocket it. He condescended, and so we went to gether : we discovered not any thing till the fire pint, and then my friend, as by chance found pair of Cards in a corner of the window, which h himself had layed there before. Here is a paire Cards (faid he) come, to pass away the time, de us play for a pint or fo; fo I really took up m friend, Putt was the game; I won of him two three pints, and ever and anon I would drink ! the stranger, fothat now he began to be warm's and formed to take delight in our play, looking over my hand, and sometimes prompting me t fee him when he did put to me. At last my frien played the High Game, as the term of Art render it; that is, he gave me two Trays and an Ac and referved for himfelf two Trays and a Duc My Antagonist puts to me: I presended I kne not what to do, thewed my game to the ftrange that looked over my shoulder: he jogs me on the Elbow; Istill delayed: come Sir (faid my oppo nent) what will you do? I will hold you five poun on these very Cards in my hand. I receiv'd th fecond jog : will you go my halfs Sir, faid 12 H answered me, that he would. But alass, we lost it could be no otherwise. This so animated th ftranger, that he perswaded me to play again and that he would go the movety of every fish Sometimes'twas fo ordered that I won, but in fin Hoft forty pound, my Cully being half. He would now give over, being much perplex'd that h fould thus lofe his Masters money: but that h might forget the condition he was in, we dran

hund some half a dozen healths: So that now I Hought it high time to provoke him again to let down his milk by fome new trick or ftratagem.

Now did we fall to the Preaching of the Parfon. trick on the Cards, which hath deceived the not curious eye, and the warieft of men; with thich we gained from our young Merchant, the

mjor part of his money.

he ner

1 Con

entite

he fixt

ound

hich b

pair

me, le

a upm

two

rink s

varm'e

lookin

g me t y frien

rende

an Ace a Duc I kne Arange e on th у орро e poun iv'd th d 12 H we loft atedth again y flake t in fin e woul that h that h e dran TONG

Laftly, to the intent we might without any furerdelays give him an acquittance for the reft this money, we drew out some other impleents, viz. Dice fire for our purpole, as Highallums, which feldom run any other chance then ur, five, and fix ; Lop-fullums, which run one, no, and three, &c.

By these means we fent him home penniles indheartless, whilest we drank healths to the con-

. TO THE CHAP. LVII.

From bence be goes, by the direction of his Comrade is a new-fashion Bawdy-house; he describes it and relates his own success.

Pon the division we found each mans fig. to amount to 40 % apiece. Being overjoy at our first good fuccels, we refolv'd to retur thanks for our good fortunes in fome priva Meeting-house, where we might have a Sifter affift in the carrying on the work of the day. The Devil in all Societies never wants his Factor, one to follicit his bufiness: For, I had no foon incimated my defires, but presently one of m Rope-brokers gave me information of a place for that purpole, and that the like was not an where to be found. Being prickt on with the d fire of novelty, and to understand the curiofit therein, I went according to my directions fold for company in fuch defigns commonly frustrat expectations. They advised me when I came the door, to pretend I came to enquire out lod ings : At the first, I verily thought my felf abul by these Rogues, or mistaken in the house, wh I faw a Porter standing at the door with his tip fraff: To undeceive my felf, I confidently, y civilly askt him, whether there were any Lod ings to be let there? Yes Sir, (faid he) which ye may view if you will give your felf the trouble walking in. I had no fooner entred the door, b I was met by a grave Matron, who readily unde

ribes i ns fha verjoy retur priva Sifter ay. Th ctor, o foon e of m place not at h the d urioliti nsfolel ruftrat came out lod If abul Ce, who his cip ntly, y y Lod hich yo rouble door, b ly unde

flo

lood (as I conceived) my approach by her fentinels above in the windows. Madam (faid I) I am informed, that here are lodgings to be let. There isto, Sir, (faid the) and with that conducted me into her Parlor (which was gallantly furnished) there to take a ftrider view of me, as to my perfon, but more especially my garb, by which she might partly judge how well lined my pockets were. After the refolution of fome trivial queftions, for discourse lake, the was so well satisfied in me, that the thewed me the way up one pair of hirs, into a very large and fair Dining-room hung with rich Tapiffry, and adorned round with ncellent Pictures, the Effigies of divers Ladies (ul took them to be) renowned and celebrated nell ages, for the fairest and most benutiful of bu Sex. A fervane brought us up, immediately herour entry into that room, a bottle of Sack, whout any order given, as I could perceive; out of which the old Gentlewoman drank to me, aprelling my welcome. For want of other difburle (as I thought) because we were both filent while, for I was contemplating her face, in hich I could then fee fill the goodly ruines of beautiful and handsome countenance; Sir, faid e, s you are a Gentleman, you may have fome howledge in that noble Art of Limning, fince witt excellency it is in thefe our days (and hath em in most ages) much studied by the Gentry this Nation; wherefore, your judgement, Sir, hich of all these Pictures is the best drawn, or wording to the rules of Physiognomy, hath the diferences? Madam, faid I, I thall freely give mmy judgement; which is, This in my opinion, Cc 2 (poin -

36

(pointing at one) for the hath a full large from her archt eye-brows are thick and black, withou any firagling hairs; her eyes are of the fame co lour, and by their intuitive faculty feem to pene trate that which they look on; paffing her cheeks which carry in them an excellent air, and he nofe, which is neither too long nor too fhort, vice her lips, whose plumpness and redness resemble double Cherry; and then for the dimples in he cheeks and chin, I could make them the fubie of an whole days discourse: what might be fai more of this representation I shall wave, within my felf no greater happiness, then to discoun the rest with the real substance, which is not in possible, Sir, if you can have but the faith to be lieve your own eyes; and fo instantly thereupo withdrew her felf, leaving me amazed at what had already feen, my heart the mean time bei ing an alarm to my passions, to be all in reading at the approach of this Celeftial Creature. Her ing a rushing of Silks, I drew my eyes off the P Aure, and looking towards the door, there Il enter an Augel; for I could not believe the could be so much perfection in any one more with profound reverence I stood at a distance, a miring, or rather adoring her person, till the for lingly and familiarly defired me to fit down. B ing come to my felf, I could talk to her; and half an hour, confidence had repossest her ancie feat in me. It will not only take up too much tin but also offend the ears of the modest Reader, be to infere what discourses we had; therefore wave them, and come to the conclusion. Sir, fa the, I question not but that you are acquaint

front withou ame co to rene cheeks and he ort, viet emble es in he e Subje t be fai within lifcour not in h to be ereupo t what me beat readine re. Heal f the P ere I fa ve the morta ance, i the for wn. B and i

with the customs of the House. I protested to her, Inas altogether ignorant. Why, you know that you may call for what Wine you pleafe, not exmeding four Bortles; and if you pleafe to eat, rou thall have fome choice bit fuitable to the feafon, &c. if you flay not all night, your expence. hall be but forty thillings, and you that have to bor, the enjoyment of a Mistress besides: but if you flay all night, then thus must you do (and withthat drew forth ten pieces of Gold) whether you fancy me or any elfe, that matters not, you must deposit before you go to bed ten pound, layme it underneath your own head, and for every lis, &c. take a piece back again, and if you draw this manner all your own flake, you may next day be difinift with a great deal of applaule, withour expending a penny, but what, you hall epleased to distribute voluntarily among the strants. I was stack mad to be at it, and so imutient, that I presently told out ten pieces. Teling my money the next morning, I found I had ight pound of my ten, but I deserved to have by money trebled : however, for the prefent, I hought torty shillings was never better spent, nor usbanded with to much recreation and delight. wher I understood what manner of cattel they erethat frequenced that house, though proftitues and free-boorers, yet fuch as scorned a piece rancie of Country-dirt: some whereof, were persons of uch tim to mean quality, which came thither to satisfie ader, he what was impossible to do) their insatiate lusts, erefore indtheresore enacted that Law or Custom of de-Sir, le politing ten pieces, meerly to incite such who quaint ere confident of themselves to make trial of Cc 3 their

their skill for the lucre of gain; and to the intent that it might nor be discovered, either by their Husbands, or fuch relations or friends that had received caules of jesloufie, they had their peeping-holes, where they might plainly and fully fee fuch who came upon the like accounts. Gentleman was unknown to that Gentlewoman whose Picture he elected to bear him company that night, the with much freedom would appear, and tender her felf as the subject of his pleasure; otherwise abscond her felf. It so, and the Gentleman press hard for a fight of her the Picture represented, why then Madam Bawd finds fome excuse or other, as that Picture the bought cafually at fecond-hand as the past through Longlane, or that it was the gift of fome friend of hers: with many other fictions, meerly to make him defift from the pursuance of his defires. Being very much pleased in the satisfaction of my fancy, I took my leave, not without some acknowledgement thereof, in thefe confequent lines.

What is a Bawdy-house? I fain would know:
It is a thing appears so by the show.
Is that a Brothel, or an house of State,
Where Tip-staff Porters do attend the gate?
This was a stately house, and yet was such;
In stately houses Ladies take a touch.
It must be so, th' have little else to do,
Then study how to answer those that woo.
Such pamper'd sless must yield, and sew gain-says.
Their own lusts motions, but with formal nays;
Rather then want that satisfaction, most
Stick, not to purchase it, though as the cost

intent their at had peepilly fee If the woman. mpany ppear, cafure; Gen-Piaure fome the ca-Longf hers: im deg very

ncy, I

ledge-

Ofbealth and wealth; delighting thus in fence, They never think too much the recompense. Why should they then fond fouls rail at an Whore, Since they them felves are on that very fcore? And damn all Brothels too to Hell ; but flay" What boufe is not a Brothel-house, I pray? Many I've feen, with this none can compare ; Anem Exchange, where Ladies fell their Ware To none ; they form thereon to fet a price, But leave it folely to the Chapmans choice : Here by a female Council 't was judg'd fit, Hethat reaps pleasure bere, must pay for it; Not with bis purfe, fo much as brawny back, Solely affecting fueb who holds them tack: And to provoke men on, no want of Wine; Nay, all delights do bere in one combine To raife mens fancy, that he may do o're That thing be did but even then before. Her rofie dimpled checks, vermilion tips, Did blush to fee ber every thighs and hips : Herround fofe belly swell'd with pride, for to! Like a small Hill'twas overspread with snow; Let but a warm band touch it, and it will Its moisture into pearly drops distil. We kist and parted, I sigh'd, she did sob; She for ber lufty Lad, I for my Mob.

e-fays

Ce 4

CHAP.

CHAP. LVHI.

He finds out bis two Comerades (she Gamesters) and after some confultation had, shey resolved to ress sum the sheir quondam trade of Padding; are taked and committed to Newgate.

Rom this house of pleasure, (where I multin geniously confess I never received more for fo little expence) I went in fearch of my two Gamesters, whom casually I met : The next To vern was our Council-chamber, where Winewa the dicator. We there unanimously concluded, i was a thing beneath us to pick up here and then Crowns or Angels, but refolved on Have stall knowing that a five hours adventure might make us possessors of 5001. With this resolution w went and bought us horfes, with all things requi fice for our incended expedition : being all read and well prepared, we took our leaves of Landon for a while; we had not sid above fitteen miles but we baited ; the Hoffler knowing me, and wha defigns I had formerly been upor, and imagining I was fleering the fame course, whit pered me in the ear, that he had a defire to fpeak with me inftant ly : taking my opportunity, under the precenced looking to my horse, he informed me, that then were three within drinking, that on the next morning would travel such a Road, and this they had a great charge with them. I thank him, bidding him come to my chamber at night where I would discourse farther with him. Then

hors'd

fourt drinking-bout, with promiles to him of mard if we prospered, we berook our felves to: mireft: in the morning very early we called for urhorfes, and rid in that very Road chrough ers)and which those three Travellers were to pale, where to real replanted our felves very conveniently : " bont" re takes here hours after, we could difcern themaca die hace; by that time we had made our felves readythey were at hand: juft arche bortom of a mult in fmil hill we bid them fland ; they askt us to what ore for my two intent: We told them, that we were younger inewas lorrow fome of them. With that they all in on uded, infint drew their (words; being not improvided; nd there with Pocket-piftols, we fired at them, and they ae scall minat us : we were all ar level-coyl, and very entrement make quily matche; the fecond thor killed my horle, tion wound a fourth bereaved my Confort of hies the s require third Rogue ran away : being in a laby thirt of Il read perplexity, I thought it the best way to sel my life London it as dear a rate as I could (knowing very well, miles that if I were taken I should be hanged.) I sought nd what with my fword as long as I could frand upon my agining less, wounding both them and their horfes ; but ie in the that one unhappily ran me through the fwordinstant hand, and thereupon I was difarmed. I was carrenceo ned by them before the next Justice of Peace, at then whom they enquired out, and by a Mittimus was ne next committed. I could not now expect any thing d that bur death : but the next news I heard was, that I thanks milt be removed to Newgate, there being other night, things to be alleadged to my charge. I was moun-

mult be removed to Newgate, there being other

ted again, in order to my removal, but very ill

. Then

hd

hors'd, being bound thereunto and pinnion'd, My greatest grief (when I came into London-streets) was to hear the various discants of the good women on me systeme saying, What a pity it is such an handsome young man should come to the gallows so soon? Others judged I had deserved it, otherwise I should not have rid to Town in that posture pinnion'd, and so attended with a guard. As soon as the Keeper saw me, leaping for joy, O Sir, are you come again? we will take care that you shall not be any more annoyed with smells proceeding from the Vault; and so without more ado, laid as much iron on me, as there is in some Smiths shops, and confined me close Prisoner to the Dungeon.

Which made me surfe those alls the Fates have done, To cause a setting ere a rising Sun: But since my doom is now decreed by Fate, I must indure, repentance is too late.

f denerally Tracelled of the igody) from the sylvent of the configuration of the configuratio

EAT . . W Dong to Dagger

the cherce out was and and I waken

terito generales de la companie de l

and transmission to demand the

bus no o imposym

CHAP. LIX.

Hemuch condemns the follies of his past actions, and intoken of his unfeigned repentance, gives some general instructions to his Country-men, first how to know Padders on the Road, by infallable signs; with other remarques worthy the observation of any Traveller, laid down in some consequent Chapters.

DEing in this terrestrial Hell, (where darkness, D horror and despair surrounded me)my contience started out of her dead fleep, and prefentdemanded of mea fevereaccount of what I had one.My guilt was fuch, I had not a word to fpeak for my felf, but wished my production (as my adions were) inhumane. What did not then the apprehension of an approaching and unavoidable death, (uggest to my thoughts ! to have only dyd (though with the most exquisite, terrifying, and foul-excruciating tortures) was not a thing thespirit of man should firink at; but the confiteration of an eternal punishment hereafter, justly inflicted on fuch who have offended an infinite God, absolutely distracted me: So that methoughts, I already heard the howls and hollow grones of damned Souls, which add to the weight of their everlatting milery. Having fomewhat appealed my enraged conscience, by a faithful promise and constant resolution to lead a new life, if I should escape the danger of the Law, I determined with my felf, to thew the first Fruies

ve done,

nion'd. Areets)

is fuch

ved it.

in that

guard.

for joy,

are that

t mells

n fome

oner to

CHAP

of my reformation, by publishing something to the world, that might ferve as a guide for Travellers, how they might pals in fafety or their way. To that purpole I acquainted m Keeper with my good intentions; but that being no particular profit to him, he valued not the publick, and therefore rejected my good motion on, till I greas'd his fift, and then I had the se commodation of a Candle, Pen, Ink and Pa per, &c. The uncertainty of their active, varie ous difeafes, non-conftancy of refidence, & chin geable names, makes me incapable to do what I would : Therefore I will do what I can (ac cording to my small experience, occasioned by my no long continuance among them. Riding on the Road (if you have company) it may be two or three shall overtake you and feem to be much afraid of you ; they will pretend to be even now fee upon by half dozen four fellows, but that they did bes the Rogues, forcing them to fly for fafety : and this faion they use to seal with basket-hill oaths: thus by your answers they will find whether you dare fight; if not, they will wan an opportunity to act their roquery on you which having done, as a reward for what un willingly you have left them, they will preten to give you a word shall protect you better that your fword, from any injury hall be done yo upon the like account : but this is nothing ell than a meer cheat, and no fecuring chasm; for we valued not words, when our wants werei pursuit of Monies. Not but that we used som formal words among our felves, when ready to Seize

mething

uide for

afery or

nted my

at being not the d motid the ac-

and Pa-

& chan-

do what

ing elli

un; for

werei d Com

eady to Cei ze

leze a prize; and observing other company, either before or behind, to defilt a while, by which weknew what we had to do, and the ignorant Tavellers fufpected no wrong.

CHAP. LX.

re, vari- Weat is to be taken heed unto, before the Traveller begins bis Fourney.

can (ac) 10ft respected Country-men, and more especationed VI cially you, who frequently pass the Road, them. the most part of my notorious wicked life having mpany) been confumed in all manner of cheats and deke you buckery, and that in part of late maintained by
hey will pobling: seeing now the wretchedness of that
y half a fourse of life, and being sensible of the injury I
id best have done my Country, I looked upon my telt as
ty: and bound to satisfie the debt I owe to you, to the utket-hild termost of my power, which reacheth to an act not
ill find more satisfactory, than good advice how to avoid
will will will those dangers which too many of late days have
on your fillen into. Since Dammee Plumes of Feathers on you fallen into, fince Dammee Plumes of Feathers that un come in fashion. First then, if you carry a charge pretent about you, make it not known to any, and conceal shout you, make it not known to any, and conceal one you for it is a cultom no less common than indiscrees and foolish, among some fort of persons, to blaze abroad among their reputed friends, the time of their intended journey, and vaingloriously make them acquainted with what considerable sums they should carry with them; by which means

the Son hath oftentimes betrayed the Fatherin one friend another, by informing or complotin with fome of the Padding fociety ; the discovere tharing (for giving notice of the prize) one quant or more of the gain he betrays, when but forth foolish humour they had not been way-lay'd. A gain, have a special care, both of the Hoffler Chamberlain and Hoft himfelf : the two fifth Thief is fure to bribe; and the laft, in expediti on of a share with them (as it is fo ordered) or i hopes that the major part of what they ger hi be profulely spent in his house, gives them item where the booty lies, Especially be sure on the road to affociate with none but fuch as you find inclined rather to leave your company then kee it; for they are very fuspicious persons, and often times prove dangerous, that press into your focie ty, and are very inquificive to know whither yo intend, fpinning out the time with many imper tinent questions. But if you would know whether the strangers intentions be honestly inclined take occasion to make some stay; observe you in the mean time their motion : for if they make halt, or alight, fo that you may overtake then follow at a diffance; but if their pace be fo for that you needs must overtake them, look abou you, and provide for your fafery, for there is me furer symptom of an Highway-man than such purposed delays. The other usual marks of such Maths be thefe; they commonly throw a great Leaguer-cloak over their shouldiers, covering their face, or elfe they have visibly difguifed their faces in some manner or other. Now of latether finde very useful a Vizard in every respect (but

ther an plottin iscovere e quante it forth ay'd. I Hoffler o fiftth x pedati ed) or i ger hal em item re on th ou find hen kee d often ur focie ther you y imper whether nclined e you if make te them fo for k abou ere is no an fuch of fuci a great overing ed their atether

& (but

forthe largeness) like the a-la-mode Vizard-masks much worn by Gentlewomen, who endervour o conceal the thame of their wanton actions by Monding their faces. If you meet with any who here none of these things, as soon as they come fomewhat near you, fix your eye full in their face: fthey turn their heads from you, keep your difince, and ride from them with what expedition you can; but being furprized by any you know, be very careful that you discover it not tothem; for hele Desperado's never think themselves secure, All they have prevented your giving intelligence, by cutting a funder the thread of your life. Obferve thether their beards and hair of their head agree in a colour, and are not counterfeit: and be fure beware of him that rides in a Mountier-caps and of fuch as whifper oft; or of any one fingle person that intrudes into your company; for that sone way they have to enfnare the Traveller:he will tell you a great many merry and facetious fories, meerly to ingraticate himself with you? which having obtained, he shews himself more han ordinary civil, and so fearful of any thing hat may prejudice his new acquaintance, that he to fooner espies two riding toward them, but he sparently trembles, and will presently question his new friends, what charge they have about them: if little, the best way were to yelld to these opproaching perfons, if Thieves, rather than haand a life; but if it be any thing confiderable, he will preferrly vow to be true to them, and rather than they should come to any danger or lois, he sill fight with them as long as he hath breath. These so causely suspected, were partiaps down.

right boneft fellows : but before they have tran led five miles further, 'tis ten to one but they vertake two or three more, one it may be ridie afide with twifts of Hay instead of Boors, it me be with a Fork, Bill, or Goad in his hand, like Country-Boor. It may be your newly-entenai ed treacherous Friend will tell you that he wi make good fport with this Country-Bumpkin, at fo to that purpole ask him fome foolish impen nent question, which the other shall answer as diculoufly; fo spinning out the time till a conv nient place and a fit opportunity ferve; the thall this pretended friend feize one of you him felf, and my Hedge-creeper turn Hector, andle hold on another: and now will it be in vain for you to ftrive, for nothing but money will ranfor you out of their hands.

CHAP. LXI.

Instructions in what manner, at what time, and whe Road is most safe to vide.

There are so many ways to rob the innocent that it behoveth every man to be very circumspect, how, when, and where he rides. If yo have a quantity of money about you, chuse rathe to ride by night then day; for by this means yo are freed from any Horseman or Cutter whatever But this course cannor seal your protection from base sheep-stealing penny-Rogues, the basened and lowness of whose spirits wil stoop for a Noble though they hang for their pains; therefore take

sfor the nobler fort of Rogues, this they believe

whethat are worth the robbing. Bendes they

etrave ed of their long poles, and that they do not t they addenly fart out and lay hold on your bridle. be ridin , it ma undeniable Maxime, that none will ride by id, like ntertain it he wi pkin,an impert ver as n a conv e; the vain fo ranfor

moblig'd to take their Inn betimes, left through istrust they should be apprehended: Moreover, ber hardly dare adveneure in the dark, because bereannot difeern what dangerous defences the filed have, as Piftols, or other private weapons readiness, nor fee their own advantages : and idal, it will be no difficult matter to convey in you him he obscurity of the night, what they have undiff and la mered, into some ditch. Chuse to cravel in by ads for it is a general rule with High-way-men; keep their station on the greatest Roads, the fthe number that pals by, they may feled web they think will prove the richest Booties. Here on as a Corollary, cake notice of a foolish cit on Some when they ride by only place this mmonly fpeaks danger, they will buffle upter and when ther fide by fide, which is the utual overthrow, fluch .. Wherefore take my countel here; when ryou ride, in fear especially, ride sur asunderd innocent cleafe stones throw by so doing hose durft fet very circum, fearing lest this stragling order give es. If yo meleave to escape undoubtedly, and so raise use rathe accountry in their pursuit. folved Anragonist but if by your own regligent overand and the melevelence of forming the pleasured by a substantial grown is eclipsed and clouded by a suddent on noise for prisal, and that you see no how but that you hand alook to this e when alook a cooline, but give them has bed words you day one day on the solution. to ob valitate but to politate on tour beile.

evailed diside HAP. LXdl.

How a man is to behave bimfelf if befet or jura

THen the Rogue bids you fland, look no VV about as if amazed, ochoping for a rescue for this doth but encourage them to the height refolution and expedition : but looking fternly as if fear were a frangeitto you, making you brow the throne of rage and fury draw, and unded downcedly sell them; that though you have be little, yet you would willingly facrifice yourlif mather then lose a penny 5 and add ten more to (if you had sthem) then have your reputation sained with cowardife. This is the readlest and mofficertains ways to favelboth, your money an egedit 5 for they fighting wish a guilty conficient within stid without, against a Country, Lawyen Juffice, if nobly a man refifts (this I know experi mentally) the fouteft, and most undamited, in bigheft fpirit of them all will floop to differentes mante Some i have known; that durit outbri the rosing Gannon to the mouth, yet their con eages bave found an alteration, when on this so count they have mer with a bold and nobly n folved Antagonist: but if by your own negligena and the malevolency of forrune, the pleasured your journey is eclipfed and clouded by a fudde furprifal, and that you fee no hopes but that yo must yield, be not so unwise to strive when it coo late, but give them the best words you can

r fare

ook no

rescue

reighto

fternly

ng you

andun

have b

your lif

nore to

puracion

dieft an

oney sn

Lawyen
wexpen
we

a fudde

when it

and rack your wits to please their ear, most devoutly wishing you had more moneys to supply their present occasions; and so banishing all dekaedness from your looks, deliver some, and to perhaps they will let you pass without further lerch. If they make a second offer, yield freely wit: then it may be they will fift you foundly; never in that rime lay your hand near your money, and seeming fearless, it will be a means to make their suspicion of a greater sum to vanish. This I have known my felfe, that when I have uken fo much as pleased me well, by mens fear There had grounds to think they had more, and fomade me refearch; laying my hand but near the place where they had concealed the reft, fuddenly would they cry out that they were undone, then as yet I had found nothing; but by this their foolish and undiscreet carriage I have found theremainder, which otherwife might have been fecure and fafe from me.

Dd 2

CHAP.

CHAP. LXIII.

Directions, if robbed, bow to follow the Thieves; which way to fet Hue and Cry after them; how to coss, and where to find them.

TF you are robbed, there is no help but to indeavour to surprize the Thieves by a ftrict pursuit: Thereforedet no Remora or delay deter you from obtaining your wish, and fo feize them that fo lately seized you. In the first place, scowse the next Road, nor ftreight before, but either on the right or left-hand; for they know Hue and Crie never cross the passages, but go straight along. I in to doing you miss them, then conclude the are theltred in some Inn which you have past, and therefore you must fet some careful Spies, with Sufficient affiftance near at hand, and be confiden you will fee them come that way, without it least apprehension of fear, or fear of apprehens on. But this observe, that if they light of any con fiderable fum, then do they ride that night to their general Rendezvous in London, which is to fure a thelter for them : but observably take no tice, for here is as eminent an example of the fubrilty, as any ever the Devil enrich'd the knowledge with; For, if you are robbed in the eastern quarter, pursue them not in the dire Road to London with Hue and Cry, for by for other way they are fled; but hafte to the City and in Westminster, Holborn, the Strand and O vent-Garden fearch speedily, for there they are If Northward they light on you, then to South

s; which to couff.

o indeapurfait:

ou from

that fo

er on the

take no of their

surk, the Bankfide, or Lambeth they are gone; indwhen you and any one, feize all with him; forthey are all Companions that are together.

CHAP. LXIV.

Cordial advice, and infallible infructions for the Innkeeper, bom to know Thieves from bis boneft Guests.

WFC the A Ethinks the many tragical examples of Inn-Vikeepers, who have harboured and countend Crie nanced Thieves, were sufficient (I should think) along, l to deter those that survive from doing the like; therefore my advice to them in general is, that past, and their chiefest care be, not to wink at any such life-s, with a destroying actions for hope of gain, lest that sweet confident be imbittered by future trouble and disgrace. hout the That you may know them, observe these Rules: prehense first, they are extraordinary curious about their any constories; they will have them as strangely drest, as night to strangely fed, with Mashes, Bread, Flesh, and mingled provender, and that in an unufual quantitie, ich is to their horses, they will endeavour to palliate their h'd their defign therein, by telling that their tricks and d in the good abilities deferve it: nay, sometimes they he did will boast, that their worthy services will soon by some repay the cost; using the like dark words to that the City effect, which are palpable grounds for suspicion.
and Co his their custom likewise, to ask, Whose horse is they are that? or, What is the owner thereof standing by? to South of what function or qualitie? whither he intends and tarravel? how far, and when? Observe again, Dd 2 that

that their Cloak-bags are for the most part empty, carrying them only but to make a flew. Next. the Chamberlain conducting them to their Chamber, he is presently dismift; but let him hearken, and if they are High-way men, 'tis ten to one but they fall to there what they have purchafed that day; and he shall fee every one taking his dividend, as well as hear the money, if he but narrowly pry into the Chamber. This they never defer, left he which hath the purfe should chest the reft. But above all, for their discovery, make this trials Cause one to knock hastily at the gate, giving him infructions in the mean time that at rends on them, to observe their carriage then, and he shall feethem fart and flare in each other face with gaffly looks, being ftruck with fear and amazement : fpeak fo that they may hear you feemingly to fome or other in the house, asking what Officers those are? what is their bulines or whom do they look for? or the like. If they feem much frighted, bid them fear nor, for none shall fearch where they are, to offer them any in jurie; and that they are as fafe with him, as in well-foreified Caftle. By this means you may pr into their private thoughts and actions fo far, a that you may gather, not only fubitantial ground for more then bare conjectures, but it may be they will confess something too, defiring you concealment and fuccour, and they shall this themselves for everingaged; after this you mil use your own discretion. Then again, you may perceive by their loicering and difregard of time what they expect; for they only bair but to ob cave what purchase they can see pass by; which

empty,

to their

t let him

'tis ten

ave pur-

recaking

if he but

ry never

ald chest

ry, make

the gate,

that at-

ge then,

h other

fear and

ear you

, asking

ulinel

If they

for none

any in

, as in

may pr

o far,

ground

may l

II thi

YOU may

you may

of time

t to ob

which

when

Next.

when they have espied, they will precend imitted dure bufinefs calls them to be gone, and To mount in great halte. Again, when they come to m im to lodge, they commonly come in divided; orin feveral Companies, fruffraeing the Hue and in by their number? befides, if one part beful pited, the other may escape; and when the reidue comes in, they feem as ftrangers one to the wher, enquiring of mine Hoft what their Compasions are, what Countrie-men, whether he knows them? and if they find he hath either jea!ouffe orfuspicion of any of them, they will feign some bufiness that necessitates their speedy departure ? but if you take them for honeft men, as they met by feeming chance in your Kirchin; fo after fome formal civil falurations, and drinking together, they foon become acquainted, and before they part, thew much familiaritie. Thus, as I was farther endeavouring to lay open their devices and deceits, to repair what wrong my Countrie had sustained by me, word was brought me, that I multimmediately appear at the Bar, and there inswer what should be objected against me; and k was but just that I should be now exposed to the law of Justice, fince I had to often rejected and lighted the Law of Mercie. conche of my life,

CHAP, LXV.

He received sentence of Condemnation; he thereupon seriously contemplates Death, and considers Eternity.

A Ppearing at the Sessions, and seeing so many of my Adversaries ready to give in their evidence against me, I concluded my self a lost Dd 4 man;

man ; my very councenance betrayed both my thoughts of guilt and despair. In shore, I reteived Centence of Death to be hanged at Tyburn by the neck till I was dead. I thought thefe fad tidings would have presently deprived me of my life, and to have faved the Hangman a labour. All the way I went back to Newgate, I fancied nothing but Gibbets food in my way, and that I faw no other trades but Cord-winders. Being entred the prifon, I was forthwith put into the Dungeon, laden with fackles: I had not been many hours there, before a charitable Physician of the foul, I mean Minister, came to visit me, who advised me, to repent, fince it was high time; and endeavouring to disburden my conscience, by extracting from me a general ingenious confession of what enormous crimes I had committed. Finding this person to bave no other delign, but maerly for my fouls fake, I diffeded the actions of my whole life, not omitting any thing that might be accounted finful. He was amazed to hear fuch notorious Roguery in one Man, and (o young ; wherefore, before he applied any cordial, he administred his corrolives, and to thorowly fearcht every corner of my heart, that there was nothing hid from him. In the first place, he made me fentible of the wickedness of my life, and that every, nay, the leaft evil action, deferved the loss of eternal and inexpreffible happinels, and instead thereof, torments everlatting and incolerable. It will take up too much time, to give an account of every thing this nious man alleadged for my information, contrition, and confolation : fo effectually and powerfully he delivered his divine Meffage, that the obdurarenes i III in

ch my eccived corner om him. e wickd inexorments e up too the ob-

ratenels

insteness of my heart was able to hold out no inger, but melting into tears, was willing to have by the flintines broken by the hammer of Sacred tidings wit. Finding me in so good a temper, he left me ife, and of odd and my self, for the perfecting of that he way ook he had so hopefully and successfully begun. began to consider what I was, only a statue of the primes of restless passions; a clod of earth, which is the primes of restless passions; a clod of earth, which is the primes of restless passions; a clod of earth, which is the primes of restless passions; a clod of earth, which is the primes of restless passions; a clod of earth, which is the primes of restless passions; a clod of earth, which is the primes of restless passions; a clod of earth, which is the primes of restless passions; a clod of earth, which is the primes of restless passions; a clod of earth, which is the primes of the primes of restless passions; a clod of earth, which is the primes of the s there, source of rheums wash away to nothing; and yet ! I mean ade as great a noise in the world, as if both the estore- lobes (those glorious Twins) had been unwombaring to diffrom that formless Chaos, by the Midwifry of rom me y wit: all my actions were attended with so ormous such success, and so answerable to my desires, as a lhad been one of heavens privy-Counsellors; his sich swelled me up with so much arrogance, ble life, at I spake thunder, lookt lightning, and breath-counted idestruction; and by the eloquence of my own ous Ro-nity, I perswaded my self, that the machinati-ore, be not my brain were able to unhinge the Poles: ared his tit is otherwise decreed, that the Ministers of mike me know I am but a man, and that morle wick- 1000. And having but a short time to live, I least e- sought it very, requisite to think of that which fishortly be the means to convey me either to is or woe; by so doing, I seized on death becontri- ally, than the thought of immortality? and power- putfoneceffary, as the thought of death? Strees h, When he was a young man, be studied to live

58 wel

well; when aged, bow to dye well : but I never pri Biled Argem bene vivendi, and therefore am lo i norant in Arte bene moriendi ; which makes me fearful, that I know not how to be careful of no being found unprepared. Methinks I already be that doleful faying, Ite imparatt in paratum. M fole companions were now despair and fear, fo the King of fear is death; and indeed there is no thing absolutely fearful, but what tends to deat and I am confident, the fear of death is wor than the pains of death : for fear of death kills often, whereas death it felf can do it but one Life would not be troubled with too much can nor death with too much fear, because tearsh tray, and cares diforder those succours which reason would afford to both : and though som fay, he is more forrowful than is necessary, the is forrowful before there is necessity; yet that so cannot be in a good condition, fo long as it fer to think of dying ; but did I not forrow now, juilly fear that meffenger that muft bring meb fore the Tribunal of Heaven, I thould have t little time to wash away fo many black spots, eff cially having nothing but objects of terror a amazement before my eyes; but I never need have feared what I should suffer when dead, if had not deferved it whilft I lived. Life is not like to all men: To fuch a wicked wretch as In the best had been, that I never had been, and next best were to live long; in this condition was ill for me that I was born, worfe for met I must die: for without unfeigned repentances dying life will bring me to a living death; whe asa good man is otherwife minded, he count

ever pra am lo ig kes me f ful of no ady her rum. M fear, fo ere is no to death h is wor th kills but one auch can e tears be urs which ough for Tary, the t that fo as it fen w now, an ing meb d have I Coots,elp terror a ver need dead, if fe is not ch as la en, and ondition for met ntances ich; who e counts

cn

dthe best of his being, for that brings him to efruition of his hope : could death end mifeit should be the greatest happines I would h: but my conscience will not let me lye, for ter the end of my present miseries will be but beginning of worle; yea, fuch as death it felf mot terminarg. Now came into my minde the mideration of Eternity; and with it, I rememed how it was represented by the Ancients, hich very much helpr my prefent Contemplaon; which was thus : A vaft Den full of horror, and about which a Serpent windes it felf, and in ewinding bites it felf by the tail. At the rightindof this Den, flands a young man of a moft mutiful and pleafant countenance, holding in iright-hand a Bow and two Arrows, and in his han Harp. In the entrance fits an old man opofie, and having his eyes very intent on his Taebook, writes according to the dictations of heyoung man flanding by. At the left-hand of is Den, urs a grave Matron gray-headed, and wing her eyes always bufied. At the mouth herefire four fairs ascending by degrees; the first is liron, the fecond of brais, the third of filver, whe last of gold : On these are little children oring up and down, playing, fearless, and inprehensive of falling. The fight of this Emblem Eternity inculcated into my thoughts this inprecation: The Den, which was bottomicis, sified to me the incomprehenfibility of Ecernithe circumferating Serpent, Time; the young an, Nature : on Earth and Hell are her arrows fied; but in Heaven there is the Harp, fulnels joy, and pleasures inexpressible : The old man Hookt upon to be Fate; the grave Matron, Pro vidence; the Stairs, diftinet Times and Ages th Children running up and down the Stairs with out fear of danger, do fignifie foolish Man an Woman, who regardless of their falvation, spor and play with it fo long, till they flipt into Eten nity. So have I been careless of that which should have been my greatest care, though I knew (bu would not know) that the least and lightest tout of death were fufficient, in a moment, cotten flate me from Time to Etermity, Were we all t live a thousand years (whereas the Executioner to put a period to my life in one day longer) should before we had ran half our course, in ou very non-age, apply our felves to repentance an newness of life. Now, now is the time, ever hour, every moment : now one part of an hou (as I am informed, to my great comfort) may of tain pardon here, which all Eternity canno hereafter. Therefore, let this now be my tim (this one day I have left me) to cancel my deb and crespasses against Heaven, which I can new do in Hell-fire, in all the years and times to com hereafter. Let such who have liv'd (as I) in a manner of wickedness, confider what Eternity which may make them return like the penite Prodigal. What then is Eternity? It is a Circ running back into it felf, whose center is ever where, and circumference no where, that is tol infinite : It is an Orb that hath neither beginni nor ending : Or it is a Wheel,

Volvitur & volvetur in omne volubilis evum.

A Wheel that turns, a Wheel that turned ever:

A Wheel that turns, and will leave turning neve

for

Witty Extravagant.

Eternity is like a year, continually wheeling aout, which returns again to the same point on whence it began, and still wheels about aron, Pro Agesith Man an inters after many cornings flow back again, that on, spor hey may always flow. It is a bottomless pit, nto Eter those revolutions are endless. It may be compatich should not a snake bowed back unto it self orbicularly, new (bu olding its tail in its mouth; which in its end test touch thagain begin, and never ceaseth to begin, to trans thitis Eternity! It is a duration always present; we all this one perpetual day, which is not divided into cutioner in which is past, and that which is to come: Or, onger) was an age of ages, never expiring, and never se, in or langing: Or, more properly, it is a beginning trance an entinuing, never ending, always beginning, in ne, ever hich the bleffed always begin a bleffed life, in may obtain and struggling therewith, always begin ay cannot mit to die. As Hell-torments are eternal, so will
e my tim be conscience be perpetually tormented with
my debt tep and horrid despair for the life past: Their
can neve form shall not die. The Poets of old alluded es co come this place notably, in that Fiction or Fable is I) in a flytius, whom Virgil feigneth, that a flying ternity butture every day gnaws and sears his Liver, e penite slich is every night again repaired and made up, is a Circ at every day the Vulcure may have more mater is ever properly upon. What is this Vulcure, but the it is told form I speak of? and what is his Liver, but the beginning onscience always gnawn and tormented? Not my this (as he that preacht my Funeral-Sermon dever: ever have end; because there can be no place

ing neve Ecol

Hookt upon to be Fate; the grave Matron, Pro vidence; the Stairs, diftinet Times and Ages; th Children running up and down the Stairs with out fear of danger, do fignifie foolish Man an Woman, who regardless of their salvation, spor and play with it fo long, till they flipt into Eter nity. So have I been careless of that which should have been my greatest care, though I knew (bu would not know) that the least and lightest touc of death were fufficient, in a moment, to tran flate me from Time to Etermity, Were we all t live a thousand years (whereas the Executioner to put a period to my life in one day longer) w thould before we had ran half our course, in ou very non-age, apply our felves to repentance an newness of life. Now, now is the time, ever hour, every moment : now one part of an hou (as I am informed, to my great comfort) may of tain pardon here, which all Eternity canno hereafter. Therefore, let this now be my tim (this one day I have left me) to cancel my deb and erespasses against Heaven, which I can neve do in Hell-fire, in all the years and times to com hereafter. Let such who have liv'd (as I) in a manner of wickedness, consider what Eternity is which may make them return like the peniter Prodigal. What then is Eternity? It is a Circ running back into it felf, whose center is ever where, and circumference no where, that is toly infinite: It is an Orb that hath neither beginning nor ending: Or it is a Wheel,

Volvitur & volvetur in omne volubilis evum.

A Wheel that turns, a Wheel that turned ever : A Wheel that turns, and will leave turning never n, Pro ges; th

neve Ecen

Bernity is like a year, continually wheeling awhich returns again to the same point whence it began, and still wheels about as with in It is an ever-running Fountain, whither the fan an mers after many rurnings flow back again, that n, sport ymay always flow. It is a bottomless pit, to Eter hole revolutions are endless. It may be compand thou do a snake bowed back unto it self orbicularly, ew (bu alding its tail in its mouth; which in its end it touc thagain begin, and never ceaseth to begin. to trans that is Eternity? It is a duration always present; e all to is one perpetual day, which is not divided into tioner at which is past, and that which is to come: Or, ger) was an age of ages, never expiring, and never in our langing: Or, more properly, it is a beginning nce an intinuing, never ending, always beginning, in a very lich the bleffed always begin a bleffed life, in an hou lich the damned always die, and after all may ob but and struggling therewith, always begin acanno in to die. As Hell-torments are eternal, so will my tim he conscience be perpetually tormented with my debt sep and horrid despair for the life past: Their ny debt tep and horrid despair for the life past: I near in new form shall not die. The Poets of old alluded to come this place notably, in that Fiction or Fable i) in a strius, whom Virgit feigneth, that a slying mity is lature every day gnaws and sears his Liver, penites hich is every night again repaired and made up, a Circ latevery day the Vulture may have more matis ever mo prey upon. What is this Vulture, but the stoley form I speak of? and what is his Liver, but the ginnin inscience always gnawn and tormeuted? Not may this (as he that preacht my Funeral-Sermon and method all the torments of the damned shall ver: wer have end, because there can be no place

for fatisfaction : For although these inexpre ble torments thall continue many millions years; yet shall there not one hour, no, not o minute of respite be granted : Let us then be longer forgetful of our felves, and fo degenes into beafts, but feriously to consider our end, a what shall come after. All men are in the way of ternity, but I am now almost at my journeys en I fit on the Stairs of Eternity, expeding when o Imall thrust thall plunge me into the bortomle pit, where one hours punishment shall be me grievous (as Thomas à Kempis faith)then 100 yes here in the bittereft of torments : There they tortured for infinite millions of ages, & are fof from finding an end, as never to be able to ho for any end. The consideration of thesethin brought me to that pass, as I was content to full any thing in this life, to that I might not fuffer the life to come. Though a King, I thould willing ly and patiently have endured what Andronic did, Emperour of the East; who (as History s lates) being overcome and taken prisoner l Ifact Angelo, had immediately two great chair of iron put about his neck; and being lad with fetters, was brought before Ifaac, who d livered him over to the rage of the multitude, be abused at their pleasure. This rabble being cenft and fimulated on by revenge, some buffet him, fome baftinado'd him, others pulled himb the beard, twitching the hair from his hee dashing out his teeth, dragging him in public through the fireets : the infolence of women fuch, as to fall upon him, leaving the marks their nails in his Imperial face. After all this

heard

nexpre were off his right-hand : thus maimed and illions miled he was thrown into the Dungeon of , not o jeves and Robbers, without either attendance; nen be the least thing necessary to fustain life : Some egenei days being paft, they put out one of his eyes: end, mangled, they put him upon an old rotten way of nt coatshav'd his head, fet him upon a feabbed neysen mel, with his face towards the Tail, put on his wheno da crown of Garlick, made him hold in his orcomi nd the Camels Tail inftend of a Septer, and fo be mo rearried him through the Market-place very ioo ye urely, with great pomp & triumph. Here did the theya of impudent crew, and bale among the people, are fof Tygers, after an inhumane manner fall upon e to ho n, not confidering in the leaft, that not three le thin before he was no less then an Emperonre to full med with a Royal Diadem, whose fromns Cuffer re inevitable death, was honoured, yea, adored willin all men. Their rage and madnets fitted every ndronic with inftruments to execute their revenge : fory s te fruck him on the head with flicks, others Coner d his noftrils wich dirt , others fqueezed t chair inges upon his face fosked in humane and ng lade fial excrements : fome threw froms, others) whod hat him. An impudent woman as he past, came tude ning out with fealding water in her hand, and eing i and it on his head. All thele in dignities which buffete pexercifed upon this poor Emperor, die not himb time their insatiate revenge, but bringing think is hee the Theatre, took him down from the Camel, public hung him up by the heels: yet did he behave felf like a man, by bearing patiently what was men W arks thed upon him, being never heard to cry out all thi pinft the cruelty of his face. All that he was the

heard to fay, was this, which he often repeated Domine miferere, Domine miferere. Thus hangin up, one would have thought their malice houl have ceased; but they spared him not as long he lived; for pulling his Coat from his body they tore him with their nails. One more crue than the reft, ran his Sword through his bowe as he was hanging: Two others, to try who Sword was tharpeft, cut him and gathe him in fe veral places; and fo ended his life miferably, bu was not fuffered to be buried. Oh, that my con dition were as Andronicus, to fuffer all that me can lay upon me, that I might not perith fore ver: I would be concent to be miserable for fort a time, that I may not be miferable to Ecernity. Questiones he could never have ful fered fuch things to confrantly and coursejoully but that he had Eternity in his thoughts; an were our mindes imployed about the fame ful ject, any advertity or affliction we should mor eafily bear. From the time of my condemnation till Munday morning I flept not, neither did eat or drink: then did I hear my paffing-be (having heard the day before my Funeral-Ser mon) every froke methought carried my foul on degree higher, being confident I had made m peace above. Whilft I was in the depth of Medita tion, and my foul breathing out this thort ejacu lation.

hH depoin his , seing in seing

10

Is there no bope now of Relief. In this Extremity ? Mercy e're now bath (av'd a Thief. And may do as much for me.

repeater hangin

e thou

s long

his body

ore crue is bowe

ry who

im in fe

bly, bu

my con

at ma

th for

e for

letos

ave fu

gioully

cs; an

me fub

d mor

nnario er did ing-bel ral-Ser fool on

ade m Medit t ejacu

Behold, a friend came to me that never villed me bring my imprisonment) but now in the time of med brought me a Reprieve: when Hooke thereon wirft, I could not believe my own eyes; I thought I teamt, or that grief had so distracted me, as that imagined things that are not. My friend at length der'd up my doubts; but I shall tell you this for a nth, I knew not whether I were best accept of this If preserving courtesie: For, methought I had so difertled my eternal concerns, as that I had noting else to do but die.

About a fortnight after, I was fent aboard, in orrto my transportation; my sentence of Death be-

g converted into a feven years banishment.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXVI.

Being on Board, he descants on his ensuing misery; ye draws comfort to himself from the sufferings of others. He relateth how he was freed from his intended banishment by a double Shipwrack; the manner thereof he amply declareth.

The Ship that was to transport me lay at Wollidge about the latter end of Angust 1650. I was conveyed aboard a lufty Ship, a Virginia-Merchantman, and was instantly claps under hatches; but knew they would quickly call me alost, if there was any tighting work; as such a thing might easily be since the Sea was no where free from such as would make a prize of what Vessels were too weak to contend with them. Having pen, ink, and paper about me, I busied my thoughts and pen in contriving consolation for my disquieted and disconsolate mind, thus:

Why should not I with patience suffer? some Have kift what brought them to their Martyrdom. Many a Saint hath suffer'd on a Cross; And our good King endur'd three Kingdoms loss. Shall I (jool) then at any cross take grief? Tyburn's the way to beaven for many a Thief. But must I now to Sea? well, 'tis no matter; Fortune now frowns, though beretofore did flatter. Let not my soul despond, since 'tis my hap, Ill scern that Whore, and trust to Thetis lap: I bough

I bough the may foam with anger, and the wind May aggravate ber paffion, I may find Her calm again, and fet me on that fore, Where I may Moar, and put to Sea no more. Neptune may foake bis Trident, and each wave, Or tumbling billow may become my grave. A thundring Canon may pronounce my death, Or a fmall foot bereave me of my breath: All which may throng together in full crowds, To make m'a winding-sheet of tatter'd shrowds, The winds hall fing my requiem, and my knell Shall be a peal of Ordnance, that shall tell My angry fates I'm dead and the Seamuft Intomb without the form of dust to dust. But I hope better things and do believe, My good events will make the furies grieve.

About the beginning of September following, we hail for the Downs. As foon as we had weighed hehor, a thick melancholly cloud encompassed my loughts, and so much fadness seized my spirits. as I had been not so much taking my leave of my early beloved Country, as leaving the world. hough my foul could not forefee the least danger. webe troubled at the apprehention of what flavery 1 resto undergo in my exilment; yet certainly I found his strange anguish and propassion to be ominous. poceeding from forming divine, which is able to middle the Apocrypha of nature, and made my foul hible of some approaching mischief. Having been bout five days at bea, one morning, just as the Sun wan to gild our Hemisphere with his Golden rays, Boatiwain made us al turn out & commanded at Ec 2 hands

fery; ye f others aded baor thereo

Vollidge
I was
rechanted, but I
were was
afily be
s would
to con-

er about

triving onfolate

rdom.

ms loss.

ief. er; flatter

lap: Ibough

hands upon deck: coming aloft, I could not fee a man in whole face there was not written the pale characters of fear and amazement; which were the infallible marks of fome fudden and enfuing danger. Upon my first coming on board, I could discern a great many rednos'd fellows (a drunkards trueff indicium) but the apprehension of present danger had now extinguish all those flaming torches of their faces, without the help of water: The faces indeed of the floutestamongst us, were so altered by this affrightment, that we knew not almost one another; losing our natural complexions, through the extremity of passion. One was at his prayers, that never till then knew whata prayer was; another shedding of bring tears, ro make room for more lalt waters: for my own part, I found my felf not much moved, having lately made my felf acquainted with death. By this time I understood what had past; that is, our Ship had sprung a leak, and was ready to fink: Seeing every man in that pofure, and that there required means, as well as prayers for our preservation; Come (faid I, Gentlemen) lerus not thus cry out, and never lend our affilting hand; let is to the pump, and let every one be imployed in this grand concern. Whereupon we all imanimously fell to work but as it is usual in such exmeans, we were all buffe about doing of nothing; what we began we left imperfect, and fell to another, and fo perfected nothing to our fafety. Some were fent down into the Hold, who quickly returned to us with the fymptoms of death in their countenances; for they all with hefitations and quivering of tongue, with words abruptly or half spoken, fignified to m, har our Ships wound was incurable, that the leak could

a man aractallible on my rmany out the guisht out the itelt ait, that natural a.One whata o make found my felf rstood a leak, nar pos praylemen) Affing be imwe all ch exthing; other, e were drous ces; for ongue, to ms. ne leak

could

could not be fropt, but that we must inevitably pefill within some minutes. These words I received as from a Deaths-head, which I never heard speak before: and truly his very looks would have sufficiently declared what meffage he was about to deliver, viz. mine and immediate destruction. Our mexpressible fars bereaved us of the power of counselling one mother; neither did we know what was best to be done. Our Master commanded our Long-boat to be off out, and withall ordered some eight Guns to be Fid, which methought resembled so many toles of my Paffing-bell, when I was defign'd to pass by St. soulchres Church in a Carr, guarded by fellows whose plages were the true refemblance of the Saracenshad on Snow-hill, for terror, horror, and merciless moreeding; as to all which, these Canibals will outnethat inhumane and bloody Nation. Every man indeavoured to thifr for himself, and I among the reft being loath to be drowned alone) leapt fhort of the but, and fell into the Sea in Charontis Cymba; but messiry then forcing me to use treble diligence to mover my felf, with much difficulty I got into the bat: I was no fooner there, but another leapt down won me, and had like to have beaten the rest of my heath out of my body; which I took kindly enough; for I would have been content to have born them all mmy back, nay, boat and all, fo that I might have haped with life. We were constrained to leave many dour friends behind us, and committed our selves " whicher, driving us we knew not whicher. Now here all our hopes dashed, as well as our selves, by the wes; for we were almost in despair of humane help: twe were left in the wide Ocean, which did not at Ee 2

that time wear a smooth brow, but contending with the wind, swell'd into prodigious mountains, which every moment threatned our overwhelming. How could we expect fafery in an open Shaloup, when fo starely a Castle of wood, which we but now lost, could not defend it felf, nor preferve us from the infolency of the imperious waves? We were many leagues from any shore, having neither Compass to guideus, nor provision to sustain us, being as well Harv'd with cold as hunger. Several bags of Money we had with us; but what good could that do us; where there is no exchange? We could neither eat nordrink ir; neither would it keep us warm, nor purchase our deliverance. Therefore we may justly effeem of money in its own nature, as an impotent creature, a very cripple, imile po us, an ufeles burden. I could not now imagine any thing could preferve us less then a miracle: and as we were all imful creatures, especially my felf, we could not expect that nature should go out ofher ordinary way to fave us. The waves indeed carried us up to Heaven,

Jam jam tatiuros sidera summa putes.

Neptune fure at this time was very gamesome, for the play'd at Tennis with us poor mortals, make ing a wave his Racket to bandie us up and down like Bals: Sometimes we seem'd so proud and lossy theing raised so high, as if we had been about to scale Heaven; which the incensed Deity perceiving seemed again to throw us down headlong to Hell for too much ambition and presumption: yet I could not see, but that the extremity of our condition pleaded

g with which How hen fo v loft. the inmany pals to as well Money do us. ber eat n, noc y juftly potent es burdd pre-Il imful expedi tofave

make d down nd loft, to feath ceiving to Hell I could andicion pleaded

pleaded for us, crying aloud for picy and compassion. I now was filent, committing my felf into the hands of providence; ye verily believing, that the invertion of the old Proverb apperrained to me, that being not born to be hang'd, I fhould be drown'd. Commonly we are not so much mov'd with a clamomus and importunate beggar, who hunts after our Alms with open mouth, and makes Hue and Cry afrer our Charity (as if we had rob'd him who begs of us) swith the filence of impotent and diseased Lazaro's: their fores Tpeak loudest to our affections: Quet vulmera, tot ora; each wound is a gaping mouth firenuoully imploring mercy; the fight whereof, cannot but melt the most obdurate spectator into a charitable compation. This was our cafe, our milery was louder than our prayers, and our deplorable condition, certainly was more prevalent then our imperfed devocions. In this moment of death, when we were without the least expectation of any deliverance the wind chopt about, and drove back one Ship that had over-run us: this was unquestionably Digitus Dei. This Ship made towards us, and we what in uslay. towards it : The wind blew hard, and the infulting Sea, that will not admit of pity, rofe bigh upon us; to that we were forced to lave the water out of the boat with our hars. It was my chance to fit on the weather fide; fain would I have exchanged my place, but fuch complements are ufcles in a fform; forliar I was confirmined to endure patiently the indignation of my raging enemy. Bucnow began an other dispair ; for with all our endeavours we could not reach the Ship, nor the us, although the hung on the Leeto retard her course. Thus our pregnant hopes brought

brought forthnothing but wind and water (for the Ship rode on furioutly before the wind, and we came after in purfait of he as flowly as if an bedghog had been running with a Ruce-horfe;) fo that we which before flattered our felves with an affurance of fafety? were as much confounded with a certainty of periffing. In my opinion it is better to have no hopes ar all, than be disappointed in them : doubtless it diciredouble the punishment of Tantalus, to touch what he could not rafte. That Mariner, who feeing a fatal necessity for ir, is contented to die in a tempel. would be exceedingly troubled to perifh in a Haven, In Portu perire. In this very condition were we, having a Ship near us, but could not board her for fres of weather; fo that ruine attended us, though all the while we took fafery in the face. Now did it grow dark, whereby we could not see which way to row: though this was an evil in its own nature, yet accidentally it became our benefit: for not feeing our danger, we understood it not; but redoubling our thrength, we brake through the waves, and by the affiltance of a light, which was in the Ship, we directed our conferraly; and now did we find we were very neer heri As foon as we toucht her on the Lee-fide, the Sea-meny with the rest in the boat, being more dexterous in the art of climbing than my felf, never regarding their willd Brifoner, (whom they ought to have taken charge of) got all up into the Ship in a moment, leaving me alone in the boat. By good hap they threw me out a Rope, which once had like to have deprived me of my life butiwas now the preferver, which I held fast, to keep the boat from flaving off. Our boat was halffull of water, and the waves dasht

(for the and we an hedgo that we irance of tainty of no hopes abeleis it to touch feeing a empel. Haven. we, hariftres all the ic grow : wor et acc. urdang our by the directe were e-fide, more never ght to pina d hap ke to referlving vaves

dasht

daint it to violently against the Ship-fide that every fich ftroke ftruck me down, so that I had like to have been drowned (and did much fear it) in that epitome of the Sea. It would have vexed a man in my condition, to escape by swimming over a large Kiver, and mming afhore, to be drowned in a mash-bowl. At last with much difficulty I got aboard too. The Mafter. Merchants, &c. having fav'd their lives (even miraaloufly) one would have thought they should not have been so pensive as they were for the loss of their goods. Those which lost much, took it very heavily; mole which loft less, their affliction was greater, having loft all: I was the most glad, joy riding in triumph in my chearful countenance, having loft nothing, neither could I anything, but my life. Having escapt so miraculously, it was unchristian-like to murmur at any los; and as ridiculous, as if a main being restored to life, should complain that his winding-sheet had sustained some damage by lying in the grave. The Ship wherein we were, was bound for the Canaries, the winde blowing very fair for that coast. The second night after our deliverance, about ten a clock having fet our Watch, we laid our felves down to reft, with the thoughts of much fafery and fecurity , but it was otherwise decreed; for about one a clock we were forced to use all hands aloft, a most terrible storm beginning to arise, and the wind blew to furiously, that before morning we lost our Bow-sprigand Mizon: we durst not bear the least sayl, but let the Ship drive whither the winde and waves pleased; and before the next night, we could hor indure our remaining Masts standing, but were necessitated to cut them by the board. Thus we were tumbled

sumbled up and down for four dayes, and as many nights, contending with the waves in a Pitcht-battel not knowing where we were, till our Ship fruck fo violently against a Rock, that the horrid noise thereof would have even made a dead man fartle; to which, add the hideous cries of the Sea-men, bearing a part with the whiftling windes & roaring Sea; all which together, feemed to me to be the trueft Representation of the Day of Judgement. The Ship flick fast so long between two Rocks, as that we had time enough, all of us, to leap out; the only means left us for our fafery. We all got upon a Rock, and the Morning-star having drawn the Curtain of the night, we found that we were a very little diffance from the shore; getting thereon, and ranging to and fro, we at last espied a small house, the fight whereof made us direct our foot-steps thither, steering our course folely by the compass of our eyes: being come to the house, the Master thereof stood at the door; we addrest our selves to him in English, but his replicarions were in Spanish, wich we understood not : wherefore I spake to him in Latine, in which language he answered me, Tam compte, tam prompte, both quaindy and readily. In that tongue I made a thift to tell him the fad Illiades of our misfortungs. This noble Spaniard understood it better by our looks, than my relations; which made fuch a deep impression in his foul, that his gravity could not forbear the fliedding of some few tears, so that one would have thought he fuffered Shipwrack as well as we. He defired us to come into his house, & refresh our selves : what little meat he had, flew'd in a horse-load of herbs, with fome pottage onely feafoned by a piece of Bacon,

and artheliter years and the real and the same

overhoushed fides, vindadesexally to dear, knowled

and all congress to the till it for minusion was and in the very rule be frame A diedebol are

him and spent that the male vand

ive or lot of the gave, with the control farer.

as many acon, that had ferv'd for that purpose at least a dobt-battel. ten times, he ordered to be fer before us; being no fruck fo vaves sparing of his wine, better than any I ever yet le theremild tafte in Taverns; this good man being not acrtle : to quainted with dashings, dulcifrings, &c. Seeing us eat an, bearheartily, he caused another dish to be provided, ring Sea; which was compoled of fuch variety of creatures. he trueft that I thought he had ferved us in as a Mefs, the first he Ship Chapter of Genefis : This Olla-podridta was to cookt. we had har the distinction of each creature was fouc'd out of y means our knowledge. Having fatisfied our hungry ftoock, and mache, he dismist all excepting my felf, defiring me n of the to accept of what kindness he could do me, for he diftance confest he took much pleasure in my society and to and discourse. I was very well contented to entertain his whereof proffer: in some sew dayes he rold me he was to go ing our to Sea, being Caprain of a Veffel that lay in Perinag come lime, a small sea-faring Town near she place of our door : Shipwrack; and asking me whether I would go s repliwith him to the Indies (whither he was bound,) I d not : readily confented, and in fome few dayes after we h landid fait from thence, to perfect our intended te, both Voyage at lang the water hand to be of the thist to Builties has Slotted and an orally loverous ! nis noterion a tradition of coal-thought in they discharged s,than b and Millik vests deliver one regue some brO. et a lion in or meaning and solved a research research of the company fliedswarfing being to men nat entre and motor CHAP. 1 have

le de-

lves :

oad of

ece of

acon,

CHAP. LXVII.

From Perimbana, a small maritine Town on the Spanish coast, be sets sail with Captain Ferdinando Velasquez bound to the East-Indies; but by the way meets with three Turkish Galleys, and by them is taken, miserally abused, and imprisoned.

A N hour before day we left the Port, and failed Lalong the coast before the winde stabout noon we discerned three vessels, whereupon we gave them chase: in less than two hours we got up to them, and then we could eafily perceive that they were Turkish Galleys; whereof we were no fooner afferred, but we betook our felves to flight, making to Land with all speed possible, to avoid the danger that inevitably threatned us. The Turks understanding our delign, presently hoisted up all their sails, and having the wind favourable, bore up to us fo close, and getting within a small Faulcon-shor of us, they discharged their Ordnance on us, wherewith they killed eight of our men, and wounded as many more; and so battered our Ship beside, that we were forc'd to throw a great quantity of our lading over-board. The Turks in the mean while loft no time, but grappled us; we on the other fide, who were able to fight, knowing that on our valour & undaunted courage depended our lives, or loss of liberty, with perpetual flavery, resolved to fight it out. With this determination we boarded their Admiral, doing very eminent execution:

he Spanando be way bem is

failed noon them n, and urkish , but with itably fign g the cring irged ht of tter-S WO Turks ; we ving ided ery,

on;

tion; but being over-powred with numbers, we were so overprest and wearied, that we delisted from making any further refistance : For, of 35 men we had at first, we only had remaining ten, whereof two died the next day, whom the Turks caused to be cut in pieces or quarters, which they hung at the end of their Main-yard for a fign of Victory. Being taken, we were carried by them to a Town called Mecaa, and received by the Governor and Inhabitants, who expected and waited the coming of these Pirates. In the company was likewise one of the chiefest Sacerdotal dignity; and because he had been a little before in Pilgrimage at the Temple of their Prophet Mahomet in Meca, he was honoured and esteemed by all the people as a very holy man. This Mahometan Impostor rid in a triumphant Chariot up & down the Town, covered all over with filk Tapistry, and with a deal of ceremonious sopperies, bestowed on the people his benediction as he passed along, exhorting them to return hearty thanks to their great Prophet for this Victory obtained over us. The Inhabitants hearing that we were Christians taken Captives, flockt about us; and being exceedingly transported with choler, fell to beating of us in that cruel manner, that Ithought it a vain thing to hope to escape alive out of their hands; and all this, because we owned the names of Christians. When I was in England, I justly was sentenced to die for my villany, and now here only for the bare profession of Christianity, I must not be suffered to live. This wicked Cacis (as they called him)instigated them on to those outrages they committed; who made them believe, that the worfe they dealt with us, the more favour and mercy they

should receive from Mahomet hereafter. We were chained all together, and in that manner were we led in triumph; and as we past along, we had our heads washt with womens Rose-water, thrown down upon us from Balcomes, with other filth, in derision and contempt of the name of Christian; wherein every one strived to be most forward, being instigated thereunto by their Priest. My sufferings then put me in mind of my former withes, to be as unfortunate Andronicus, miserably afflicted here, that I might escape eternal torments hereafter: I received in part the effect of my quondam withes, no ways acceptable to my present delires. Having tyred themselves in tormenting us till the evening, bound as we were, they clapt us into the Dungeon, where we remained 21 dayes exposed to all kind of misery, having no orher, provision allowed us, than a little Oat-meal or Rice and water, which was diffributed to us every morning, what should serve us for that whole day! for variety fake, we had fometimes a fmall quantity of Peafe foak'd in water.

CHAP. LXVIII.

is brought forth into the Market-place, and there put to fale; he is bought by a Jew (a miserable avaicious man) and by a stratagem he delivers himself from that Master, is fold to a Grzcian, in heart a shriftian: the Ship being taken, and his Master drowned, he escaping to shore by swimming, is at his mun liberty.

Nthe morning the Goaler repairing to us found wo of our miferable companions dead, by reaof their wounds, which were many, and not This made him hafte to the Guazil okt into. Judge, to acquaint him of what had hapned; oupon information given, came to the prison person, accended with Officers and other people: ere having caused their irons to be firuck off, he dered their bodies to be dragged through the wn, and so cast in the Sea. We that remained me chained altogether, and fo led out of prifon to the common place of fale, to be fold to him it thould give most. By reason of my thrength hich those that lookt on might argue, from the ightness and armness of my limbs, being elevaby the Pole above a common or middle flature) as first bought by one, whom at the first light. ould not well tell whether he was Man or Devil; his complexion was of the fame colour as the vil is usually rendred: to fay all in short, he was im. He carried me home to his house, where I fooner arrived, but he markt me for his own : employment was confiantly to turn a handmill ;

AP.

Ve were

r heads

ion and

n every

ligated

put me

ctunate.

in part

prable lves in

nained

ing no

meal or

severy

e day :

ancity

mill; if I refted at any time, though ever fo lin the punishment he inflicted on me was, three four blows on either the belly, or foles of my fe which were doubled or trebled according as judged of my offence : my diet was fuch as or Served to keep me alive. In general, he used me cruelly, that becoming desperate, I once though it better resolutely to cut the thread of my li than fpin it out longer in fo much wretchedn and mifery. Revenge too induc'd me to the n dertaking of this actempt, as knowing him to the most coverous wrerch living, and therefor would even hang himself when he should la what he payed for me : but confidering my felf made choice of a better expedient, which was pretend (what I intended nor) to kill my felf: made choice of fuch a time, when I was fure for one or other was fet to watch me; who perceiving that I was about to deftroy my felf, rusht in an prevented me, and went forthwith to inform a Mafter of what he had feen ; advising him with to fell me out of hand, otherwise he would infe libly be a lofer by me. My Mafter taking notice my countenance and behaviour, refolved to p his friends counsel in practife; and fo fold met another, who fortunately proved a Greek, thati thew was a Mahometan, but cordially a Christia Once more was I delivered from mileries that a hardly to be endured, and was imbarqued with a new Mafter in a Ship bound for the East-Indies. the course that we held, we fail'd with fo prospe ous a gale, that in a very thort time we arrived view of the Fort of Din; but feeing feveral velle lying before that Fort, firing against it in an hosti mapp

er so litt sunner we shaped our course to Goa, where we attended in safety. From hence we sayled unto the Risos my see at Lugor: Just as we were entring its Mouth, we saw shing as great Junk coming upon us, which perceiving us has one be sew in number, and our Vessel but small, sell used me sose that were in her, threwin to us great Crampform in sos sastened unto two long chains, wherewith they exched to the unor, but incontinently some 70 or 80 Mahametans him to arred one from under the Hatches, that till them therefore and lain lurking there; and pouring out their small-build to upon us, clapt us aboard in an instant. Those my sells hat knew what it was to be a slave to the merciles that knew what it was to be a slave to the merciles that knew what it was to be a slave to the merciles that so fast for saste one of his samiliar friends) being form a sounded, & ignorant in swimming, to be encomed an with a the deep. There were some five or fix more that uild inform the season one of his familiar friends) being form a winded, & ignorant in swimming, to be encomed an with a the deep. There were some five or fix more that uild inform sate one of their enemies and the Sea, that notice the danger of their enemies and the Sea, that notice the saste of mann

morning, by break ofday, we went along by the River-fide,until we came to a little Channel, which we durft not pals (not knowing its depth) for fee of Lizards, plenty whereof we had fight of therein we wandred fo long to avoid this and the Bogs co vered with rufhes, which environed us shout, it that we were forced to rest our selves, being so wer ry and to hungry, that we could not go one Rep far ther. In the morning awaking, four of our compan lay dead, fo that there was only one remaining bear me company : I now thought my condition worse than if I had hung at Tyburn, surrounded wit a full Jury of fellow-fufferers: my companion an I, with cears, fang the oblequies of our dead friend expeding hourly our own diffolution: Their bodie we covered with a little earth, as well as we could for we were then fo feeble, that we could hardly fil nay, nor fpeak. In this place we refted our felves,in cending to bear our friends company to their eterna reft. Some four hours after this our resolution, abou Sun-fet, we espied a Barque rowing up the River coming near us we hailed her, and profrating ou felves on the ground, befeeched those that werei her to receive us on board. Amezed to fee us in the pofture on our bended knees, and hands lifted up to Heaven, they ftopt:our cries for fuccour reacht their cares, which obtained commiferation from their hearts; fo taking us in, they carried us with them to Lugor, where about Noon next day we landed. The people are fearful black like the Devil, whom the Dragon: They have many Idols amongst them which Ow

ogs co r bodie dly fli

by the Oal, a Snake, or Dog, to whom they ceremoniously whice bow or kneel, groveling upon the earth, and throwfor fee ing dust on their faces; they offer Rice, Roors; Herbs, therein and the like, which is devoured by the Wirches, thefe devillish creatures being both feared and effeemed out, it by the Savages. The female fex, against the appear-fo wes ing of the new-Moon, assemble upon a Mountain, Rep far where turning up their bare bums, they contemptuompan oully defie the Queen of Heaven, who hath this deming thight thewn her, because they suppose her the cauonditio fer of their monthly courses. They are much given ded wit to novelties, a mongit which dogs are of very great nine with them: Infomuch, that whilft I was there, I ion an ulue with them: Infomuch, that whilf I was there, I friend hw fix flaves exchanged for one European Cur. They abound with the choicest of natures bleffings, could is health, ftrength, and wealth, but are very inhumone and uncivily for they delight much to feed on mans fleih, eating it with more farisfaction than any lves, in mans fleih, eating it with more latistaction tuan any eterns wher food. Upon my first arrival, I did not rightly River when I was informed, that like Butchers, they felt my ing ou link to know how fat I was, they never toucht me werei therwards with their fingers, but I fancied my felf in the tither boiled or roafted, and that their hands, my understand their meaning by feeling my flesh, but dupt bearers, were conveying me to the open Sepulchres he their of their mouths, to be entombed in the gutn thei numbling Monument of their bellies : hem to stother Anthropophagi content their appetites ed. The with the flesh of their enemies, these cover m the most their friends, whom they imbowel with blood much greedines, saying, they can no way better which express a true affection, than to incorporate their Bat, at dearest friends and relations into themselves, as in Owl love before, now in body, uniting two in one (in my

opinion) a bloody fophiftry. It is a very truth, of which I was an eye-witness, they have Shambles of men and womens & th, joynted and cut into feveral pieces fit for dreffing. It is usual for some, either weary oflife, or fo fick, they have no hopes of recovery, to proffer themfelves to thefe inhumane Butehers, who returning them thanks, diffed or cut them out into small parcels, and so are sodden and eaten It is a custom among them, when they would add to their beauties (deformity) to flash their faces in feveral places. They adore those two glorious Planets, the Sun and Moon, believing they live in Matrimony. They are much addicted to rapine and theevery, and they chuse to commit any villany rather by day than night, because they suppose thereby the Moon and Stars will never give testimony against them. Their heads are long, and their hair curled, feeming rather wool than bair: Their ears are very long, being extended by ponderous bawbles they hang there, fretching the holes to a great capacity. Both men and women hideoully flath their fielh in fundry forms; their brows, nofes, cheeks, arms, breafts, back, belly, thighs and legs, are pinke, and cut in more admirable (than amiable) manner. They contemn apparel, and indeed, the heat of the Climate will not permit them to wear any ; very few have nothing on to cover their fecrets. Most have but one stone, the other is forced away in their infancy, that Venus may not too much allure them from Martial exploits : wherefore the women take great delight in ftrangers. One of them fo frongly befieged my modelty, that more for fear than love, I yielded to her incontinency: I was displeased at nothing but the fight of her; for her flesh, no Velvet could

th, of les of everal either frecoe Butcthem caten addto in feanets. rimoevery, them.

could

could be faster. There are in this place great quanity of Lions, which in dark weather use great subtility to catch and eat fome Savages: They again in the day-time dig pits, and covering them with boughs, do crain the couragious Lions thicher, where they receive deftruction, eating them to day, who perhaps were Sepulchres to their friends or parents the day before. I have feen thefe well-bred people descend in a morning from the Mountains, adorned with the raw guts of Lions or other wild beafts, fering for an hour or two for chains or neck-laces,& sterwards for their breakfall; of which good chear, by day if I would not participate, I might fall for them: fo Moon that my fqueamifh ftomack was forced to give enertainment to that unwelcome gueft, to keep ftareming out of doors. The Ship that brought us hither, long, was now ready to fet fail, being bound for Goa, the hang hafter whereof was a Portugal, who understood Lame and French very well, of which I was not ignomic: I address my self to him in the French tongue, less ing him to accept of mine and my Comerades tryice; which he condescended to with much willing towards Surrat, a vehement and unexpected have form overtook us, for three days raging incessant-In the but of that those which were acquainted with those infan-Fffz

deep grave of the vaft Ocean; a fure treasury for the resurrection. The foulness of the weather fore'd a Junk-man of War, full of desperate Malabars, a bloody and warlike people, in view of us; but the Seas were too lofty for them to board us. 'After three watches, the Sea changed colour, and was calmer; and by the swimming of many snakes about our Veffel, the Sea-men knew we were not far from shore, landing shortly after safely at Surrection

CHAP

CHAP. LXIX.

From hence he set sail to Swalley-Road, and so from themee coasted till he arrived at Delyn a Town that belongs to the Malabars: he gives an account of what he there saw and observed.

Ome two hours after we set sail, we were becal-Imed, having not the least breeze of winde, the weather withall being exceeding hot and fultry: at length we arrived in Swalley-Road, where was riding an English Veffel; there we cast anchor, the English men came aboard of us, whom our Captain welcomed with the best of his entertainment. I could not forbear embracing my dear Country-men, shewing them so many demonstrations of joy, that by their looks, they feemed to question whether I was in my right wits. Their Mafters-mate calling me aside, askt me, how I came to be ingaged in this Veffel? how long fince I came from England? with many other questions too tedious here to relate. To all which I gave him such satisfactory answers, that he feemed very well pleased. I gave him a summary relation of what I had fuffer'd, fince my departure from my own Country; the report whereof, feemed to extract much pity from him. In fine, I told him, I had a great defire to fee England again, and to that end defired him to make use of what interest he could to remova me into their Ship: he promised he would; and accordingly giving a Present to our Captain, he

MAP

r forc'd

bars, a

Afte

nd we

akes a

Surrat

fo far prevailed upon him to let me go, and perswaded the chief of whom he was concerned withal , to entertain me, which they did with much willingnefs. I was fo like a Sea-man in this short time, that none could diftinguish me from one that received his fiest rocking in a Ship. I carried about me as deep an hogue of Tarpawlin as the best of them, and there was no term of art belonging to any part of the Ship or tackling, but what I understood. I could drink water that flunk (as if flereis bumanum had been fleept two or three days in it) as well as any of them, and eat beef and pork (that stirred as if it had received a fecond life, and was crawling out of the platter to feek out the rest of his Members) ! fay, I could devour it with as much greedines (feorning that my appetite should be ever again taxed with any of those Epithetes, either nice or fquea mish) as if it had been but nine hours, instead of nine Months, in falt. And to make me the more compleat, I had forgot to wash either hands or face, or what the use of a comb or shirt was neither did! know how to undress my felf; or if wer to the skin, to make life of any other means than my natural heat to dry my felf: I never lookt on a hat or band, but as Prodigies. But to return to my purpose, where I left off. In three days time we ferfail for Swalley-Road, steering our course from them all along the coast of India, Decan, and Malabar. I knew not whither they intended, neither did I care now, as thinking my felf fafe, being amongst my friends: on the 20 of April, seven days from our weighing anchor in Smalley-Road, we came to an anchor at Delyn, a Town of the Malabars: We durft not land, the people being forreacherous and bloody; Yes.

perfwahal, to villingie, that eceived t me as em, and part of I could m had sanvof as if it g out of bers) I ediness again nice or instead e more or face, er did I skin,to al heat d, but where walleyng the w not now, iends: ighing hor at ft not oody;

. YCE

yet we suffered them to come aboard us in their small Canoos, felling us for any trifles, Coco-nuts, Jacks, Green-pepper, Indian-peafe, Hens, Eggs, and the like. They brought us likewife Oranges of so pleafant a tafte, the rinde vying with the juice, which shall become most grateful to the palate: We had likewise from them Plantanes, a fruit supposed by some, to be that which Eve was tempted withal; if a man gathers them green, yet will they ripen afterwards, coloured with a dainty yellow: the rinde or skin will peel off with much facility; they melt in the mouth, giving a most delicious taste and relish. These Malabars are coal-black, well limb'd, their hair long and curled; about their heads they only tye a small piece of linnen, but about their bodies nothing but a little eloth which covers their fecrets. Notwithstanding their cruelty & inhumanity, we man'd out our longboat, and 15, whereof I was one, went ashore; carrying some Muskers and Swords with us, suspecting the worst: Landing, they fled from us, but not without fending good flore of poy foned arrows & darts amongst us. It is no wonder that these people are hoblack, for they live under the scorching fire of the torrid Zone. We returned to our Ship, finding it no way fafe to flay here longer; next morning hoiling fail, we came to Canavar, where we met with people more civil, whereupon we landed; and receiving things from the inhabitants of confiderable value, for wys and trifles we gave them in lieu, we refolved to hay here a while. The better fort of these people are call'd Nuiro's, whose heads are cover'd with a low tulipant, & their middles with a party-coloured Plad, refembling a Scotch Plad: The poorer fort have noching

thing but a small vail over their privities, wholly naked elsewhere; which vail or flap the women in courtefie will turn afide, and shew a man their Pudenda, by way of gratitude for any courtefie received. as if they would render fatisfaction with that, which could never receive plenary fatisfaction it felf. They have a strange custom in their Marriages, observed among them by the highest to the lowest: who so marrieth, is not to have the first nights imbraces with his Bride, but is very well contented to bestow her Maiden-head on the Bramini, or Prieft, who do not alwayes enjoy it, being glutted with fuch frequent offerings, and therefore will many times fell them to ftrangers. Such a proffer I had once made me, and with shame I must confess, I did accept it, forgetting those facred vows I made in Newgete, to live a more pious, firid and fober life. The Bride that night, was plac'd in one of their Fanes, as its cuftomary, the Priest or Bramin coming to her; but inflead thereof, according to agreement between this Priefly Pavnim and my felf, I went: I wondred to find her follow of stature, but I did not much matter it then, minding something elfe; which having performed, I departed. The next morning I had a great defire to fee her, but was amazed to fee her fo young, believing it impossible (though I knew the contrary) a child (for I may so call her, being but seven years of age) could be capable of mans reception at that tender age, Afterwards, I was informed, it was usual for them to marry so soon; first, being extreamly falacious and leacherous, and as fit, nay, as prone to enjoy man at that age, as Europeans at fourteen. Next, they excreamly honour Wedlock, infomuch, that

wholly men in neir Puceived. which f. They oferved who fo es with ow her do not equent I them de me, r, fortolive le that cuftoout inen this red to matter g pergreat oung, ontrafeven ion at ic was reamprone reen. nuch, that

that if any of their children die whilst very young, they will hire some Maiden to be married to him, and so lie with him the night after his decease. So foon as we arrived (which is a custom they use to all firangers, of what Country foever) we had prefeuted us choice of many Virgins; our Boat-swain chufing one he fancied for a small price, the guided him to a lodging, where if he would have stayed so long, the would have performed his domestick affairs, as well at board as bed, discharging her duty very pundually : but he that undertakes any fuch thing, must be very wary that he be not venereally familiar with any other woman, left that the with whom he hath contracted himself for fuch a time, doth recompence his inconstancy with mortal poyson. At his departure, her wages must be paid to her Parents, who returns then with much joy, and they receive her with as much credit and oftentation. The chiefest among them hold it a very great courtefie, if any one will fave them the labour, pain and trouble, by accepting the Hymeneal rites of his Bride. I should have told the Reader, that the Bramins are fo much respected and esteemed by the commonalty, that if any of them gets their wives or daughters with child, they believe that off-spring to be much holier than their own, being extracted from Pagan piety. Their Funerals they celebrate after this manner: Bringing the dead corpse near to their Fanes or Churches, they consume it to ashes, by fire made of sweet smelling wood, unto which they add coftly perfumes in Aromatick gums and spices: If the wife only (for here they will not hear of Polygamy) cast not her self into the flames voluntarily, they look upon her to be some common profitute, having not any

thing commendable in her natural disposition; but if the freely commits her felf to the flames, with her husbands carcafe, the from that noble act (for foir is effeemed of among these infidels) derives to her memory, reputation and glory amongst her surviving friends and kindred. They are deluded on to this refolution by their Bramins, who perswade them by so doing, they shall enjoy variety of perpetual pleafores, in a place that is never diffurbed by alteration of weather, wherein night is banishe, there being a continual fpring; neither is there wanting any thing that shall ravish each individual sense. first a stratagem invented by some long-headed Politician, to divert them from murdering their husbands (which they were frequently guilty of, by reason of their extream leachery and infatiate venery) fo by that means they were reduc'd to that good order, as that they tendered the preservation of their husbands healths and lives equally with their own. For my part . I could wish the like custom enjoyn'd on all married English females (for the love I bear to my own Country) which I am confident would prevent the deffruction of thousands of well-meaning Chriflians, which receive a full flop in the full career of their lives, either by corrupting their bodies by venemous medicaments administred by some preteded Doctors hand (it may be het Stallion)unto which he is easily perswaded, by the good opinion he hath of his wifes great care and affection for him : or elfe his body is poyfoned by fucking or drawing in the contagious fumes which proceed from her contaminated body, occasion'd by using pluralities for her venereal fatisfaction, & so dies of the new Consumption.

Or Lastly, by petrish and petulant behaviour, she wearieth him of his life, and at last is willing to die, that he may be freed, not only from the clamorous noise of her tongue, but that the derision of his neighbours, and scandal that she hath brought upon him, may not reach his ears. That all such might be mindful of their duty, I would have (were it at my disposing) these two lines fixt as a Motto to their doors.

A Conchant Cuckeld, and a rampant Wife, A Cop'latives disjunctive all their life.

CHAP.

chhe
ath of
fe his
conaina-

y ve-

; but

th her

foitis

er me-

riving

is re-

byfo

plea-

ration eing a

thing

was at lPolibands fon of fo by er, as bands or my on all o my event Chrieer of

tion.

CHAP. LXX.

From Delyn be sailed to Zeyloon; with what be there observed.

He Isle of Zerleon is very famous, and not far diftant from the Point of India, called Cape Comrein; it abounds with all forts of odoriferous and Aromatical Spices: the people are Pagans, not owning a Deity : some though have heard of Christ, and others of Mahamet, but fuch are rarely to be found. They go naked, not compelled thereunto by want or poverty, but meer heat of the Sun. They are great Idolaters, worshipping things in monstrous shapes. On the top of a high Mountain, they have fet conspicuously the Idaa of an horrible Cace-Demon, unto which Pilgrims from remote parts do refort; and upon this account, a King of Zeyloon coming, once derided this Idol : another time, intending to make a second repetition of his former derision, the King was even frighted out of his wits; for not onely he, but his attendants all faw how this Demon threatned him for fodoing, by shaking a flaming Cymeter, and rowling his fiery eyes, from his mouth gaping, iffued out fiery flames; whereat this King returns with as much penicence as amazement, refolving by his due respect and worship for the time to come; to make an atonement for his former errors. For my part, had I not believed there was a Devil, the fight of this horrid monstrous reprefentation would have induc'd me into the belief that this was one really. They have in another place a Chappel, in which they adore the Devil

be there not far e Comus and townft, and found. want e great hapes. onspi-, unto ; and , once make e King ely he, eatned er, and iffired vich as hisdue make

y part,

of this

nduc'd

y have

ore the

Deve

Devil (whom they call Denmo) the height whereof is about three yards, and uncovered : the wooden entrance is engraven with hellish shapes; within their beloved Devil or Deume, is enthronized on a brazen Mount: From his head iffue four great horns, his eyes of an indifferent proportionable bigness, having fomewhat a larger circumference than two fawcers: his nofe flat ;, a mouth like a portcullice, beautified with fours tusks, like Elephants teeth; his hands like daws, and his feet not unlike a Monkeys: beside him fand leffer Deumo's attending on this grand Pagod. some whereof are represented or pictured devouring fouls. Every morning the Priest washeth them, not departing till he hath craved their malediction; and when he takes his leave, he is very careful of offending the Devil by shewing his posteriors, and therefore goes from him retragrade, fledfaftly fixing his eyes on the Idol. 'Tis strange that a rational foul should be fo much infaruated, as to adore fuch a monftrous and ridiculous thing. The people in way of mutual love and amity, use to exchange their wives; a thing, though much hated by the jealous Spaniard, yet would be very acceptable to other Europeans, or elfe to be rid of them altogether, who are the daily murderers of their content and quier. Polygamy, or plurality of Wives, is here permitted; and as the men are granted the liberty to have more than one wife, so are the women allowed more than one hus band. However, the woman hath the disposal lest her of her children, giving them to him the hath the greatest affection for; which he receives, not questioning his interest or right (by generation) unto the infant.

Elfewhere the Fates degreed a Cuckol'ds lot To keep that child another man begot : And by his joy therein be plainly (hows, Hethanks the man that pay'd those debts be owes: But thefe She-Blacks in justice thought it fit, That he which got the child, likewife keepit : Therefore both love and custom made it fo. On the true Father they the child beffor : By which good Law unto each man'tis known, That be doth keep no other child but's own. Were this observ'd in England, I durft swear, Some what-d'ye-lacksmouldHeirs to Lords appears And half of what some own, must be conferr'd On such who bave a Fathers name deferv'd. Thefe Blacks do tax our women, for they paint The Devil white, and make him feem a Saint; To let them know, they are far greater evils; For fairest semales oft are foulest Devils.

We stayed not long here, but having dispatche what we came for, we sailed along the coast of Choromandel, and landed at Meliapar. The people are much after the same complexion of those of Delyn, only a little more duskie, and go in a manner naked too. Here are likewise great store of Bramins, who are very busie and industrious to instruct these poor ignorant souls in the perfect way to damnation; for which they have the honour and estimation of all conferred upon them. We man'd out our long-boat and went ashore; upon our landing, it was our hap to be eye-witnesses of one of their Funerals, which was performed after this manner. The husband was carried

he owes:
fit,
it:

tappears

fpatche
of Cheple are
Delyn,
naked
of, who
e poor
of all
y-boat
ar hap

which d was arried

ried before the combustible Pile; his most dearly loving wife closely following after him, attended by her Parents and children; musick (such as they have, which Icannot compare to that of the Spheres) playing before, behind, and on each fide of her. She was dreft both neatly & fumptuoufly, to the height of the rudepels of their art; her head, neck, and arms (not omiting her nose, legs, and toes) each bedeckt and charged with Bracelets of filver, with jewels every where about her distributed : She carried flowers in her hands, which she disposed of to those she met. The Priest going backwards before her, shewed her a magical glass, which represented to her sight whatever might be pleasing to her sensual appetite. The Bramin all along inculcating to her thoughts, the senseavishing and affable joys she shall possess after her decease; at which this poor deluded foul smiled, and seemed to be much transported. We followed them ull they came to the fire, which was made of sweet odoriferous wood. As foon as her dead husband was committed to the flames, the voluntarily leapt in after him, incorporating her felf with the fire, and his thes: we wondred that the standers-by would pernit her thus to destroy her self, imagining this rash action proceeded from the ardency of her affection; but perceiving her friends to throw in after her, jewds and many precious things, with much exultation and expressions of joy, we concluded this to be the effects of custom. Such as refuse to burn in this manner, are immediately shaven, and are hourly in danger to be murdered by their own iffue or kindred, looking upon them as strumpers: and indeed many of them are so audaciously impudent, that upon the least di-

flafte, or not having their luxurious expectations anfwered nothing more intended or indeavoured than the lives of their husbands. They are in these parts fo extreamly idolatrous, and fo over-fwayed by the Devilathat they adore a great Idol made of Copper gilded, whose statue is carried up and down, mounted on a glorious Charriot, with eight very large wheels overlayed with gold; the alcent or steps to the charriot are very large & capacious, on which fit the Priests, attended by little young girles, who for devotion fake , proffitute themselves freely to the heat of any libidinous spectator; for so doing, they are intitled the Pagades children: A very strange zeal in their bewitched or beforted Parents, to destinate the off-spring of their bodies, from their non-age, to such an abominable liberty; for by letting them know the use of Man so soon, it cannot but be very prejudicial to their bodies , but also invest them with the thoughts of perpetual whoring: For , that woman that thall admir of more than one to her private imbraces, will admit of any upon the like account. Nay, fuch is their blind zeal and superstition, that as the Chariot paffeth, some will voluntarily throw themselves under the wheels, who are crusht in pieces by the weight of the Idol and its attendants, fuffering death without the benefit of a happy (but to them unhappy) Martyrdom.

CHAP. LXXI.

from Zeyloon, be arrived at Syam; and what there be fam and objerved.

Nam is a Kingdom contiguous to Pega, a part of Othe East-Indies: And, as the people are included within the burning Zone, therefore far from being hir ; yet are tall of flature, very frong and valiant, md generally fo firait, that few are found among hem crooked. Formerly they were much given to Sidomy : to prevent which , 'twas wifely ordered. (though strangely) that the males as soon as born. hould have a bell of gold (and in ica dry'd Adders tongue) put through the prepare and flesh. When then defire of copulation stimulates any of them, he presents himself to some expert Midwives; who adtile him to drink Opium, or fome fuch formiferous potion; which having done in their presence, he falls alleep; during which interval they remove the ball. and apply to the orifice from whence it was taken, an unquent, which affords a fpeedy cure : then is he fee to make use of such as his fancy leads him to. The foung Girles are ferved in a worfe manner; and it its great a rarity, to finde a pure Virgin here at ten years old, as to finde a Maid at fixteen, in most places of Franc, or its neighbouring Countreys. And that these young Fry may be capable of that imployment they are destinated unto, they have potions given them to drink. The women here (ftill the more to allure the men from that deteftable and un-Gg 2

HAP

redthan

fe parts

Copper

moun-

ps to the

ch fit the

o for de-

the heat

they are

e zeal in

nate the

e, to fuch

now the

prejudi-

with the

Woman

vate im-

account.

that as

y throw

t in pie-

nts, fuf-

(but to

natural act of Sedomy) go naked; (as little a novelty in thele parts, as for Iriff and Scotch to wall their cloaths with their feet, their coats, fmock and all tuckt up about their middles, though twenty men stand by as (deriding spectators) I say, they go naked to their middles, where the better fort are covered with a fine transparent Taffata or dainty Lawn, which by a cunning device is so made to open, that as they pass along, the least air discovers all, to all mens immodest views. Their Priests, which they call Tallapoi, are feeming very zealoully supersticious: they formewhat incline to Mahometanism; for they pretend they will not drink wine, being forbidden it by their Law, yet are abominable hypocrites: for though they wear a fleep-skin with the wool thereon, not fuffering any hair to be on their bodies, and in thew lead a chafte life, yet I found the contrary;as you shall understand by what past between one of them and my felf. I being on fhore with our Ships crew, I chanc'd to walk abroad, carrying with mea bottle of Spanish-wine: As I entred into a Wood, intending not to adventure too far, there came to me one of these Tallapoi or Priests; in the habit aforefaid, with a horn about his neck, refembling a Sowgelder's but much less; with which, I was told, they with the found thereof, used to convene the people to hear them preach. This holy Infidel espying me, bleft himself, (as I guest by his gesture) & approaching near me, I imagined that he prayed for me, by the elevation of his and eyes hands : was a requital, proffered him some of my wine; and having taked thereof, lik'd it fo well, that by figns, I understood he defired his hornfull of me: to sell you the truth,

novelty th their and all nty men go nae cover-Lawn, n, that L to all hey call Sticious: for they idden it es: for d thereies, and trary;as one of ur Ships ith mea Wood. ne to me it afores a Sowthev. e people ing me, proachme , by quital, I ng rafted derstood ae truth,

llik dit fo well my felf, that I had no defire to part with one drop more of it; but his importunities fo far prevailed, that I granted his request; which haring obtained, he made no more ado but drank it off, making but one gulp thereof; a thing contrary to the firstness of his profession. After this, he seemed to bless me, and so departed. It was but a little while, before he again presented himself to my view; and beckoning to me, I followed him:coming close up to him, he pointed with his finger to a place, where covertly I espy'd three Maidens (as I supposed) to whom he by figns perswaded me to go. Sitting down amongst. them, they entertained me with as much civility as they were endued withall, and courted me after their amorous fashion. One of these was the handsomest that I have seen in those parts; though not to be compared, for form of face, with the homeliest Kirchin-stuff-wench in London. I dallied with her so long, till that luft conquer'd my fancy; attempting fomething, and being in a fair way to it, this Satyr-Goat-Devil, (I can't invent a name bad enough tocall him by) presently falls down upon us; and raking methus unawares, lying on my belly, I was not able to help my felf, that he had like to have performed his bulinels; and questionless had effected it, but that the two Maidens standing by (no ways ashamed at this most shameful fight)assisted me, pulling him off. I presently started up, and seized him; and tripping up his heels, I laid him on his back: having fo done, I bound him; then raking out my knife, I could not find in my heart to spare him one inch; and that he might not have any witnesses left of what was done, I took away his testicles too. The three Gg3 young

young Girles fled, fearing my rage and revenge might have extended to them: And fearing my felf, that they would give information of what I had done, I fled too to my Ships-Comerades; and giving them account of what had happened, we all judg'd it the fafeft way to go aboard; and so we did, with all expedition possible.

CHAP.

revenge g my felf, iat I had and gi-, we all o we did,

CHAP. LXXII.

From bence besails to Do-Cerne, so called by the Portugals; who Adam-like, give (or, as I may say, take too much liberty) in imposing names on all new places, and things. By the Hollanders, it is called Mauritius. Its general Description.

O-Cerne or Mauritius, is an Isle situate within The torrid Zone, close by the Tropick of Capricorn; but it is very uncertain unto what part of the world it belongs, participating both of America, and bending towards the Afiatick Seas, from India to Tava. This Isle aboundeth with what the use of man shall require. The landing looking out at Sea, is Mountainous: the circuit of this Island is about an hundred miles; it procreates an healthy and nourishing air; the great quantity of ever-flourishing & fragrant trees, doth no less lenifie the burning heat, when the Sun enters into Capricorn, as helped by the fweet mollifying breath of the North-west winde, when Sol again adheres to Cancer. Now as the temperature of that body is best composed, that participates indifferently of all the Elements, which either super-abounding or wanting, begers defect; What then is the temperature of this place, which is bleft with, & abounds in all, & abortive in none? Water is here very plentiful, drilling it felf from the high rocks & trickling down into the valleys, fpreads it felf into various Meanders, till those sweet and pleasant Waters

CHAP.

waters disembogue themselves into the lap of the falt Ocean. There is so great a quantity of wood. that we could hardly procure passage. But of those many various Trees, we found none so beneficial to us, as the Palmeto: this Tree is long, ftreight, and very fost, having neither leaves, boughs, nor branches, fave at the top, whereon there is a foft pith, wherein confifts the fole vegetative of that Tree; which cut out, the Palmete in a very short time expires. rafte is much like a kernel of an Hazel-nur; boiled, it is like Cabbage. But the chiefest commodity that this Tree produceth, is the wine which iffueth from ir, pleasant, and as nourishing as Muskadine or Alligant. Thus we procured some thereof; coming where two or three grew together, with an augure we bored some small holes in each, which immediately the liquor filled; then with a small cane or quill we suckt the wine out of one Tree; then we went to another, and from that to the third: by that time we had drained the last, the holes in the two former were full again. This course we followed so smartly, that in less than an hour, three of its were so drunk (whereof I was none of the soberest) that had not these Trees been near the shore, for ought I know, by the morning we might have feafted the wilde beafts. Divers other Trees there be, strong both in shape and mature; one whereof (meerly out of curiofity) I must needs taste, which for half an hour so bit or stung my tongue, as if I had had my mouth full of Vitriol, or spirit of Salt. It is a comely tree to look on, but brings forth not any thing that is good: this Tree is in a manner naked too, and the body thereof as foft and penetrable, as new Cheefe: the form of the Tree,

of the

wood,

f those

ficial to

nd very

vherein

nich cut

es. Its

boiled,

in from

where

we bo-

tely the

e fuckt

other,

ve had

y, that

where-

w, by

beafts.

pe and

ficy) I

r ftung

itriol,

Treeis

as foft

Tree,

115

is uselesses, with that hidden sting it carries in it, together with its softness; the lust of which, invites me to cut these lines therein; which my knife as eafily performed, as to write a mans name with a stick on the sand. The lines were these:

Th'art like a Woman, but thou want'st her breath; Who's fair, but fruitless, and will sting to death If tasted: would I could blast thee with my curse, Since woman thou art like, for nothing's worse.

There is another Tree, which beareth a cod full of tharp prickles, wherein lies hid a round fruit, in form of a Doves-egg; crack it, and therein contain'd you shall finde a kernel, pleasant in taste, but poysonous in its operation. My fweet tooth lon'gd for a tafte. and being very toothsome I did eat several; but it was not long ere my guts were all in an uproar, and were refolved in this mutiny, could they have found way. to charge my mouth with high treason, against the rest of my Members; but they were at last content only to discharge their fury through the Postern of their Microcosm; which they did so furiously, that I was much afraid, my guts having spent all their shor, they would have marcht out after. I had (in plain English) in less than fix hours fixty stools, besides purging upwards; and had not we had a very skilful Dr. Chryrurgeon of our Ship, I had unavoidably perishr. Nature in this Island shew'd her prodigality of water and wood, corresponding also in every thing else a fruitful Mother labours to be excellent in. Here she feems to boaft, not only in the variety of feather'd creatures, but in the rareness of that variety, which should

thould I run over but briefly, the subject is so large, that by some I cannot but be thought too redious. However, I shall lightly touch thereon. Here, and here only is generated the Dodo; for rareness of shape contending with the Arabian Phanix: her body is round and very fat, the least whereof, commonly weighs above twenty pound: They please the light more than the appetite, for their fielh is of no nourithment, and very offensive to the stomach. By her visage (darting forth melancholy) she seems to be sensible of that injury Nature hath done her in framing fogreat a body, and yet useles, but to please the eye; committing its guidance to complemental wings (for so I'm forc'd to call them) fince they are so small and impotent, that they only serve to proveher an off-fpring of the winged Tribe. Here are Bats also, as large as Gashawks. There is likewise great plenty of Fish: among the rest of most especial nore, is the Cow-fish; the head thereof nor unlike an Elephants, her eyes are small, her body at full growth about three yards long, and one broad, her fins exceeding little, her flesh (being an amphibious creature, living as well at Land, sometimes, as in the Sea). doth rafte much like Veal. Some fay that this Fish doth affect, and takes much-delight in the fight of a mans visage. About this Illand are flying fish, Dolphins, and Sharks. One of our men imprudently fwimming one day, the weather being very nor, in our fight a Shark came and bit off his leg, and part of his thigh, and he thereupon funk; we made out to fave him, but before we came, he was drownpd. Here are Tortoiles fo great, that they will creep with.

fo large, with two mens burdens on their backs; but their pace redious. is fo flow, that they would make but ill Porters, golere, and ing not above ten yards in two hours, when they of thape body is make their greatest speed. The birds here are fo unaccustomed to frights, that I have shot five or fix mmonly times amongst a flock, letting the dead still lie, and the light not one of the fur viving did fo much as offer to flie. no nou-The Goats here have more of the Politician in them: By her for they feldom feed or rest themselves, but they fet ns to be out their fentinels. er in o please

CHAP.

is Fish ght of tish, nprug very g, and made owncreep

with.

Here ike wife ap cial like an growth ins ex-

CHAP. LXXIII.

Hence befailed for Bantam; by the way be recounts the danger he bad like to have sustained, by ascending a burning Mountain.

WEighing Anchor, we steer'd our course for Bantam; but being much strained by the way, for want of fresh water, we were compell'd to make up to the first Land we descry'd. Though the darkness of the night blinded our eyes from such discoveries, yet flames of fire not far diffant from us, gave us perfect intelligence that land was not far off. That night we cast Anchor, fearing we might run foul of some Rock or shelf: In the morning we saw a large track of Land before us, not knowing what place it should be. Our Captain commanded the Long-boat to be man'd out, to procure water, if any good were there: amongst the rest, I went for one; for I was very greedy to observe novelties. Coming on shore, and feeing this Hill now and than belch out flames. by my perswasions I made my fellows forget for a time their duty or errand they came about , to make some inquisition into this miracle of Nature. Whereupon we all resolved unanimously to ascend the Hill, and with much difficulty we came so nighthe top, that we heard a most hideous noise proceeding from the Concave thereof: fo terrible it was, that we now began to condemn our rash attempt, and stood at a convenient distance, judging it the only medium of our fafery. Whilft we were thus in a delirium, not knowing

unts the

urfe for by the ell'd to gh the ch difis,gave f. That foul of large lace it z-boat d were shore. ames. for a make here-Hill, top, from now dat a em of

not

knowing what was the best to be done; the Mountain was inffantly possest with an Ague-fit . & afterwards vomiting up smoak & stones into the Air (which afterwards fell down in a shower upon our heads) we thought we could not escape without a miracle: and while we were all striving which way, with greatest expedition, we might eschew the danger, there rose in the midst of us such an heap of earth, ashes, and fire, with fuch kinde of combustible matter, as that we all feem'd as fo many moveable burning Beacons, & without any thoughts of helping each other, every one endeavoured to fecure himfelf. And although I was the last in the company, yet in this expedition it was much available to me; for my companions making more hafte than good speed, tumbling down the Hill before me, fell several of them together; which blocks lying in my way, obstructed my paffage, & so sav'd the breaking of my neck, which otherwise would have been inevitable. In this prodigious conflich, most of us lost the hair of our heads, not without receiving feveral batteries upon the Out-works of our bodies. At first fight we were much afraid; but the consequence made it appear, we were not more afraid than hurt. We made a shift to crawl down the rest of the way; and having fixt our unadvised feet on the bottom of the Mountain, we refolv'd we would never again pay fo dearly for our curiofity, but forthwith went in fearch of some Spring, that might ferve as well to quench our cloaths, as our thirst. What we fought for we quickly found; and so filling our empty Cask, we made what hafte we could aboard. The Captain and the rest stood amaz'd to fee us look fo ghaftly, and were very impatient to

know what was the matter with us; we told them fuccincily what had happened, and what great dangers we underwent: instead of pitying us, they only laught at us for being such adventurous fools. Having thus furnished our selves with what we wanted, we set sail again for Bantum; where we safely arriv'd in a short time.

CHAP.

eat danhey only s. Hawanted, arriv'd

CHAP. LXXIV.

Going ashore to Bantam, and observing the Merchants what they did, taking up Goods upon credit (as it is usual in those parts) till the ship is ready to set fail, be by a stratagem turns Merchant too, and cheats a Bannyan, or China-Merchant.

S foon as we came into the Harbour before Bantam, we prefently man'd out our Long-boat and went ashore, to acquaint the President what we were, and by what authority we came thither to Traffick, being impowered by the East-India-Company. We were received with much demonstrations of joy, and nobly feafted for three dayes together. Here note, that the house wherein the Prefident dwelleth, is the receptacle for the whole Factory, each man according to his quality having a dwelling within this house suitable to his dignity; the Factors all in general taking their daily repast with the Prefident. In a weeks time I learned by observation the custom of the Country, and manner or way of Trading, our Merchant taking up Goods daily, and fending them aboard without-giving present sarisfaction; it being sufficient that he belonged to such a Ship, and therefore must pay before he go, otherwise the King will arrest the Ship, compelling him to make restitution or payment. One time I met with a Banmyan, whom I observ'd to have a box full of precious stones: I could not sleep for thinking how I should make

make my felf a Partner with him. At last I hammer'd out this invention: I cloath'd my felf in Indian-filk. according to the custom of the Country; and having so done, I discoloured my face, & clapt a black parch upon one of my eyes. In this equipage I addrest my felf to this Bannyan, who presently laid open his treafure to my view. I was not long in chufing what I efteem'd as most valuable; and demanding of him the price, we agreed he should have either so many pieces of English gold within two dayes, or else take his choice of what commodities I had aboard. We made a thift to understand each others broken expressions: and he without the least suspicion of my treachery, delivered his stones into my hands. Taking offmy difguife, I went inftantly aboard, and hid what I had cheated the Bannyan of (as I might easily do for the fmallness of its bulk) in the Hold of our Ship, resolving not to go ashore yet awhile. The day of payment being come and the Bannyan no where finding me on Land, came aboard of our Ship, where by fign he made known to our Captain his errand; that a Merchant belonging to his Ship had bought commodities of him, & promifed to pay him on that day. Our Captain reply'd, that he verily believed he was mistaken (as knowing what commodities the Merchants belonging properly to the Ship had bought) and therefore told him he must make inquiry elsewhere for fatisfaction. The Bannyan still persisted, alleadging he was not mistaken, and that he was confident if he might have a fight of all the men, he could out of them felect the concern'd person. So wary I was of being discovered, that I acquainted not one foul with my project: for had I committed this secret to any, (though

ımmer'd (though ever fo dear a friend) it had been mine no ian-filk. longer; neither could I have promised to my felf having fatery. Hereupon the Captain ordered us to be all ck patch call'd aloft : which was spedily performed. He went dreft my all round the company, viewing every man parhis treaticularly, and very heedfully. At laft he came to me, what I and there made a fland, (which had like to have him the made my heart flart out of my breaft:) he lookt upy pieces on me on this fide, and on the other fide; and to fay take his truly, on every fitte, and having thorowly eyed me, le made he ran to our Captain, faying, That should be the reffions; man (pointing to me) but that he is a white man, and achery, hath two fees (id off) two eyes. Whereupon I was offmy firictly examined : but for all this fifting, I would at I had not let drop any thing of a confession, that should for the convict me of guilt; but with lifting up hands and , refoleyes to Heaven, I utterly denyed that ere I faw this ayment man, or ever had any dealing with him. I had g me on now forgot what promiles and vows I made to fign he Heaven, (when in Newgate, and sentenced to a Merbe hang'd at Tyburn) what a serious, pious, and honmodinest life I would lead, if I escaped that eminent y. Our danger the concerns of this life and that to come was miwere then in. Herein I fee the old Proverb veris Merfied: ought) Quo semel est imbuta recent servabit odoren. y elle-

Tefte din, &c.

perfid that

of all

e condisco-

th my

any,

hough

That Cask will favour of that liquor still, With which at first the Cask a man did fill,

Or according to that thred-bare expression so commonly wied:

Hh

Naturam

on anim and bed it (bashi a resho) rever greit

Though man should stop his nature from its course, it will o'reslow again with greater force, below the

In faore, the Bannyan, fince he could not fay pofitively I was the man, was difmitt; not without a folemn vow he would be revenged of us all in general ; and I clear'd of the Indicament harmer our Caprain, faying, That hould be the man (po ming wiens) out bat he is a white man and both a confice (ed off) two open. When etipon I was ficially examined : but for all this diene I would not let drep cay thing it a confession, that should than the of gold disward, aling to an fireco eves to Weaven, Intrody Jenved that ere i faw this men occaver had any dealing with him blood now forgot what promifes and vors i made to Beaven, (when in Nongute, and fentenced to be hang'd at Tibura) what a ferious pious and honell life I would lead, if I estaped that eminent danger the concerns of this life and that to come word then in. Hereial feathe old Proverbyetle · bes

Sun semel oft imbut a recent servabit of a ca.

That Cask will favour of that liquor field, With which at helt the Cask a man that file.

Or avoirding to that the ed-bare suprellion to come

CHAP. LXXV.

The next going aftere of the Sea-men, this Barinyan (for the injury was done bim) earled a Rimming a Much of the injury was done bim) earled a Rimming a Much of the injury to infligated a great many people to hill all they were of that floip. The loss of several men thereupon: but he is out of danger, having cumningly kept himself about that time. He afterwards had like to have been killed by a Crease the Barinyan had hired for that purpose. His enemies being destroyed, he marriesh an Indian Punce-woman.

He next days a great many of our men went a-I hore and going into China-row ; (a ftreet fo esiled in Baniam) to drink Punce and Tea, a great erew of Indians and Chineles (Headed by this Bone ayam) fell upon them, killing whom they could, not directing their revenge upon any particular perfon, which they call a Muck:) fo hor and tharp was this Conflict, that many were killed on both fides, but This accident alarm'd the whole more wounded. town, but most especially the English there resident: but at laft; with much add, this grand uprour was dalmed. It was my good for time, that I was not then among them a other wife I might have been made facilities among the reft of thy fellows. But I was fore-warm'd having been pre-inform'd that fuch broyle are usual upon fuch occasions; wherefore kept my felf out of harms way for that time.

But not long after thinking their malice was blowns over, I went allhore; and walking withothers of our Boats-crew in the same Row; (where most of our then were us a to refer , because of the liquor than

Hb 2

W 25

(courle,

lay poishous a il gene-

man (pi Politica Georgia Georgia

considered of the constant of

Heaver be han theft li danger

ibed:

dT

Or ac

227

was there to be had, and a Whore to boot) a fellow came to me, with this Bannyan I cheated, and both of them with Creafes, (a kind of Dagger of about a foct and half long) would have stab'd me, had not my friends prevented them , by friking up their heels, and afterwards with their own Creafes flab'd them to the heart. After this, we could walk very quietly without any diffurbance, going any where

without any danger.

Being very hot there, our usual pastime was to go up a little fanall River (joyning to the Town) four or five miles to wash our selves ; the trees so covered it ever likean Arbon, that the beams of the Sun could not penetrate it; by which means it was fine and cool, which very much refresh our parched bodies: I never came ashore, but I drank very immoderately of Punce, Rack . Tes Sec. which was brought up in great China- Jug-holding at leaft two Charts; with every fuch Jug there was brought in a Difh of Sweetmeats, not of one fore, but variety, and excellent good; for which we paid a shilling English: and if you call'd for another Jug, you paid no more, unlessa Diff usher'd it in.

One house especially I much frequented, for the Indian womans fake that kept its for though the was black or rather rawny, yet the was well-featur d and well-form'd, having long black hair (when the unty'd the treffes) hanging down to her legs, She from the first shewed me as much kindness as could be expected from that lump of Barbarlim and I could discerne her inclinations, (in the fame manner as a man may from beaffs, when they are prone to Generation) but yet it went against my stomack to yield to her motions. However, the continued her love to me not letting me pay for any thing I call'd for and when

fellow both s 1HOC ad not their ftab d very where togo no auc red it could e and dies. ately up in Wich ille of

r the was tur'd nihe She ould build as a ene-

ield

03.27

hen

xcel-

when there was no necessity of being aboard, she would in a maner make me lie in her house, (which, as their houses commonly are, had but one story;)the beds they use are a kinde of Quilt, hard; for were they foft, the horness of the Climate would cause them to be very destructive to mans body, even melting his very reins. Gold and Jewels she had great quantity, with an house richly furnished after the Indian fashion. For this consideration I perswaded my felf to marry her; and with several arguments alleaged. I gained fo much conquest over my felf, that I could kis her witout disgorging my felf: and by accultoming my felf to her company, merhought I began to take fome delight in it. degrees, interest to over-power'd me, that I resolv'd to marry her. Thus many (nay thoft) for Money. flick not to give themselves to the Devil. Having one night (lying there) feriously considered of my resolution, and liking it indifferent well, I fell asleep; but wonder'd when I awaked, to see a thing lie by me all black, as if the had had a Mourning-mock on. feems the could hold out no longer: I pretended to flee from her; but the held me fast in her arms, uting what thetorick the could to perswade me to the contrary. I ask'd her what the meant? She told me in a little broken English she had got, that she would Money me; marry me, the meant: I, Money me, faid I, that I like well; but without it, let the Devil have married her for me. I ask'd her feveral questions, to which she gave me satisfaction; and enjoyn'd her several things, which the greedily condescended to : whereupon I gave her the first-fruits of her defires. But ere I go farther, take something of my Ryming tancie with you.

CHAP

CHAP. LXXVI.

He descants on his Marrying, and hing with an Indian-Black: Gives wholsom Advice to others; and concludes for this time.

I the first fight, her head feem'd in a Cafe, Orthat a Vizard-mask had hid her face, Or that fee was fome Frend from bell had stole, Having for Luft been burnt there to a cole. I could not tell what this foul thing should be ; A Succubus it did appear to me; A dimn'd black foul, that was by be even fent, To make me of my blacker crimes repent. I started from his, being much amou'd: The more I was afraid, the more Igaz'd. Then the arole, and caught me in her aren; Such foft fieft fure intended me no barm. Twas time to roor, fince that I could por tell But that I was encurcled (now) by Hell. Stay, flas, (faid the) I am no hellish fiend, I'm flesh and blood, and am thy loving friend: If my complexion do not please thy minde, I ben close thine eyes yet love : Thus love is blinde. I understood bertongue, and proight and frear That I would harish this my caustess fear; And fo betook my felf unto the Rug On which we lay, and offer many a Tug, Tolighted fairh with this kinde Infidel: But what we did, my modest tongue mon't tell. I would at any time (might I but chuse) The fairest White for this fame Black refuse. But mifebief on't, let me shoot e're fo right, Is can's be faid that I did hit the White. Interel n Indianand con-

a Cafe, face,

nt,

ick vor de nic delicit ell direk heens fi

olinde. ar

Interes

Interest so blinded my reason, that I went instantly to my Captain, & gave him information of my proceedings, defiring his confent in the marrying this Indian, alleadging how advantagious it would be to me. He granted my request, upon my earnest imporminity; and being difmist from his service, we were married according to the Ceremonies of the Church by an English Priest, the renouncing her Paganism. What money was got by my wifes Trade, I laid out in fuch Commodities the Country afforded, as Callico's Pepper, Indico, Green-Ginger, &c. and fold them immediately to the Ships lying in the Har+ bour doubling what I laid but: fo that in thort time Ifound my flock to increase beyond expectation: fuch fatisfaction my Black received from me, that the thought the could not do enough to please me. I was an absolute Monarch in my family; she and her fervants willingly condescended to be my vasfals ; verthough I thus enjoy'd the prerogative of an hufband, yet I did not Lord it too much; which won fo much upon my wifes affection, and those that were concern'd with her, that affoon as I defired any thing it was immediately performed, with much alacrity and expedition,

I fancy'd my life to be now as happy as the world could make it, having plenty of every thing, and not control'd by the foolish felf-will of an obstinate woman. I confess it was at first a great regret to my spirit, to lie by a woman so contrary to my own complexion: but Custom made her become in process of time as lovely in my eye, as if she had been the compleatest European beauty. I now again considered how he must sive, that intends to live well; and upon that consideration, concluded upon this resolution, Not to neglect my duty to Heaven, my Self;

or Neighbors : for he that fails in any of thefe, falls those in making his life commendable. For our Selves, we need Order; for our Neighbor, Chariey; and for the Deity, Reverence and Humility. These three duties are so concatenated, that he which liverh orderly, cannot but be acceptable to his Maker and the World. Nothing jars the Worlds harmony more withan men that break their ranks; and nothing renders Man more contemped and hared, than he whose actions onely tend to irregularity. Que turbulent spirit will even diffentiate the calment Kingdom : fo did my past unruly and diforderly life raine my felf, as well as many families. I have feen an Orthodox Minister in his Pulpit with his congregation about him; and fince revolving in my minde the comlines of the well-ordered fight, I have thought within my felf how mad he would appear, that should wildly dance out of his room. Such is man when he fourns at the Law he liveth sinder; and fuch was I that could not be contain'd within due limits, living like the Drone on others labors: taking no pains, but onely making a humming noise in the world, till fuffice seiz'd me for a wandring, idle, and huriful vagabond, (an ignavum pecus) and so had like to thrust me out of the world, the Hive of industrious Bees. Private hands

Ill company at first missed me, and it is to be feared by my example others have been missed. For he that giveth himselfleave to transgress, he must needs put others out of the way. Experience giveth us to understand, that he which first disorders himself, troubles all the company. Would every man keep his own life, what a concord in Musick would every family be! It shall be my own endeavor to do this, and my cordial advice to others to do the like.

Doubt-

Doubtless he that performeth his duty to Heaven, shall finde such a peace within, that shall fit him for whatsoever falls. He shall not fear himself, because he knoweth his course is order: he shall not fear the World, because he knoweth he hath done nothing that hath anger'd in he shall not be afraid of Heaven; for he knoweth he shall there finde the favour of a servant, nay more, a Son, and be protected against the malice of Hell.

I know I shall be lookt on no otherwise than an Hypocrite; neither will the world believe my reformation real, since I have lived so notoriously and loosly. Let a man do well an hundred times, it may be he shall for a short time be remembred and applauded; whereas if he doth evilly but once, he shall be ever condemned, and never forgot. However, let me live well, and I care not though the world should shout my innocence, and call me dissembler: it is no matter if I suffer the world of censorious reproaches, so that I get to Heaven at last: to the attaining of which, the best counsel I can give my self and others is, Bene vive, ordinabiliter tibi, sociabiliter Proximo, or humiliter Deo: Live well, orderly to thy self, sociably to thy Neighbour, and humbly to thy Maker.

Take this as wholesome advice, though from an ill liver, which hath been in part discovered in the foregoing Discourse; wherein I have endeavoured, by drawing up a List of my own evil actions, to frighten others from the commission of the like. For as there is no company so savagely bad, but a wise man may from it learn something to make himself better: so there is no Book so poorly surnished, out of which a man may not gather something for his benefit. Herein I have not minded so much words, as the matter; aiming at nothing more than how smight compleat-

oubt-

ele falls

Forour

, Chari-

lumilicy.

that he

ble to his

Worlds

ranks :

and ha-

rregula-

d difor-

nilies. I

pit with

lvingin

d fight,

would

e liveth

nrain'd

others

a hum-

e for a

navnn

world,

higos

e fear-

Fonhe

needs

hus to

malelf.

n keep

every

othis

ly time Vice in her proper ugly shape: having done that, I have done what I intended, The reformation of others by my wicked example. For Vice is o fuch a Toady complexion, to ill thap'd & deform'd. that the cannot chite but reach the foul to hate; fe loathforne when the is feen in her own nafty drefs. that we eannot look upon her but with dereftation and borrour. Vice was cunning and curioufly painted when I fell into her scabbad embraces, neither could I have ever known her foulness and rorrennels, had I not tried whether her (feeming) fairness and foundness were real. Believe me, the is no ways that the appears to be; therefore be not deluded by her: burler my Life be to the Reader, as a friend fal'n into a pir, therefives warning to another to avoid the danger. So admirable bath Providence disposed of the waves of many that even the fight of Vice in others, is like a Warning-arrow that for us to rake heed. Vice usually in her greatest bravery published her self foolishly, thinking thereby to procure a Train; and then it is, that the feerer working of Genfeience makes her turn her weapons against her felf, and strongly plead for her implacable advertary Verme. We are frequently wrought to good by contravies; and foul acts keep Vertue from the tharms of Vice. An ancient Poet writ well to this purpole, thus; or as a life of me own evil a distance

Pardene que pellet A turpi Meretticis amete

Ut fugerem enemplie viciorum quaq; notando.

Quem me bortaretur puroe, frugalitur, atq;

Viverem ut contentus ea, quod mi ipje paraffet:

Nome vides Albi ut male vivat filius? utq;

Bartus inops? Magnum documentum ne patriam revi

Quum deterreret, Sellani dissimilie fis.

Formabat puerum diciv .----

Me to flee Vice, by norhing those were naught.
When he would charge me, Thrive, and sparing be,
Content with what he had prepar'd for me;
Seeft not how ill young Albus lives? how low
Poor Barrus? Sure, a weighty Item how
One spent his means. And when he meant to strike
A hate to Whores, To Sician be not like.

He with his precepts fathion'd.

There is no better way to correct faults in our selves, than by observing how uncomely they appear in others. After a fit of drunkennels, my conscience would usually accuseme, and many times, after convictment, would pals fo levere a fentence of condemnation on me, that my own hands have oftentimes been like to prove my Executioners. Confidering within my felf what should be the cause of this trouble and elf loathing, I found it proceded from no other reason than the observation of others in the like beaffly condition, and how notiom it hath rendred them to all. The first thing that made me abhor a Cholerick passion, and a sawcy pride in my self, (of which I was too guilty) was the feeing how ridiculous and contemptible they rendred those that are infested with them. Belides, those that are thorowly experienc'd in navigation, do as wel know the coaffs as the Ocean; as well the fands, the shallows, and the rocks, as the secured depths in the most dangerless channel: fol think those that would arrive to as much perfection as they are capable of enjoying here, must

m rem

ving done

formation

Vice is of

hate ; fo

fly drefs.

restation

chriouffy

nest neit

and rot-

ng) fair-

the is no

ot delu-

er, as a

another

that e-

ing-ar-

y in her

, think-

is, that

er turn y plead

are fre-

nd foul

n anci-

Quun

as well know bad, that they may abtrude or frum it; as the good, that they may embrace it. And this knowledge we can neither have fo cheap, nor fo cerrain, as by feeing it in others: for under a Crown you may buy the whole experience of a mans Life fas of mine) which cost some thousands; though me no more hundreds than what I borrowed of the world, having of mine own nothing originally. If we could pals the world withour meeting Vice, then the knowledge of Vertue onely were sufficient: but it is ithpossible to live, and not encounter her. Vice is as a god in this world: for as the ruleth almost incontrollably, so she assumes to her self ubiquity, we cannot go any where, but that the prefents her felf to the eye, oc. If any be unwittingly cast thereon, let him obferve for his own more fafe direction. He is happy, that makes another mans vices steps for him to climb to his eternal rest by. The wife Physicians make poyfon medicinable; and even the Mud of the world, by the industrious (yet ingrateful) Hollander, is turned to an useful fuel.

If (Reader) then thou lightst here on any thing that is bad, by considering the sorded stains, either correct those faults thou hast, or shun those thou mightest have. That Mariner which hash Sea-room, can make any wind almost serve to set him sorwards in his wished voyage: so may a wise man take any advantage to set himself forward to the haven of Vertue. Man, assoon as created, had two great suiters for his life and soul; the one Vertue, and the other Vice: Virtue came inthismanner, and thus attended; Truth ran before her naked, yet couragious; after her followed Labour, Cold, Hunger, Thirst, Care and Vigilance; these poorly arayed, as looking upon it unseemly to go finer than their Mistris, who as plainly

foun it : and this r fo cerwn you fe, (as of me no world. re could knowt is ime is as a ontrolcannot he eye, im obhappy, o climb ke poyorld, by turned

thing either fe thou room, wards ny adforder other mded; after Care upon who as lainly

plainly and meanly clad, yet cleanly yet her countenance shew'd such a felf-perfection, that she might very well emblem whatfoever Omnipotency could make most rare. Modest she was, and so lovely, that whatfoever looks on her face fledfafily could not but infoul himself in her. After her followed Content, enricht with Jewels, and overspread with Persumes, carrying with her allthe treasure and massie riches of the world. Then came Joy, withall effential pleafures : next, Honour, with all the ancient Orders of Nobility Scepters, Thrones, and Crowns Imperial. Laftly, Glory, whose brightness was such, (which she hook from her Sunny treffes) that it dazled the eyes of her beholders, so that they could never truly describe her. In the rear came Eternity casting a ring about them, which like a strong Inchantment made them ever the fame. Vice strove not to be behindhand with Vertue; wherefore the lets out too, and in this form : Herpre-curfor or fore-runner was Lying, a painted houlwife, of a smooth, infinuating, and deluding tongue, gaudily clad all in changeable; but under her vestments she was full of scabs and loathsome ulcers. Her words seem'd exceeding pleasant, promifing to all the met whatfoever could be witht for, in the behalf of her Mistress Vice. On this hypocritical Quean Wit waited: next him, a Conceited fellow, and one that over-swayed the Fancie of man with his pretty tricks and gambals. Sloth and Luxury followed thefe, fo full, that they were them ready to be choaked with their own fat. After thele, followed some Impostors, to personate Content, Joy and Honour, in all their wealth and Royal dignities. Close after these, Vice came her self, sum tuously apparel'd, but yet a nafty furfeited flut; her breath being to infectious that he which kis'd her was fure to perifh.

perish. After her followed suddenly Guilt, Horn Shame, Lofs, Want, Sorrow, Torment; and the were charmed with Eternity's Ring, as the form And thus they wood fond Man, who taken with a subtile coverages of Vice; yielded to lie with he whereby he had his Nature so empoy foned, that seed was all viciated and contaminated and his contaminated and

If you then intend to enjoy for your portion Kingdom hereafter, adhere not cothe allurements Vice; for the will foon perfuade you to be an unthrift; to felt your loberitance whileff it is but in Reversion. But hearken to Vertue's counfel; the wittench you how to his band all things well, fo as a become a purchaser of no left than Joys evernal.

nebe fier. In the rear came Eterratesiel and adin

This is a substance of the fade, and the or aminous and its or and its or aminous should be substance of the face of the

follow of top ad the character of the second are in Joy and Honour, is all their wealth and Boyal dignities.

Close after these, Vice came her self, firm woully ap-

ung to interfere anality furficited that her breath being to interferent that he which hill it has wenture to and their Hus have I given you a Summary Accompt of the Life of our Witty Extravagant, from his Non-age to the Meridian of his days. I left him in the East-Indies, and shall e're long discover what further progress he made there in his Chears, not omitting the description of those places, wherein he perpetrated his Rogueries. In his return to his own Countrey, by foulness of weather, he landed in Spain: and finding the first place suitable to his defigns, he over-ran that Countrey. From thence into Italy, acquainting himself with the most eminent Cities thereof; then into France, in which no place of note was unknown to him. Of all which places, we shall endeavor to give you an exact Chrorography. We shall likewise inform you what company he kept; Rogues of all forts and fizes, of divers Countreys, and how far he out-did them all.

> Laftly, his arrival at Gravef-end, from whence he tame to London in the rife of the late difmal (and never to be forgotten) Contagion; acting in that time of horrid Mortality, what will scarcely be comprehended within future belief, or expressible by Pen. I shall also trace him to that great and dismal Conflagration, the burning of the City of London, in which by just Vengeance he lost what he had unlawfully gotten, with his most nefarious and

wicked life.

dr. Horror

he former.

n with the with her;

d that his

nd his con

to his un-

bekonthe

poor a

ninder her

Content.

e for her

ripcofall

kribe her phrtione

ementsof

be an unt

ent in Ree

the will

, foasto

ernal.

force of co

milimord

don, in th

pocritica

andlat be

in ansm

Luxury ready to bllowe

and Hon Close an The di el phi

FINIS.